INCUMBENT MOBILIZATION OF SWING VOTERS:
VOTER-PARTY LINKAGES AND CONSOLIDATION OF ETHNIC VOTES IN
ISTANBUL

by

GÜL ARIKAN AKDAĞ

Submitted to the Graduate School of Social Sciences
in partial fulfillment of
the requirements for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy

Sabancı University
January 2013

INCUMBENT MOBILIZATION OF SWING VOTERS:
VOTER-PARTY LINKAGES AND CONSOLIDATION OF ETHNIC VOTES
IN ISTANBUL

APPROVED BY:

Özge Kemahlıoğlu   ………………………….

(Dissertation Supervisor)

Izak Atiyas   ………………………….

Ali Çarkoğlu   ………………………….

Ersin Kalaycıoğlu   …………………………

Sabri Sayarı   ………………………….

DATE OF APPROVAL: 23.01.2013

ABSTRACT

INCUMBENT MOBILIZATION OF SWING VOTERS:
VOTER-PARTY LINKAGES AND CONSOLIDATION OF ETHNIC VOTES
IN ISTANBUL

Gül Arıkan Akdağ

PHD Thesis 2013

Özge Kemahlıoğlu

Key Words: Clientelism, Elections, Mobilization, Party organization, Swing voter

This dissertation attempts to understand the mobilization strategies of incumbent parties to consolidate and increase their support among swing voters of an ethnic group. By analyzing the strategy of AKP on voters of Kurdish origin before 2011 general elections, it investigates the effectiveness of the clientelistic distribution of municipal resources in increasing support for the party and the conditions under which the party mobilizes these voters through clientelistic linkage. This investigation is conducted through a district and neighborhood level case study selected on the method of most similar cases in the districts of Beyoğlu, Sancaktepe and Beykoz situated in Istanbul. The main hypotheses are tested through five different steps. First, through the electoral results it identifies a large number of voters of Kurdish origin as ideologically close to pro-Islamist and pro-Kurdish parties. Second, it identifies the main organs responsible of mobilizing voters and defines the nature of the clientelistic network. Third, the study suggests that the incorporation of these voters into the party's clientelistic network is a function of the number and time of entry of activists of Kurdish origin in the party's ranks and the intensity of their contacts with the voters. Fourth, through an analysis of the selected neighborhoods it reveals the effectiveness of clientelistic mobilization in consolidating and increasing support among swing voters of Kurdish origin. Lastly, the inner party organization and critical juncture experienced by the party are argued to be influential in its ability to increase its network through the incorporation of new activists.

ÖZET

İKTİDAR PARTİLERİNİN KARARSIZ SEÇMENLERİ MOBİLİZASYONU:
İSTANBUL'DA SEÇMEN-PARTİ BAĞLANTILARI VE ETNİK OYLARIN
KONSOLİDASYONU

Gül Arıkan Akdağ

Doktora Tezi 2013

Özge Kemahlıoğlu

Anahtar Kelimeler: Kararsız Seçmen, klientalizm, Mobilizasyon, Parti örgütü,
Seçimler

Bu tez iktidardaki siyasal partilerin oylarını pekiştirmek ve yükseltmek için etnik kökenli kararsız seçmenleri mobilize etme stratejilerini anlama amacını gütmektedir. AK Parti'nin 2011 general seçimlerinde Kürt kökenli vatandaşları üzerine stratejisini inceleyerek, klientalist ağlar yoluyla belediye kaynaklarının dağılımının etkinliğini araştırmaktadır. Bu araştırma, benzer vakalar metoduyla ilçe ve mahalle düzeyinde vaka analizleri üzerinden gerçekleştirilmiştir. Sahanın kapsamı İstanbul'da bulunan Beyoğlu, Sancaktepe ve Beykoz ilçelerinin belirli mahalleleridir. Çalışmanın ana hipotezleri 5 adımda test edilmektedir. Birinci olarak, seçim sonuçları doğrultusunda Kürt kökenli seçmenlerin önemli bir çoğunluğu AK parti ve BDP' ye ideolojik olarak yakın karasız seçmenler olarak tanımlanmaktadır. İkinci olarak, seçmenleri mobilize etmekten sorumlu parti organları ve partinin klientalist ağının özellikleri tanımlanmaktadır. Üçüncü olarak, Kürt kökenli seçmenlerin klientalist ağlara katılımının Kürt kökenli parti çalışanlarının sayısı, partiye giriş tarihleri ve seçmenlerle ilişkilerinin yoğunluğunun bir işlevi olduğu gösterilmektedir. Dördüncü olarak, seçilen mahallerin incelenmesi sonucunda klientalist ağlar yoluyla yapılan mobilizasyon çalışmalarının oylar üzerine etkisi gösterilmektedir. Son olarak, partinin merkezi yapısının ve parti örgütlerinin yaşadığı dönüm noktalarının, partinin ağlarını genişletebilmesinde ne ölçüde etkili olduğu gösterilmektedir.

<<To My Husband and Son>>

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

TABLE OF CONTENTS

TABLES

GRAPHS

ABBREVIATIONS

AKP   Adalet ve Kalkınma Partisi (Justice and Development Party)

ANAP   Anavatan Partisi (Motherland Party)

BDP   Barış ve Demokrasi Partisi (Peace and Democracy Party)

DP   Demokrasi Partisi (Democracy Party)

DTP   Demokratik Toplum Partisi (Democratic Society Party)

DYP   Doğru Yol partisi (True Path party)

DEHAP   Demokratik Halk Partisi (Democratic People's Party)

EU   European Union

FP   Fazilet partisi (Virtue Party)

HADEP   Halkın Demokrasi Partisi (People's Democracy Party)

HEP   Halkın Emeği Partisi (People's Labor Party)

PKK   Partiya Karkerên Kurdistan (Kurdish Worker's Party)

RP   Refah Partisi (Welfare Party)

SP   Saadet Partisi (Felicity party)

TIP   Türkiye İşçi Partisi (Turkish Worker Party)

TUIK   Türkiye İstatistik Kurumu (Turkish Statistical Institute)

YSK   Yüksek Seçin Kurulu (High Electoral Board)

YTP   Yeni Türkiye Partisi (New Turkey Party)

INTRODUCTION

The 12 June 2011 general elections in Turkey resulted with the electoral victory of AKP, which increased its votes and gained the right to form the government for the third time. The results of the elections are indicative of two important trends in the Turkish party system. First, the three consecutive success of AKP at the ballot box sustains a transition towards a predominant party system in Turkey. Second, the increasing vote shares of the pro-Kurdish party vis-à-vis AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin indicate rising polarization within the system. The combination of these two developments makes the study of mobilization strategies used by a predominant party in order to increase its support among potential swing members of an ethnic group particularly interesting, especially in the Turkish context where a considerable number of voters of Kurdish origin support AKP.

The rise in the support for pro-Kurdish parties and the nature of the electoral competition between AKP and BDP has been evaluated through the ideological positioning of each party. The changing position of AKP on the Kurdish issue has been suggested as the major cause in diverging support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin. Indeed, an important characteristic that differentiates the 2011 general elections period from its precedents has been the harsh u-turn of AKP's position concerning the Kurdish issue. Rising PKK attacks, increasing number of arrested Kurdish political elites under the KCK operation and finally, Erdoğan's declaration that there is "no Kurdish problem in Turkey but Kurds have a problem" during the electoral campaigning period contributed to the rising violence in the streets in both the South East region of Turkey and in the big cities in the West where large number of Kurdish citizens reside. In electoral terms, the result of this positional change has been the decrease in AKP's vote shares among citizens of Kurdish origin in favor for the pro-Kurdish party BDP. Both provincial and sub-provincial aggregate data on 2007 and 2011 general elections in the South East region of Turkey as well as big cities in the

western part of the country where considerable numbers of Kurdish citizens reside support this trend. However, a more detailed micro level analysis of the electoral outcomes across elections indicates fluctuations. The fluctuation in support for AKP from the elections of 2009 to 2011 in different geographical subunits is even more interesting given the fact that AKP's positional change was very large where the party moved from its pro-Kurdish stand of 2007 and adopted a clearly anti-Kurdish discourse in 2011.

A considerable number of studies have found support for the existence of patronage or clientelism as a tool used by political parties to gain votes (Sayarı, 1977; Özbudun, 1981; Schuler, 1998; Sunar, 1990, Heper & Keyman, 1998, Güneş-Ayata, 1994). Recently, the role of clientelistic linkage has attracted the attention of a considerable number of studies (S.Özbudun, 2005; Komşuoğlu, 2009; Kemahlıoğlu, 2005, 2012; Sayarı, 2011). Existing studies suggest that political parties use both kind of linkages for mobilizing voters and gaining their support (Kitschelt 2000, Estéves, Magaloni & Diaz-Cayeros, 2001; Diaz-Cayeros & Magaloni, 2003; Alberto Diaz-Cayero, 2008, Calvo and Murillo 2010). Then, perhaps mobilization through the clientelistic linkage may explain divergence in the changing electoral shares of AKP and BDP among citizens of Kurdish origin. Unfortunately, such systematic analysis has not been carried in the Turkish context. The aim of the study is to fulfill this gap by analyzing the use of the clientelistic strategies by AKP to consolidate or increase its support among citizens of Kurdish origin and identify main factors increasing the party's ability to formulate such a strategy.

Studies on electoral competition provide an important ground to analyze the means available to political parties in order increase the effectiveness of their mobilization efforts. These studies can be classified under two approaches that diverge in terms linkages through which voters evaluate the accountability of political parties. The first set of studies mainly focuses on programmatic strategies in understanding electoral outcomes (Campbel 1960, Lipset & Rokkan 1967, Thomassen 1977, Lijphart 1979, Mair 1997, Bartolini 2002; Downs, 1957; Hinich and Pollard, 1981; Enelow and Hinich, 1984; Hinich and Munger, 1994). The second group of studies focuses on the clientelistics distribution of state resources by political parties (Kaufman, 1974, Rosenstone & Hassen 1993, Auyero 2001, Kitschelt & Wilkinson 2007, Epstein, 2009). Both studies has found ground in the literature on Turkey (Ergüder 1981; Esmer 2001,

2

2002, Esmer &Sayarı 2002; Kalaycıoğlu 1994, 1999; Çarkoğlu, 1998, 2002, 2007a, 2007b, 2010a, 2011b; Çarkoğlu & Toprak, 2000; Çarkoğlu & Kalyacıoğlu, 2007, 2009; Çarkoğlu & Hinich, 2006; Sayarı, 1977; Özbudun, 1981; Schuler, 1998; Sunar, 1990, Heper & Keyman, 1998, Güneş-Ayata, 1994, Özbudun, 2005; Ayşegül Komşuoğlu, 2009; Kemahlıoğlu, 2005, 2012; Sayarı, 2011).

Within this context, the use of clientelistic linkage may be an effective strategy for AKP in mobilizing citizens of Kurdish origin. Political parties mostly use both strategies to mobilize voters. Existing studies argue that other things being equal, which strategy a political party relies on more is based on types of voters and ability of the party to assure voters' compliance. Mobilization through clientelistic as opposed to programmatic linkage is argued to be a more effective strategy among ideologically swing voters that are indifferent between two competing political parties (Cox and McCubbins, 1986; Lindbeck and Weibull, 1987; Dixit and Londregan, 1996; Diaz-Cayeros and Magaloni, 2003; Estéves, Magaloni and Diaz-Cayeros, 2001). This study argues that mobilization through clientelistic accountability would be an effective strategy for AKP since, as it will be illustrated in the following chapters; a large number of citizens of Kurdish origin are ideologically indifferent between AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties and can be identified as potential swing voters. In fact, a considerable number of scholars have indicated the presence of a common electoral base among citizens of Kurdish origin who are ideologically close to both AKP and BDP (Yavuz and Özcan, 2006; Van Bruinessen 1992; Yegen 1996, p. 225; Atacan 2001; Cizre 2002).

If such a strategy is effective in mobilizing citizens of Kurdish origin, the conditions under which the party can efficiently implement this strategy may explain divergence in electoral outcome. In this respect, this dissertation bases it analysis on three basic objectives, to identify the strategy the party formulates to mobilize voters of Kurdish origin through its clientelistic linkage, to test the effectiveness of such a strategy and explain factors preventing the party to formulate such a strategy.

This study suggests that mobilization through clientelistic linkages is more effective when conducted on an individual level to different types of voters and when compliance is voluntarily assured. Yet such a strategy necessitates first the ability of the party to directly contact voters to identify their type. Second, it necessitates a repeated course of interaction for assuring compliance voluntarily. Yet political settings are mostly information scarce. Within this respect, existing studies suggest that strong

party organization provides a suitable mechanism for the party to increase the scope of the clientelistic network and consolidate votes for the party (Auyero, 2001; Stokes, 2005; Kitschelt & Wilkinson, 2007; Calvo & Murillo, 2010). This dissertation argues that the greater the number of activists, the higher the degree of the cooperation among them, the lower their level of interaction with voters and the greater the repetitiveness of this interaction, the more efficient the clientelistic linkage will be. This is because the party will not only be able to identify voters more individually at a lower cost but also more easily assure their voluntary compliance through the repetitiveness of the interaction. On the other hand, repetitiveness is a function of length of the interaction and its intensity.

Studies on the mobilization of ethnic groups argue that the presence of activists who are members of these ethnic groups in a party's rank increases the efficiency of the mobilization of ethnic voters through the clientelistic linkage (Bates, 1983; Fearon & Laidin, 1996; Fearon, 1999; Kitschelt & Wilkinson, 2007; Chandra, 2004). Within this respect, one of the main suggestions of this dissertation is that such a strategy is expected to be more effective when ethnic consciousness among the members of an ethnic group is high, relations between different ethnic groups are weak and the ethnic group is composed of different types of voters in terms of party preferences. This study argues that especially when there is high ethnic consciousness and weak intercommunity relations, accompanied by potential for violence; incorporation of co-ethnic activists known by the members of the ethnic group and member of the existing ethnic social networks is vital for the party. Under these conditions, mobilization through co-ethnic will enable the party to more easily identify different types of voters which is necessary for clientelistic mobilization. Thus, while mobilization by out-group members may also be effective in incorporating members of an ethnic group into the network if a certain degree of inter-group relations persists, still successful mobilization would necessitate great efforts and a long period of time. As it will be evaluated in detail, ethnic consciousness among citizens of Kurdish origin is considerably high and is accompanied by conflictual inter-group relations. Furthermore, the Kurdish movement is characterized by high potential of violence which increases the probability of the AKP to incorporate the voters of Kurdish origin to the clientelistic network through known co-ethnic activists member of the existing ethnic social networks.

4

Under these conditions, the study suggests that the effectiveness of the clientelistic mobilization of the citizens of Kurdish origin is related to the breadth and length of the mobilization carried through co-ethnics. The presence of co-ethnic in the party affects the party's decision to mobilize voters through clientelistic or programmatic linkage. When AKP contacts the voters of Kurdish origin through co-ethnic, its mobilization will be more clientelistic since it can easily identify swing voters and apply specific targeting. Furthermore, voluntary compliance and attachment to the party would be performed on a shorter period of time. In contrast when conducted through non-Kurdish activists, mobilization will be more programmatic since the party will be unable to identify swing voters and ensure their compliance. Within this respect, the study suggests that divergence in electoral outcomes over the years across different geographical subunits is related to the conjunction of two variables; the number of citizens of Kurdish origin and the repetitiveness of their interaction which is a function of not only their time of entry in the party organization and but also intensity of their interactions with the voters.

If mobilization through clientelistic linkage by a strong party organization where co-ethnic are incorporated is a more effective strategy in gaining support among potential swing voters of Kurdish origin, why do not all AKP party branches does not use the same strategy to mobilize them? A party's decision to strengthen its organization and incorporate citizens of Kurdish origin is mostly evaluated as a function of the electoral competition it faces and the socio-demographic composition of its electoral support. This study argues that although such a function is valid in the foundation period of a political organization, once it has been established the inner party organization structure acts as a constraint to the party's degree of adaptability in changing circumstances.

The logic of this argument is as follows. Both the presence of a strong party organization and co-ethnic is based on the ability of the party to motivate its activists. Just as swing non-Kurdish or Kurdish voters will support AKP on the bases of their access to benefits, potential activists of non-Kurdish or Kurdish origin will work for the party only if they have access to benefits. Nevertheless, the scare nature of material goods such as jobs, social assistance creates a problem of exclusion that any political parties have to overcome. Scholars such as Pannebianco (1988), Boleyer (2005) suggest that the party organization provides a mechanism to regulate the problem of

distribution by creating immaterial incentives such as party posts to attain these incentives. Yet, these posts are also scarce in terms of quantity. Thus, the incorporation of activists through the allocation of posts to new entering activists means the displacement of existing ones from these posts. Under such conditions, existing activists will probably resist the new entry. Within this respect, the study argues that the absence of an intra-party advancement rule in centralized party organization acts as an obstacle to motivate the existing activists to recruit new ones, and the new ones to enter to the party. Furthermore, it also suggests that the path-dependence inherited in all institutions prevents centralized parties to introduce competitive intra-party advancement mechanisms after their founding phases, since leaders responsible to distribute these posts are also shaped by the institutions. Yet, as Pannebianco (1988) sugests change in the organizational order may occur through a critical juncture characterized by an organizational crisis that will give the opportunity to the leader to internally adapt the party to changing conditions.

As it will be illustrated, AKP has a highly centralized party organization, yet the numbers of activists of Kurdish origin within its local organizations vary. In the light of these suggestions, variation in any given geographical unit in the number of activists of Kurdish origin into the network can be explained in two different manners. First, it may be their incorporation and attainment of a post at the founding phase of the party. At this period, their incorporation is expected to be related to rational calculations of the leaders based on exogenous factors. Second, later incorporation may have been possible through of a critical juncture that reset the coalition composition of the party and redistribute the posts. The ability of the party to motivate existing and newly activists to actively work for the party, in both periods, should be a function of the nature of the intra-party advancement rule at each period.

In order to test these main arguments, this dissertation is constructed around nine chapters. Chapter 1 will also provide a brief literature review on the actual studies supporting our expectation on the possible impact of clientelistic mobilization through the party organization in explaining support for AKP among some voters of Kurdish origin. Introducing a satisfactory account on the effectiveness of clientelistic mobilization on voters of Kurdish origin can only be achieved if a solid theoretical foundation is provided. This is why Chapter 2 is reserved to a detailed explanation of

the main hypothesis, constructed through the existing literature and tested across the dissertation.

The study rests on the basic assumption that large numbers of these voters are ideologically swing. Although, the ideological closeness of a considerable number of voters of Kurdish origin to both AKP and BDP has been revealed through the existing literature, Chapter 3 will test this assumption by analyzing the electoral patterns across the elections at two different levels: the Kurdish populated region and the provinces comprising this region. Main focus will be devoted in the evaluation of the party system indicators such as efficient number of parties and volatility index. Chapter 4 will interpret the main logic of the selection of the cases through which a deeper analysis will be conducted. The chapter mostly comprises of the classification of the districts according to the variables other than the tested ones that may independently affect the mobilization strategy of the party.

Chapter 5 and 6 consist of a descriptive account of the formal organizational structure of the party and the general characteristics of its mobilization strategy. The study claims, a comprehensive analysis on the effectiveness of the distribution of resources through clientelistic linkage cannot be provided without underlying the major formal mechanisms through which political parties access to the resources on one hand and distribute them to the voters and the party activists on the other. Especially under circumstances where resources are accessed and distributed by different organs at different levels of the organizational, not only internal mechanisms of information flow but also of cooperation between these organs are decisive in understanding the functioning of the clientelistic network. As a result, I have reserved Chapter 5 to depict a descriptive account of the formal structural design of the party where the internal functioning of the main decision-making organs, the mechanism of coordination between them and the rules of intraparty advancement within the party is revealed.

The study assumes that political parties use both clientelistic and programmatic linkages in order to gain the support of voters. Defining the clientelistic network based on its individual and discretionary nature, this study argues that long term clientelistic mobilization where different types of voters are targeted and voters' compliance is assured through persuasion is a more effective strategy. This is why Chapter 6 has been designed so as to define the general mobilization strategy of the party. The tendency of AKP to form a clientelistic linkage that functions not only as a problem-solving

network, but also as a mean to create a system of common identification through ideological mobilization will be demonstrated.

This study suggests that strong party organization, where party activists are the members of the same geographical space as voters, provides a suitable mechanism for the party to decrease the costs of such a mobilization strategy through the activities of its activists. Yet, it also argues that the effective mobilization of ethnic groups is based on the incorporation of co-ethnics within the party's ranks; especially under circumstances where inter-group boundaries are sharply defined, relations are conflictual or ethnic consciousness is accompanied with the potential of violence. Based on these suggestions, Chapter 7 has been an attempt to depict the main difference in the strategy the party formulates through the neighborhood organizations to effectively mobilize voters of Kurdish as opposed to non-Kurdish origin.

The study suggests that identification of the party's strategy is not sufficient for establishing a firm argument on the effectiveness of clientelistic mobilization on persuading voters of Kurdish origin. This is why, by comparing the selected neighborhoods, Chapter 8 is an attempt to test the impact of the number of activists of Kurdish origin, their time of incorporation and the intensity in the amount of the activities of the party activists on the effectiveness of mobilizing voters of Kurdish origin through the clientelistic network.

Chapter 9 attempts to explain why the AKP district branches do not use the same strategy in all geographical areas to mobilize voters of Kurdish origin even if it is a more effective strategy in gaining support among potential swing voters of Kurdish origin. Major focuses will be devoted to the analysis of the negative impact of the organizational order of the party set in its founding phase and the experience of a critical junction in later phases on the capacity of the party to adapt itself to external changing conditions.

Research Design

The aim of the study is to reveal the use of clientelistic mobilization by AKP in gaining the support of the citizens of Kurdish origin in its competition with pro-Kurdish

parties, to test the effectiveness of such a strategy and to explain diverging ability of the party to apply such a strategy.

This kind of an analysis may be carried at different geographical levels. For example, a considerable number of studies have investigated the tactical distribution of state resources by national governments to lower administrative levels in an effort to affect electoral outcomes (Schady, 2000; Estéves et al, 2001; Penfold-Becerra's, 2007; Calvo & Murillo, 2010, Anne Case, 2001, Denemark, 2000, Rocha-Menocal, 2001, Margit Tavits, 2009; Graham and Kane, 1998; Molinar and Weldon, 1994; Diaz-Cayero, 2008). Nevertheless, when the mobilization strategies of political parties are under investigation, one should be careful in deciding the level through which the analysis is conducted. A considerable number of scholars suggest that political parties mostly formulate mobilization strategies on a geographical base since it decreases information cost accompanied in detecting voters' preferences (Tavits 2009, p.105; Shady, 2000, p: 290; Bartolini, 2002, 93; Karp and Banducci, 2007, p. 218). Furthermore, the strategy formulated is expected not to be uniform across geographical subunits but to diverge according to variables that have the potential to affect the mobilization strategy of the party and electoral preferences. Within this respect, depending on their characteristics each level necessitates the formulation of different strategies. Since the study aims at understanding the factors effective in mobilizing citizens of Kurdish origin through a clientelistic linkage where the party directly contacts the voter, the analysis of the party's strategy at most local level is a necessity. Administratively the neighborhood constitutes the most local level of the organization structure. Nevertheless, in Turkey political parties can only legally be organized at the district level. Albeit the district level strategy of the party may be a function of the decision of higher authorities, given the centralized nature of the Turkish political parties it should probably be the case, the district still comprises the lowest formal level where strategies are formulated and implemented. Similarly, although the distribution of state resources can also be analyzed at different levels, the district municipalities, which may provide a considerable resource for the party if governed by its co-partisan, are the most micro level unit where state resources are distributed. Yet, the neighborhood comprises the most local level of the administrative structure where AKP contacts the voters. Within this respect, the strategy formulated for the neighborhoods by the district branches or higher authorities is expected to be affected by the

conjunction of different exogenous factors at two different levels. It is expected to be tied to not only the factors peculiar to each district, but also the factors peculiar to each neighborhood. Similar conditions are expected to be effective for internal constraints to the formulation of such a strategy. Under such a complex relationship where the party strategies and distribution of resources are decided at the district level but voters are contacted at the neighborhood level, the field research has been conducted at both district and neighborhood level.

Although these research questions could have been investigated in the South-East region of Turkey, which is where the competition between the two parties is the most intense, the study chooses to carry such an analysis in only one province which is Istanbul. The strategy behind the decision to select the cases only from one province is very simple: controlling for provincial level variables that may have an independent effect on the strategy formulated by the party in each of the districts. Respectively, Istanbul has been selected since it fulfills the necessary criteria on the number of citizens of Kurdish origin and nature of the competition between AKP and BDP. Furthermore, it provides a range of variation in both district and neighborhood level electoral results and dispersion of citizens of Kurdish origin.

In terms of citizens of Kurdish origin although the province is not in the South East region of Turkey, it has witnessed large migration flows after 1990's as a result of state policies of forced migration (Van Bruinessen, 1998, p. 49; Yalçın Mousseau, 2010, p. 51). Although, Server Mutlu estimates a Kurdish population of approximately of 8,16% for the year of 1990, the actual number of citizens of Kurdish origin is expected to be higher due to large migration flows after 1990s. Supporting these suggestions, estimated percentages of citizens of Kurdish origin is calculated as approximately 11,88% for the year of 2009[1] which is a sufficient percentage to expect AKP to target citizens of Kurdish origin and to test the research's main hypothesis. For the case of Istanbul, a great number of studies mention the bad economic and deteriorating economic conditions in the place of destination of the immigrants migrating from the region after 1990s (Ilkaracan and Ilkaracan, 1999, p. 317; Çelik, 2002, Aksit and

---

[1] Unfortunately, systematic data on the number of residents of Kurdish origin is not publicly available. Yet provincial level estimations have been carried by Mutlu for the year of 1990 (1996). The study has estimated the percentages of residents of Kurdish origin for each of the districts in Istanbul for the year of 2009 by using Mutlu's estimations and the number of district residents registered to each province. The sum of these estimations provides also an estimated percentage of residents of Kurdish origin for Istanbul for the year of 2009. For detailed information on the measurement consult Chapter 3.

Akcay,1999, Sirkeci,2000; White, 1998, Van Bruinessen, 1998).   This makes the citizens of Kurdish origin living in Istanbul to be more sensitive to the mobilization efforts of the party through material incentives.

Furthermore, the electoral competition the party faces strengthens our expectation that the party has an incentive to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin.   The main competition in the province is not between AKP and BDP, but between AKP and CHP. Yet, given the fact that the competition between these two parties is very high, AKP's efforts to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin which comprise more than 10% of the population is also expected to be high. When AKP's national and provincial level vote shares across elections are analyzed two important patterns, concerning the nature of the competition for AKP can be observed. The first three lines of table 1 and graph 1 illustrates the vote shares of AKP at national, regional and provincial level. Although the electoral pattern of AKP vote shares across elections is more similar to the national pattern, Istanbul is one of the provinces where competition is higher. Furthermore, although the party's vote shares were above the national average in 1999 and 2002 general elections, it has dropped below the national average in 2007 and 2011 elections.

AKP* and pro-Kurdish parties** vote shares at different geographical level			
	2011	2007	2002	1999
nat. AKP	49,95	46,58	34,43	15,41
Reg. AKP	42,10	47,96	20,45	15,49
Ist. AKP	49,40	45,20	37,20	21,30
nat.BDP	6,58	5,32	6,14	4,75
Reg. BDP	46,78	34,70	36,10	29,32
Ist. BDP	5,30	5,90	5,50	4,00

Table 1: AKP and pro-Kurdish parties' vote shares across different geographical levels (1999-2011)
*AKP has been founded in 2001. For 1999 general elections the vote shares of its predecessor, FP (Fazilet Partisi- Felicity Party) has been used.
** The names of the Pro-Kurdish parties are different for each of these elections. Its name was HADEP in 1999, DEHAP in 2002, DTP in 2007 and BDP in 2011 general elections.

As a result, the AKP is expected to face more pressure to increase it votes. Similar trends are also visible when the effective number of parties and margins of the victory of the party are observed. With 2.80 point for 2011 and 3.35 point for 2007, Istanbul is between the effective number of parties functioning nationwide and in the Kurdish populated region, which are respectively 2.96 and 2.50 for 2011, and 3.46 and 2.80 for

2007. The margin of victory vis-à-vis its main competitor CHP is 17.1 in 2011, 18.2 in 2007, whereas at national level this number is 24.01 in 2011 and 25.70 in 2007.
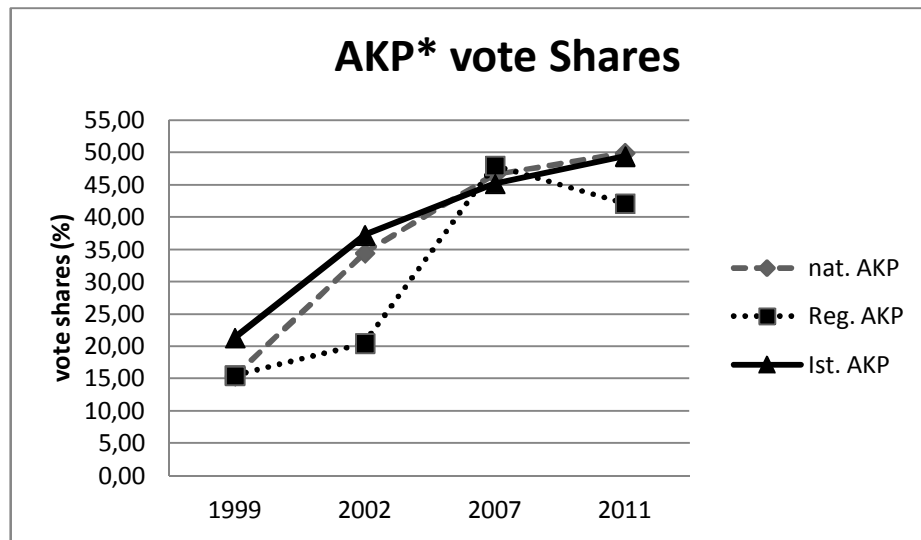
Graph 1: AKP votes shares at different geographical levels (1999-2011)
   *AKP has been founded in 2001. For 1999 general elections the vote shares of its predecessor, FP (Fazilet Partisi- Felicity Party) has been used.

Furthermore, Istanbul is the western province where BDP has effectively competed in 2007 and 2011 general elections, succeeding to send two and three deputies in the parliament respectively. As a result, BDP is an effective competitor for AKP with its attempts to mobilize Kurdish votes. The last three lines of Table 4.1 and graph 4.2 illustrate the vote shares of BDP at national, regional and provincial level. The party has managed to receive nearly 5% of the votes beginning with 2002 general elections. However, when the estimated percentage of Kurdish citizens and BDP vote shares are compared, still a considerable number of citizens of Kurdish origin seem still not supporting BDP. This fact increases the importance of citizens of Kurdish origin as core or potential supporters for the AKP.

With the considerably high number of Kurdish speaking residents, high electoral competition for AKP where BDP is an effective competitor, the incentive for AKP to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin is expected to be high. Furthermore, as it will be revealed in the next section, there is a great variation in the distribution of the districts in terms of these variables, making it easier to select cases suitable to the research design.

Pro-Kurdish parties's* vote shares
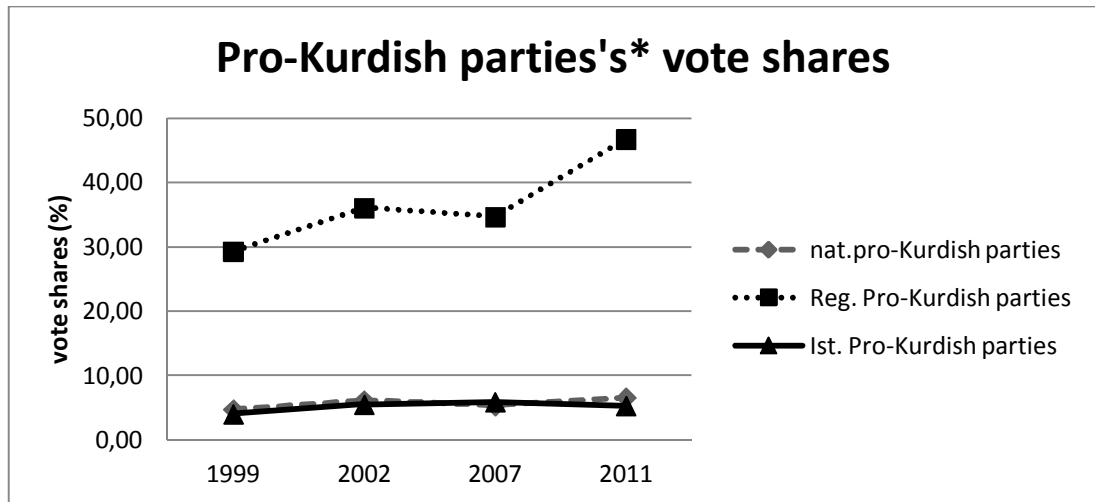
Graph 2: Pro-Kurdish parties' votes shares at different geographical levels (1999-2011)
* The names of the Pro-Kurdish parties are different for each of these elections. Its name was
HADEP in 1999, DEHAP in 2002, DTP in 2007 and BDP in 2011 general elections.

Such an objective necessitates a deep analysis of the complex relationship between selected variables. As a suitable research technique for such a purpose, the study chooses to conduct this analysis through case studies to collect the necessary data to provide a clear and solid ground for my claims. Being well aware of the problem of selecting the cases on the bases of outcomes on the dependent variable[2], a complex procedure has been adopted for the selection process.   That is to say, albeit the main arguments of the study were presented in abstract terms, they were not developed in an abstract manner. The first step of the research was to conduct in-depth interviews with a considerable number of activists at key positions in the party, active in the formulation and implementation of the mobilization strategies in different districts. The major aim of these interviews was to identify more precisely the independent variables that may be effective in mobilizing voters of Kurdish origin. It was the outcome of these interviews through which the case selection procedure has been built. Within this respect, the selection of the experimental and control districts has been conducted on the method of most similar cases. First, a large number of districts have been grouped according to the independent variables identified to be effective in shaping the party's programmatic and clientelistic strategies. These variables are percentages of residents of Kurdish origin, their socio-economic status, the degree of the electoral competition the party faces, the amount of resources at the district level and the population size of each district. Then,

---

[2] For more detail on the problem consult Geddes (1990). According to the author conducting an analysis on a limited number of cases selected only on the basis outcome may be misleading in interpreting a relationship between two variables.

these districts have been grouped according to their divergence in the dependent variable: the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy of the party, which is measured in terms of the changing electoral support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin from 2009 to 2011 elections. To identify the difference in the mobilization strategy of AKP for gaining the support of Kurdish as opposed to non-Kurdish voters, two districts with high percentages of Kurdish residents and one district with low percentage of Kurdish origin have been selected. So as to be able to measure the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy of AKP among residents of Kurdish origin, the main selection criteria of the two districts of high percentage of Kurdish resident has been their divergence in terms of the dependent variable. The selected districts are respectively Beyoğlu, Sancaktepe and Beykoz. All of them are similar in terms of the socio-economic indicators, the degree of the electoral competition the party faces, their population size and the amount of resources at the district level. Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe diverge from Beykoz in terms of their equally high percentages of Kurdish residents while they diverge in terms of the support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin across the elections. Given the fact that effectiveness of the strategy of the party is to be analyzed at the neighborhood level, under the two districts , I have selected neighborhoods similar in terms of the percentage and socio-economic conditions of residents of Kurdish origin but different in terms of the amount of support for AKP among residents of Kurdish origin across elections. These neighborhoods are Örnektepe and Hacıahmet from Beyoğlu, İnönü and Veyselkarani from Sancaktepe. While support for AKP from 2009 to 2011 is constant in Örnektepe and Beyoğlu, it decreases in Hacıahmet and increases in Veysel Karani. The selection process of the district and the neighborhoods will be analyzed in more detail in the following chapters of the study.

Data Collection:

The data used in the study have two different sources. The first source consist of the analysis of publicly available quantitative data on demographic and socioeconomic indicators, electoral outcomes (mostly available at TUİK and YSK), and personally collected data on the resources of the municipalities, AKP party organizations etc.

These data has mostly been used for the selection of the cases in which deeper analysis will be conducted and to sustain the main findings of the study.

The second source of data used to test the main hypothesis of the study has been collected through qualitative research techniques where both semi-structured indepth interviews and participant observations have been used in the collection process. Within this respect, 110 semi-structured indebt interviews have been carried with the party personel at key decision-making positions at both district and neighborhood level such as party presidents of Istanbul and elites from different levels of the organization such as districts presidents, vice-presidents responsible of the organization or neighborhood presidents from both main or woman branches. These interviews have principally been carried in the selected districts of Beyoğlu, Sancaktepe, Beykoz and less intensively in the districts of Zeytinburnu, Küçükçekmece, Esenler, Başakşehir, Sultanbeyli which have high percentages of residents of Kurdish origin, considerably low socio-economic indicators and whose municipalities are governed by AKP. The major objective of these interviews was the formulation of the preliminary hypothesis concerning the mobilization strategy of AKP such as the organizational structure of the party, its strategy to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin, activists' political experiences, means through which mobilization is performed etc. These interviews have also provided fruitful information for the testing of the hypothesis.

Yet, the main data has been extracted during the legal period of the electoral campaigning activities set by the High Electoral Board that have taken place between 20 April and 11 June 2011 all around Turkey. Although, it is argued in this dissertation that clientelistic mobilization should be perceived as a long process not only carried during the electoral campaigning periods, conducting such an analysis in this period provided the opportunity to collect data in a very short period of time since these periods are when political parties spend all of their efforts in terms of labor force and money in contacting and mobilizing voters. In fact, the electoral campaigning activities of AKP were very intense in all the districts under investigation. Yet, as it will be exhibited in detail, they greatly diverged at the neighborhood level in the district of Beyoğlu. During this period, two of the deputy candidates in each electoral region have been appointed each day in one of the districts, in order to participate in the electoral campaigning activities of the districts. On the other hand, each district branch performed neighborhood visits with these deputy candidates, district and neighborhood

activists. Through participant observation in these information rich activities at the district and neighborhood level, a huge amount of data for testing the main hypothesis of the study has been collected. Data on the target and content of the mobilization strategies on Kurdish as well as non-Kurdish voters, the nature and amount of activities performed, relations between members of the party and the activists, internal functioning of the party comprise some of them. The main importance in collecting data through participant observation has been the opportunity to physically observe the activists in their natural social environments. The reliability of this kind of information is certainly greater than the declared information by the activists during more official interviews, since they would probably have the incentive to misrepresent themselves.

Furthermore, the electoral campaigning period provided me the opportunity to contact and interview a large number of activists from different ranks of the party. As a result, I have been able to perform interviews on an ad-hoc basis as if they were daily conversations. Although these interviews are not as extensive as the scheduled ones, they provide valuable information. The advantage of these interviews has been its positive effect on the validity of the answers given by the respondents. As the interviews were carried through a constant interaction in a very natural social environment, it decreased respondents' skepticism on the intention of asked questions. As a result, they became more voluntary to cooperate and gave more sincere answers. In fact, I have been able to observe how the attitudes of the activists towards me and the questions asked changed as they repeatedly get into interaction with me. Although most of them tried first to understand my intentions and hesitated in giving me clear answers, by the end of the electoral campaigning activities, they did not distinguish me from any other person in the group and comfortably criticize the party policies or other activists even when I was near them.

No. of attended daily activities					
Beyoğlu	**10**	**Sancaktepe**	**11**	**Beykoz:**	**5**
Örnektepe	3	Veysel karani	5	Paşabahçe	2
Hacıahmet	3	İnönü	4	RüzgarlıBahçe	2
Kaptanpaşa	2	Kemal Türkler	1	Tokatköy	1
Dolapdere	1	Sarıgazi	1		
Yenişehir	1			**Total:**	**26**

Table 2: Number of attended daily activities

No. of interviewed activists					
Beyoğlu	**40**	**Sancaktepe**	**38**	**Beykoz:**	**20**
District	17	district	17	district	8
Neighborhoods	23	Neighborhoods	21	Neighborhoods	12
Örnektepe	7	Veysel karani	9	Paşabahçe	6
Hacıahmet	9	Inönü	9	RüzgarlıBahçe	6
Yenişehir	3	KemalTürkler	3		
Kaptanpaşa	2			other districs	12
Çukur	2				
		Kurdish Origin	**19**		
		Beyoğlu	6		
		Sancaktepe	11		
		Other districts	2		
		Non-Kurdish Origin	**91**		
		total	**110**		

Table 3: Number of interviewed activists

In order to be able to collect objective data, and preventing the risk of overestimation, the participant observations and interviews have been conducted according to certain criteria. First, major focus has been given to the districts of Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe. I have paid attention to participate at an equal number of activities in all the neighborhoods under investigation. Although most of the activities I have participated were the activities of the districts branches, in neighborhoods such as Hacıahmet where the district branch did not perform any activities, neighborhood contact offices has been visited. Within this respect, I have attended 26 daily district activities where 11 were in Sancaktepe, 10 in Beyoğlu and 5 in Beykoz. The intensive nature of the programs of each of the district prevented me to participate in all the activities taking places in the selected neighborhoods. Yet, at least three days of activities has been observed in each of the neighborhoods, although this amount rose to five in some of them. Furthermore, the activities of the district branch have also been observed in other neighborhoods so as to be able to compare the changing content. This was especially done in Beyoğlu since in the selected neighborhoods the electoral vote shares of AKP was low. As a result, the two campaigning activities in the neighborhoods where the party is electorally strong have been attended. Furthermore, I have also tried to attend all activities in neighborhoods where considerable amount of Kurdish citizens reside. For such a purpose, I have participated in 2 daily district activities in each of the districts of Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe. During the electoral campaigning period, general activities such as dinners, mass meetings, picnics in the scope of Istanbul or district have also been performed. I have attended to at least one of

each activity. I have also participated in each neighborhood to at least one of the weekly main and woman branch meetings and education seminars.

The number of the total interviews conducted, both scheduled and unscheduled, is 110. Although, I had the opportunity to interview the same respondent for a few times during the electoral campaigning period, I counted them as one interview. Table 3 gives the detailed number of the interviews conducted on the basis of districts, neighborhoods and ethnic origin. As it can be revealed from the table, I have taken into consideration three main points while conducting them. First, I have interviewed a considerably similar number of activists in each of the district, except for Beykoz. This was a deliberate choice since Beykoz is my control district. The number of activists interviewed in each of the districts was 40 in Beyoğlu, 38 in Sancaktepe and 20 in Beykoz. On the other hand, these interviews were divided between district and neighborhood level activists where a similar number of at least 7 activists were interviewed in each of the selected neighborhoods. Attaining equality between the activists concerning their ethnic origin was impossible due to the characteristics of the demographic composition of the activists in Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe. Among the respondents, 19 out of 110 were from Kurdish origin. Of these, 6 were from Beyoğlu, 11 from Sancaktepe and 2 from other districts.

CHAPTER 1

SUPPORT FOR AKP AMONG VOTERS OF KURDISH ORIGIN: PROGRAMMATIC AND CLIENTELISTIC LINKAGES

Studies on the Kurdish issue mention two main resources that contribute to the politicization of Kurdish ethnic demands that derives from the policies of the Turkish State. First, it is argued to have its roots in the state formation of the Turkish republic and have developed in the course of its history due to the insistence of the Turkish state to ignore the distinctiveness of the Kurdish population and its attempts to assimilate it within the defined Turkish identity(Gunter 1997, Yavuz 1998, Kirişçi &Winrow, 1997; Kushner 1997, White, 1998, İçduygu at all, 1999; Cornell 2001, Heper, 2008). Second, the socioeconomic dimension of the issue is also a commonly cited source of the conflict. In fact, the region is one of the least developed region in the country (Kirisçi and Winrow 1997; White 1998; Icduygu, Romano and Sirkeci 1999, Kirişçi 2011).

Within this respect, the process of the politicization of the Kurdish issue should be evaluated under important events shaping the Turkish political context. The modernization process of the Turkish state, the economic development the country has faced during the 1960's and relatively liberal political scene has contributed to the rise of new elites of Kurdish origin that began to formulate policies with ethnic demands within the democratic realm. On the other hand, development in 1970's gave the movement its Marxist-Leninist character. Nevertheless, the 1980 military coup has contributed to its illegal character by severely expelling these groups from the democratic realm through denying the Kurdish identity and banning all kind of activities carried on ethnic lines. This contributed to the radicalization of these elites and the Kurdish cause by orienting them to defend their objectives through violent means. During the 1990's, the increase in terrorist attacks of the PKK in the region and

the response of the state through military means on one hand, and the deteriorating economic conditions on the other, created an environment of insecurity and discrimination among citizens of Kurdish origin.

Within this respect, the increasing support for pro-Kurdish parties entering the electoral scene after 1990's should be evaluated within the realm of two processes: The gaining importance of the Kurdish issue vis-a-vis the center/periphery cleavage among citizens of Kurdish origin as a result of the anti-ethnic policies of the state institutions and the deteriorating economic conditions of the citizens of Kurdish origin as a result of the economic policies of the governments after 1980s. These two dimensions are important in understanding possible factors shaping the competition between AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties, and the basis of the support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin. Within this context, this section evaluates the existing literature on identifying the major dimensions of support for AKP.

1.1- Mobilization through Programmatic Linkage

Rationalist approaches explain the decision of a voter to support a party based on his/her perception on the distance of the party's position to his/her preferred position on the dimension he/she defines as decisive. Within this respect, although, government policies on both the political and economic realm may be the major cause behind the politicization of the issue; increasing support for PKK or pro-Kurdish parties in the region should not be evaluated as the direct result of rising of ethnic consciousness. The study suggests that the rising support for the PKK or pro-Kurdish parties should be related to the inability or reluctance of major parties to fully address the preferences of the voters of Kurdish origin. Within this respect the coming of pro-Islamist parties in the political scene of the Kurdish speaking region increasing their voters shares from 23% in 1995 to 48% in 2007, has been interpreted as a major challenge to the monopoly of the PKK and pro-Kurdish parties (Tüzcer, 2009). The increasing competition between the two blocks of parties and their success to attain nearly all the votes in the region has been analyzed within the framework of their programmatic positions. These studies base their argument on a programmatic perception of competition shaped by

policy formulation and implementation. Indentifying the major competition being between AKP and BDP, they suggest two possible dimensions affecting the success of AKP in this competition: reconciliation of the Kurdish issue in the center/periphery paradigm and economic policies.

The first argument constructs around the fact that state policies after 1980 have contributed to the increase in ethnic consciousness among citizens of Kurdish origin, who previously defined themselves in terms of center/peripheral cleavage. In fact, as Yavuz and Özcan (2006, p.106) state, a considerable number of citizens of Kurdish origin define themselves based upon both religious and ethnic markers. As these authors argue, most of the citizens of Kurdish origin mainly identify themselves first with religious values rather than ethnicity, but also feel Kurdish when confronted with the choice of ethnic identity (p.106).

According to these studies, the perception of the Kurdish issue and policy formulation by AKP and BDP at national level make them important rivals. Defending the idea that center/periphery cleavage has traditionally played an important role among the Kurds (see Bruinessen 1992; Yegen 1996, p. 225; Atacan 2001, pp. 111_12; Cizre 2002, pp. 229-30), these studies suggest that the reactionary character of the pro-Islamist parties against the secular and authoritarian center and the illegitimization of the pro-Islamist parties by the state institutions are their common traits with the Kurdish movement. Gunter and Yavuz (2007) suggest that the support for the pro-Islamist RP (Refah partisi – Welfare party) among citizens of Kurdish origin is the result of the perception of the party as an "anti-Kemalist" and "anti-systemic" party that has been suppressed by the same enemy as they have", namely the secularist center. Similarly, Bozarslan (1996, p. 18) suggests that ideological and reactionary motivations were primary factors behind the success of the explicitly RP among the Kurds. According to Yavuz (1998, pp. 11- 13, 1999, 2003), the 'oppositional identity' of the pro-Islamic parties has appealed to the Kurds, who were also marginalized by the political system.

Within this respect, the success of the party depends on its ability to reconcile ethnic and religious dimensions in their policy formulation and implementation. The ideological position of pro-Islamic parties and the AKP on the Kurdish issue supports their ability to reconcile these two dimensions. Within this respect, they believe that 'the Islamic layer of identity could be useful in terms of containing ethnic tensions and finding a peaceful solution' (Yavuz and Özcan 2006; Sarıgil 2010, Efegil, 2011). Thus,

the problem can be solved by reformulating the Kurdish identity within the center/periphery context and simultaneously providing some basic social and political rights. Aktürk (2009) suggests that the political demands of the Kurdish movement are also not very different than the Islamic conception which has its base in the definition of the Millet in the Ottoman period. Nevertheless, the author suggests that such a reformulation of the Kurdish problem may face the difficulty to reverse the new secular reality that 80 years of secularization has created on the citizens of Kurdish origin. Furthermore, the conflict of the party with the representatives of the center and its attempt to reformulate Kemalist values concentrating around the redefinition of secularism and a redistribution of power between the elites of the center and the periphery is expected to be effective in increasing its support. Similarly, attempts of the party to exclude the military from the realm of politics, to change the composition of main bureaucratic agencies, and to form a more moderate version of secularism are all seen as areas of common interest. The AKP's support for the democratization reforms of the EU concerning individual and social rights, its position on the democratic dimension of the Kurdish issue, and the provision of minority rights are aspects of the party's policy that directly deal with the Kurdish problem.

Given the fact that the economy is another decisive dimension of the Kurdish problem, another possible tool for the AKP may be the use of economic means, especially among citizens of Kurdish origin with low socioeconomic status to increase it support. Asserting that citizens of Kurdish origin who have nothing to lose and do not have the opportunity to collaborate may joint opposition groups, İçduygu, Romano and Sirkeci (1999) emphasize the role of the economy in explaining support for pro-Kurdish parties. Similarly, Sarıgil's (2010) research, based on the World Values Survey (1999-2000) highlights the significant effect of the economic situation in Kurdish voters' decision to vote for Pro-Kurdish parties. It indicates that as the level of education and income increases, the likelihood of ethno-nationalist tendencies declines. Furthermore, Sarıgil empirically validates the claims of other authors on the equal role of both religion and ethnicity in the identification of most of the citizens of Kurdish origin. According to his results, religion is not empirically significant in explaining the likelihood of citizens of Kurdish origin to vote for pro-Kurdish parties. In other words, AKP and BDP do have a common electoral base that is religious and Kurdish at the same time and sensitive to material incentives in their voting preferences.

According to Sarıgil (2010) although religiosity and ethnicity affect Kurdish voters' electoral choice, these definitions are mostly based on socio-economic term making material incentive as an important tool for affecting peoples party preferences. Similarly, this shows that there is high level of volatility among the constituencies of AKP and BDP, which are open to vote for both parties that do not address particular religious or ethnic preferences but representation and better living conditions (Demiralp, 2012, p. 288-290). Within this respect, economic performance of the party or investment on projects that everyone can benefit in certain geographical unit may be one way to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin. Such a strategy may be an option for AKP.

This literature provides many examples on the use of community projects in terms of pork-barrel to increase its support in a specific geographical region especially for gaining the support of swing voters that ideologically indifferent between two parties (Ferejohn, 1974; Baron, 1991; Anne Case, 2001, Denemark, 2000, Rocha-Menocal, 2001, Margit Tavits, 2009; Graham and Kane, 1998; Schady, 2000; Molinar and Weldon, 1994; Diaz-Cayero, 2008). Eventually, the studies signify the presence of a group of swing voters among citizens of Kurdish origin that are ideologically close to both AKP and BDP. Thus, the use of unconditional economic means can be a logical policy for AKP which controls these resources, especially among citizens with lower socioeconomic conditions who are more sensitive to these kinds of incentives.

1.2- Mobilization through Clientelistic Linkage

Studies on clientelism suggest that programmatic linkage is not the only way to attract voters. Another source of support can be provided through clientelist linkage, which is carried on an individual level and is mostly built on conditional economic transaction. According to Calvo and Murillo (2010) on which level the voter will decide who to vote is based on his/her distance to the clientelistic network. The presence of a clientelistic linkage may provide a further mechanism for voters to decide on which party to vote.

The existence of such a linkage to mobilize voters would provide certain flexibility to the party on its policy formulation at national level. This kind of a strategy seems to be especially vital for AKP's continuing support among citizens of Kurdish origin especially under a political context characterized by a position change by the party on the Kurdish issue. Low socio-economic conditions among the citizens of Kurdish origin on one hand and AKP's access to state resources on the other may provide the necessary impetus to use these resources for organization and mobilization purpose.

Within this respect, although programmatic competition would probably explain, a considerable portion of the electoral shift between AKP and BDP, clientelistic accountability may be another source of support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin.   This alternative explanation may provide an answer to different electoral patterns at a more local level and continuous support even when AKP positions itself on the opposite side of the Turkish/Kurdish dimension at national level. For example, Demiralp (2012) suggest that

> "Many voters who support Islamist or Kurdish parties are open to political options that may not involve a coherent religious or ethnic agenda, as long as the rulers promote provincial interests, deliver basic public services effectively, and maintain a stable and satisfactory economic environment…For these voters, a party's success mostly depends on its ability to speak to local interests, the candidate's personal charisma, the party's or the candidate's previous services, or the voters' personal relations with the candidate" (p. 295-296).

In fact, present studies provide a powerful ground to expect such a strategy. These studies identify two different characteristics in this respect. While the first concerns the role of the networks and patronage in shaping the voting behavior of Turkish and Kurdish citizens, the second focus on the use of distributions of municipal resources and populist policies by especially, pro-Islamist parties. Authors such as Sunar, (1974, 2004), Sayarı (1977), Heper & Keymen (1999), Güneş-Ayata (2004) identify the historical use of clientelism, beginning with the early years of the republic, by political parties in Turkey to increase electoral support. These authors place the development of clientelism in the national building efforts of the early years of the Turkish Republic. Within this respect, the first stage of clientelism was characterized by the relationship developed between local notables of the periphery and the center that have no base of support in the periphery. Loyalty of the periphery in this era was based

on kinship, extended families or religious communities and local notables were used as a mean to gain this loyalty (Güneş-Ayata, 2004, p. 50). The notables were not used to increase support but to regulate the relations between the center and periphery. With the passage to multi-party politics in 1950s, electoral support of the people became a major factor for political parties' competition, while rapid socio-economic transformation of the periphery increased consciousness of the voters on the bargaining power of their votes (Sayarı, 1977, p. 108-109). These developments contributed the replacement of notable clientelism to 'party directed patronage', where former notables transformed into party affiliated brokers (Sayarı, 1977, p. 108, Güneş-Ayata, 2004, p. 53). Social transformation and integration of the Turkish society in 1960s where rapid change through social mobilization and commercialization of economic activities was witnessed, decreased the importance of former sources of loyalties resulting to its replacement by party loyalty. In this period, the party became an important mean of access to state resources. The enlargement of state owned enterprises in this period increased the resources available to the government to use patronage as a political mean (Sunar, 1974, 2004). As a result, political parties became very attractive for the new emerging elites of the society competing for these resources. Güneş-Ayata suggests that this link between the political parties and voters was disrupted with the 1980 Military Coup. For Heper and Keymen (1999 p.266), this trend was also followed by the new governing party ANAP (Anavatan partisi –Motherland party) who purposefully preferred to form a direct link with the voters where material resources has been distributed via pork-barrel in rural areas. Within this period, the major impetus behind economic decisions was market signals not clientelist demands. Nevertheless, the lift on the bans of former political leaders signaled the return to the old way of clientelism (Güneş-Ayata, 2004, p. 57-58).

The developments in the pro-Kurdish dominated region have been different from the rest of Turkey until recently. The major difference has been the lack of integration through social and economic transformation and the persistence of tribal and religious relations as source of loyalty. This prevented the transformation in this region from clientelism based on local notables to party affiliated brokers (Kudat, 1975). As Sayari stressed in 1977, although party organizations were present in this region they were not well established. Furthermore, low party identification created great electoral volatility where voters easily shifted their electoral preferences from one election to the other

(Sayarı, 1977, p. 110). In fact, some kind of transformation in 1970s occurred among some citizens of Kurdish origin who gained the opportunity to go to western cities mostly for the purpose of education. However, the increase of their Kurdish consciousness prevented them to enter to major parties after 1980 due to the assimilationist policies of the military following this period. Furthermore, their secularist stands and reaction against the dominance of tribalism and religious order was in a sense decreasing their base among the traditionally organized region. As a result, these Kurdish citizens associated with PKK and pro-Kurdish parties constituting the founding elements of these movements. During 1990s, the increasing insecurity in the region and dominance of the military as the representative of the state decreased the ability of political parties to develop their network in the region. Yalçın Moussau (2012, p.57) suggest that the weak ties of political parties in the region resulting in the weakness of the clientelistic relations might have played a role in the negligence of the Eastern region. Recall that by comparing Muş and Istanbul, Sayarı (1976, 1977) makes a similar suggestion for the years of 1970's. Although Yavuz and Özcan (2006) state in 2006, the continuing importance of the traditional tribal and religious loyalties in the perception of politics in the region (p.106), the forced migration policies of the military in 1990's changed in fact the social characteristics of the region increasing insecurity at the individual level. As previously mentioned, the result of this policy was the immigration of an important part of the population to large cities in the region and the western part of Turkey. This caused a physical detachment from former loyalties and further economic deprivation, increasing alienation among the immigrants. The characteristics of new formed loyalties were primarily based on how the immigrants integrated to the society.

A considerable number of scholars (Öniş 1997; Barkey 1998; White 1998; Toprak 2005, p. 181; Yavuz and Özcan 2007, pp. 130-1) explain the RP's success among Kurdish people in shanty-towns both in the western and eastern parts of the country with the use of their present network to integrate these immigrants in the system. By incorporating them in their network through the provision of material incentives such as shelter, jobs, food and fuel, and immaterial incentive such as attending weddings, circumcisions and burial ceremonies, the party was successful in gaining support of a large amount of citizens. Their control of the municipalities especially in western parts of the cities created a great advantage for them. On the other hand, the absence of such a

network and inability to integrate can be seen as the major cause of the increasing violence with strong attachments to ethnic identification among citizens of Kurdish origin (White, 1998; Canefe, 2008). This situation increases support for BDP who tend to mobilize these immigrants by highlighting their "purposeful" exclusion from the system and growing socio-economic inequality.

Similar evaluations can be made for AKP, which is the inheritor of the RP tradition. Gunter and Yavuz (2007, p. 296) states that AKP is the only party that has dense social network that works for the victory of the party in every geographical units of the country, accompanied by control of a large number of municipalities. Furthermore, such a network, although developed through the distribution of incentives may provide an important ground for the dissemination of the ideology of the party creating a sense of common values shaped by the party and a certain degree of identification with the party. As White (1998) points it out, the importance of public services provided by Islamist parties in Istanbul's shantytowns is a major factor not only on these parties' electoral support but also on the Islamization of population.

The role of the party organization in mobilizing the voters of Kurdish origin through material inducement seems prevailing. The role of the party organization in developing the clientelistic network among Turkish political parties has been indicated by Sayarı (1976). Although there is a considerable number of studies on the main characteristics on the organizations of political parties in Turkey, they mostly provide a descriptive account of the level of political participation in political parties, ideological orientations or socio-demographic characteristics. The study conducted by Sayarı in 1976 is one among important studies that depicts a detailed account of the main characteristics of Turkish political parties in that period. Among recent the studies of Tosun & Erdoğan-Tosun (2010) and Uysal and Topak (2010) are important in highlighting different characteristics of the activists of main political parties in Turkey. While Tosun and Erdoğan-Tosun (2010) analyze the Turkish political parties in terms of the degree of political participation and organization, Uysal and Topak (2010) focus on the identification of the social networks of the party activists. Schüler's study (2002) on CHP depicts the complex relationship between ethnic ties, hometown origin and patronage in the organizational ranks of the party. The number of studies questioning the possible role of the grass-root organizations on the effectiveness of the mobilization of the Turkish political parties is rather scarce with the exception of a few recent studies

that mainly focuses on AKP. In their analysis on the mobilization strategy of AKP in the municipal elections of 2009 in Istanbul Çaha & Guida (2011) provide examples on how difference in the strength of the neighborhood organizations affects the nature of the mobilization efforts. Kumbaracı (2009) depicts an account of the formal organizational structure of AKP with attempt to understand its level of Institutionalization and centralization. The study of Özbudun and Hale (2010) that comprises of an analysis of the organizational structure of the party, its local organizations and their effect on the mobilization of voters is important in the sense it highlights the intense activities of these organizations and their connections to the voters.

Major studies in the Turkish literature successfully indicate the use of programmatic and clientelistic strategies by political parties and their possible affect on voters' choice. However, they fail to provide a concrete argument on different mobilization strategies of AKP and the role of the party organizations in increasing the effectiveness of such mobilization efforts on vote choice whose validity can be tested empirically. The study aims to fulfill such a gap by focusing on the role of clientelistic linkage carried through the AKP's local organizations in shaping voters preferences. Within this respect, based on the existing literature, the next section is a detailed illustration of the main hypothesis of the study.

CHAPTER 2

THEORY: EVALUATING AKP'S ELECTORAL SUPPORT AMONG VOTERS OF KURDISH ORIGIN

The major concern of the present study is to understand the factors that increase in the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy of AKP among voters of Kurdish origin across different geographical units. Studies on the rise of ethnic parties have mostly answered this question by focusing on the programmatic dimension of the competition where rise in support for ethnic parties is evaluated in relation with the policy positioning of parties and voters in the political system. Adopting a slightly different approach, this study aims at testing the consolidating effect of clientelistic mobilization through the party organizations on the political preferences of members of an ethnic group. Under circumstances where the party is successful in incorporating the members of an ethnic group into the clientelistic network, political preferences is expected to be less sensitive to the programmatic nature of the competition since voters will tend to evaluate the party through its clentelistic performance. In contrast, under circumstances where the party fails to incorporate them, support for its competitor is expected to be more in line with the programmatic nature of the competition where voters decide who to support based on the programmatic positions of the parties. This study evaluates the validity of this suggestion by breaking it down into three lines of arguments.

The first line of arguments concerns the means available to political parties to mobilize voters. The study suggests that political parties use both clientelistic and programmatic linkages in order to gain the support of voters. Clientelistic mobilization is a safer strategy when compared to programmatic mobilization since its distribution is individual and conditional to support. Other things being equal which strategy a party will rely more on is based on types of voters and predictability of voters conduct.

Socio-economic conditions and political preferences are factors affecting voters' elasticity. Within this respect, mobilization through clientelistic distribution is expected to be more influential among voters with low socio-economic conditions and swing voters that ideologically indifferent between two competing political parties. Albeit, conditionality is an important dimension differentiating clientelistic from programmatic linkage, this study mainly focuses on the individual and discretionary characteristic of the former. The major reason is the relativity of the conditionality according to the nature of the clientelistic linkage which is differently defined by the literature. Although some scholars perceive clientelistic exchange as a short-term process, very instrumental in nature, the study defines it as a long-term strategy where different types of resources are distributed to different types of voters and where compliance is voluntarily assured through building trust. Yet, to be able to develop such a clientelistic kinkage, this study suggests that political parties should directly contact the voters on a repeated course of interaction to be able to identify the political preferences and assure their compliance through building trust. Nevertheless, the political settings are mostly characterized by limited information. Consequently, political parties will have a tendency to create certain mechanisms to overcome the lack of information so as to mobilize voters more effectively.

The second line of arguments concerns the effectiveness of clientelistic mobilization through party organizations. This study suggests that strong party organization measured in terms of number of party activists and the repetetiveness of their interactions with the votes provides a suitable mechanism for the party to effectively develop a long-term clientelistic linkage where different types of voters are individually identified and compliance is voluntarily assured. A strong party organization contributes to the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy in two manners. The first one concerns the quality of the relation it creates with the voters. Deeper rooted the party organization, in terms of length of its presence and the intensity of its interaction, into the society greater will be its capacity to deal with the information problem and specifically target voters. Even more important, the study suggests that what makes the clientelistic exchange through a strong party organization a stable strategy is not its effect in increasing the party's ability to monitor voters as suggested by Stokes (2005) but in creating a system of shared values that promotes voluntary compliance and attachment with the party through repeated interactions. The second

contribution concerns the scope of the strategy. The number of activists and mechanism of information flow among them increase the number of identified voters. From this perspective, it can be said that the higher the number of the activists, the greater will be the channels of information between them the higher will be the scope of the clientelistic linkage.

The third line of arguments concerns the effectiveness of the mobilization of members of an ethnic group through clientelistic linkage and thec mechanism through which these voters are incorporated into the clientelistic network. Explaining the rise of ethnic consciousness as a rational strategy adopted by both political parties and members of an ethnic group in the process of resources distribution, the study suggests first, that mobilization through clientelistic linkage is an efficient strategy to gain the support of members of an ethnic group. Yet especially under conditions where ethnic consciousness is high, inter-community relations are weak, the ethnic group is composed of different types of voters and has potential for violence incorporation of their members may be very costly through existing structure. Given the fact that ethnic groups are characterized by dense social networks that provide ready channels of interaction, political parties would probably try to infiltrate into these networks to mobilize these voters through the incorporation of co-ethnic into the party's ranks. This is a why under these conditions political parties will rely on mobilizing these groups through co-ethnics to decrease the cost of identification and persuasion. Therefore, the study suggests that the incorporation of members of an ethnic group into a party's clientelistic network is related to the conjunction of two variables: the number and time of entry of co-ethnic in the party's ranks and the intensity of their contact with the voters.

The fourth line of arguments explains why a political party cannot form a party organization deeply rooted in the society and incorporate members of an ethnic group into the organization even if such a strategy is rational. First, the study suggests that under circumstances where ideological orientations are low distribution of resources may be convenient source of the motivation of the activists. The nature of the mechanisms through which resources are distributed is vital in understanding motivation potential of political parties. Within this respect, focusing on the parties' internal organizations, the study argues that the absence of competitive intra-party advancement rules that would motivate all, existing and new activists, to increase the

network, prevent the successful functioning and enlargement of a party organization (Chandra, 2004). Centralized party organizations have a disadvantage since their mechanism of distribution is based on loyalty rather than performance. The study argues that it is very difficult for centralized party organization to change their intra-party advancement mechanisms even under conditions where it has or willing to do so. The path dependence inherent in all institutions prevents centralized party organization to set such a mechanism to incorporate new elites without frustrating existing ones in the later phases of its foundation. On the other hand, change may occur in the internal functioning of a centralized party organization through a critical juncture with a leadership change that has the ability to reset the coalition composition of the party and rules of intra-party advancement. The ability of the new leaders to set a competitive intraparty advancement rule is based on the previous experiences. The following section undertakes a detailed logical evaluation of each of these arguments in the light of existing studies.

2.5- How Political Parties Persuade Voters:

At the most general level, democracy may be defined as a regime of accountability and responsibility where political parties are responsive (Dahl, 1971) and accountable (Karl, 1990; Schmitter, 2004) towards the voters and voters evaluate political parties' performance through regular elections. The means through which political parties mobilize voters are diverse in which ideology or economy is one of its important factors. The distribution of state resources by political parties for electoral purposes has been a widely analyzed dimension in the literature, especially in political settings where parties' and voters ideological positioning is very close to each other. On the other hand, the literature differentiates between different linkages of party/voters accountability in which programmatic and clientelistic linkages are important variants. Voters may decide on which party to vote by evaluating them on either of these types of accountability. Which type it will take into consideration is based on the voter/party linkage that a political party has used in mobilizing them. Within this respect, political parties may distribute resources through either of these linkages; their decision is based

on two factors: the voter's elasticity and the predictability of his/her conduct. This section will first, broadly explain these types of linkages in focusing on their main differences in mobilizing voters and their effect on electoral outcomes. Then, the conditions stated in the literature to affect political parties' decisions to use either of these linkages will be evaluated.

2.1.1- Ideological Mobilization: Programmatic Linkage

The first brand of studies analyzing the political parties' mobilization strategies focuses on the responsive government model where political parties are evaluated by voters through the policies they formulate and apply. Although these studies mostly do not focus on political parties electoral mobilization strategies (Rorschneider, 2002) or examine the electoral process and voters' choice, they provide a fruitful ground in understanding how political parties try to attract voters. As such, this literature provides valuable insights into understanding political parties' strategies to mobilize voters. The common ground of these studies is their reliance on the programmatic linkage as a way to persuade voters. Within this respect, political parties are taken responsible through the policies they formulate and apply.

Within this respect, the general literature on vote choice can be analyzed from the standpoint of two general approaches: historical comparative and rational choice approaches. Apart from their divergence on how political parties' mobilization strategies affect voters' electoral preference both approaches are commonly used in evaluating political parties' responsiveness and accountability. Both approaches see the interaction of voters and elected officials on the base of policy formulation. The relationship is shaped on the preferences of voters and parties that position themselves along cleavages or issue dimensions. Mostly deriving from the political development of Western democracies, responsiveness of the party to the voters is assured through the policies it formulates. In both approaches, voters evaluate the political parties not only through declared future but also past policies.

Their main difference lies on their diverging perception of the factors that are thought to be decisive in explaining vote choice. Socio-psychological approaches link

33

voting decision to longer process of evaluations where positioning on long standing cleavages in the society and partisanship to a party explains voting preferences. Accordingly, vote choice is the product of long-term social and psychological attachments (Campbell 1960, Lipset & Rokkan 1967, Thomassen 1977, Lijphart 1979, Mair 1997, Bartolini 2002 Çarkoğlu & Kalaycıoğlu 2007)[3]. While some studies have focused on the role of party identification, others have highlighted the importance of social cleavages in shaping voters' choices. According to these studies, individuals assess political parties and their policies through the party identities that they develop mostly at youth and which are shaped by the characteristics of the family and social environment in which they live in. The voters' perceptions and preferences on political parties do not easily change across elections. The amount of party identification by the voter to a political party is positively correlated with his/her likelihood to vote for a party. This is why content or positions taken by parties during the electoral campaigning periods affect voters' choice very poorly since these are mostly addressed to a partial audience that sees the debates between political parties from a partisan lens.

Studies of programmatic mobilization based their assumptions on the researches of the spatial modeling evaluated by Downs (1957) and later developed by Hinich and Pollard (1981), Enelow and Hinich (1984), Hinich and Munger (1994). The importance of this model is that it provides explanation for both vote choice and party competition (Çarkoğlu & Kalaycıoğlu, 2007, p: 165). Incorporating the model of Hotelling (1929) on firm competition to political science, Downs analyzed vote choice of utility maximizing individuals and competition of vote maximizing political parties on a single-issue space. According to Downs, each voter has a most preferred position in a single-issue space. Vote maximizing political parties take a certain position on this issue space. Accordingly, based on political parties declarations individuals decide which position is closer to their most preferred position by calculating the distance of their ideal position and the parties' positions.

Later, Hinich and Pollard (1981), Enelow and Hinich (1984), Hinich and Munger (1994) elaborate the model of Downs to have a more realistic depiction of the actual political context. According to them given the fact that the context of political competition is not based on a single issue but on multiple issues, there is an uncertainty

---

[3] There has been a great quantity of Study in the Turkish Context that implemented the Michigan model. Some examples are Ergüder (1980), Esmer (2001), Çarkoğlu & Toprak, (2000)

about both the voters' positions and the political parties' positions in the political space for all of the issues under observation. The authors suggest that, under uncertainty, political parties inform voters on their position under specific ideological dimensions through the programs they prepare. On the other hand, instead of evaluating the political parties' positions on each issue; by labeling them, voters position political parties on ideological dimensions. They position political parties on these ideological dimensions not only through political parties' declaration but also past political behaviors. Then, the voters decide which party to vote depending on the importance they give to each of these dimensions, their saliency during the electoral campaigning period, their positions on these dimensions and their perceptions on the positioning of the political parties in these dimensions in order to overcome uncertainty about the political parties' policies after they have been elected.

Downs suggests that political parties will move in the issue space where they perceive the majority of the voters' most preferred position are to be found (median voter theorem) (Hinich and Munger,1994, p: 35). Nevertheless, since voters perceive political parties through their ideological positioning from their previous policies, even if the political party changes its position it will not be able to convince all the voters in this position, since voters evaluate political parties' positions through past policies (Hinich & Pollard, 1981).

2.1.2- Particularistic Distribution of State Resources: Programmatic and Clientelistic Linkages

The distribution of resources may be one dimension where political parties mobilize voters. In fact, a great number of studies put much effort into understanding whether political parties use state resources for electoral purposes. Most of these studies have identified the tactical distribution of resources by political parties for political ends. The literature on this subject is large which covers analysis of some western democracies such as US (Cox & McCubbins, 1986, Lindbeck & Weibull, 1987; Dixit and Londregan, 1996), Denmark, Austria (Denemark, 2000; Margit Tavits, 2009) Sweden (Dahlberg and Johanssen, 2002) as well as democratizing countries like Mexico (Molinar and Weldon, 1994; to Diaz-Cayeros, Magaloni and Weingast, 2000; Rocha-

Menocal, 2001; Estéves, Magaloni & Diaz-Cayeros, 2001; Diaz-Cayeros & Magaloni, 2003; Diaz-Cayero, 2008), Argentina (Brusco V. et al, 2004; Calvo and Murillo, 2004; Weitz-Shapiro, 2006) Peru (Graham and Kane, 1998; Schady, 2000), Venezuela (Penfold-Becerra, 2007, Hawkins, 2010) Albania (Case, 2001), Russia (Treisman, 1996). Nevertheless, voters may evaluate political parties' performance on the distribution of resources through different voter party linkages in which programmatic and clientelistic accountability are two distinct forms.

Although the distribution of programmatic nature may be carried through policy formulation to all citizens or different groups in the society, they may also be implemented particularistically in the policy application realm. The mostly used kind of programmatic distribution in the literature is pork barrel defined as a particularistic form of distribution carried geographically in return for vote, or spending that is intended to benefit a geographic unit in return for political support. Within this respect, Pork-barrel benefit can easily be identified as distinct from ideological mobilization and as particularistic in character.

A large literature indicates the particularistic distribution of resources clientelistically as a strategy commonly used by political parties in order to mobilize voters (Kaufman, 1974, Rosenstone & Hassen 1993, Auyero 2001, Kitschelt & Wilkinson 2007, Epstein, 2009). Diverging from early studies that perceived clientelist ties as a pre-modern phase that would disappear in the later stages of development (Duverger, 1966; Kirchheimer 1966; Panebianco, 1988), recent studies have mentioned the existence of this kind of accountability in a large number of countries, including the advanced industrial democracies (Cornelius 2004, Stokes 2005, Schaffer 2007; Kitschelt and Wilkinson, 2007; Gans-Morse at al 2009).

Clientelistic mobilization is a more effective strategy than programmatic mobilization. The literature focusing on different strategies on the distribution of state resources perceive mobilization through programmatic distribution of state resources as a strategy containing a specific risk that political parties tries to overcome by the use of diverse mechanisms. Under programmatic exchanges through policy formulation or application political parties create beneficiaries or losers without verifying whether the winning group will deliver their votes. As a result, benefits are distributed to a large group where only an unknown fraction of this group will actually support the party. Thus, politicians enter in a non-contingent, indirect political exchange, which is

accompanied neither by monitoring nor by the knowledge on who will vote for them. Clientelistic exchange is a more safe investment since its benefits are tied to the delivery of political support in exchange for material benefits. Put it differently it is conditional. Under clientelistic distribution, the party distributes the benefits to smaller and identifiable groups of members who have delivered or promised to deliver their support in return for vote. Monitoring the voters' conduct is an important aspect that differentiates clientelistic linkage from programmatic linkage.

This study suggests that apart from its safety on electoral outcomes, clientelistic linkage provides political parties a certain amount of flexibility for positional changes in the ideological spectrum (Kitschelt, 2000, p. 852). Since it creates a different linkage of accountability, which is based on the provision of the benefit, position changes will less translate into possible loss of votes. For example, Levitsky (2003) suggests that clientelistic linkage carried through flexible party organization was a advantage for the party in designing a radical reform package to overcome the economic crisis in Argentina. Within this respect, although programmatic distribution is carried to larger groups, its effect on electoral outcome is less predictable. Although the outcome of clientelistic exchange is more predictable, its efficiency is based on the voter's type and the party's ability to assure compliance.

Although scholars agree on the effectiveness of clientelistic vis-à-vis programmatic linkages, they greatly diverge in terms of deferentiating between the programmatic and clientelistic distribution of material resources. A considerable amount of scholars differentiates each distribution according to the types of goods a party has at its disposal for distribution. Scholars (Estéves, Magaloni & Diaz-Cayeros, 2001; Diaz-Cayeros & Magaloni, 2003; Kitschelt and Wilkinson, 2007; Calvo and Murillo, 2010) classify the goods distributed by political parties under three broader umbrellas defined according to the amount of voters they target. These are public individual, and club goods. On the one extreme of the types of goods are public goods that are desired by everyone in the society and no one can be excluded from their benefits. Among these types of goods that cannot be used selectively, are economic growth, full employment, low inflation, clean environment etc. On the other extreme lie individual goods with material or immaterial nature that can be selectively distributed to individuals. Distribution of cash money, clothing, food, jobs, public houses, education benefits, social benefits, aid packages, grants, contracts may be defined under the

material types of individual goods (Cornelius 2004, Stokes 2005, Schaffer 2007, Kitschelt and Wilkinson, 2007; Gans-Morse at al 2009).

On the other hand, Müller (2006) identifies the use of non-material types of goods. According to him, non-material goods that cover the know-how for dealing with authorities are used by political parties to assist people on the effectuation of bureaucratic advances such as how to apply for a grant, social assistance programs etc.

In return, club goods provide benefit for a subset of citizens. Citizens outside some defined group boundaries can be excluded from the benefit of such goods. It mostly takes the form of the procurement of social services such as school, hospital building or development of infrastructures such as roads, water or other services depending on the demands of the targeted community. The distribution of municipal budget by the state can also be included within these types of goods. Within this respect, according to some authors, political parties will distribute public or club goods on programmatic ground since individual exclusion from these goods is not possible, while individual goods will be distributed on clientelistic ground (Estéves, Magaloni & Diaz-Cayeros, 2001; Diaz-Cayeros & Magaloni, 2003).

According to Kitschelt and Wilkinson (2007), although the type of good may under some circumstances differentiates between different types of linkages, they are not the primary criterion since most of these goods may be distributed through either of these linkages. For example, public goods, by nature may, not be divisible and can only be distributed through programmatic linkages. On the other hand, although individual goods signal a certain amount of clientelistic distribution they may also be distributed on programmatic ground without the condition of electoral support. Similarly, club goods, which mostly consist one of the largest type of investment of governments, may either be distributed through programmatic or clientelistic linkage (p. 11).

Clientelistic linkage is defined by Kitschelt and Wilkinson as a particular mode of exchange that represent a transaction: "*The direct exchange of citizens votes in return for direct payments or continuing access to employment, goods and services*". Previous studies identified clientelism *as a durable, face to face, hierarchical and asymmetrical exchange between patrons and clients.* (Banfield & Wilson, 1963; Schmidt, 1977; Scott, 1972, Kaufman, 1974). According to Kaufman clientelism is a special type of dyadic exchange which is characterized by unequal power and status between actors, reciprocity- a self regulating exchange- and particularistic and private relationship.

Recent scholars argue that under democratic institutional settings, clientelism evolve into *a more symmetric, intermittent, instrumental-rational and broker mediated exchange* (p: 4). As a result, it is a hard to enforce contract between independent patrons and clients since each of them may more easily retreat from the bargain. Within this respect, clients or patrons may more easily retreat from the bargain. Furthermore, relations between the patron and the client is no more direct, but carried through brokers at different levels of the organizational structure (Szwarcberg, 2009). Thus, modern clientelism requires specific conditions to be effective (Calvo & Murilo, 2010). Authors such as Stokes (2005), Kitschelt and Wilkinson (2007) argue, other things being equal, what lies in the center of the decision of political parties to mobilize voters to programmatically or clientelistically is dependent on their ability to make voters comply. One defection of clientelistic linkage is the interdependency of its success on the condition that both voters and political parties keep their promises. However, either of them may renege from the deal after they receive the promised benefit.

Yet, the conditionality of clientelistic linkage greatly diverges according to the perception on its nature. While one group of scholars, focus on the ad-hoc base of clientelism where only potential swing voters are targeted to increase support in the short-run, others define it as a long term strategy that has the objective to increase support on a longer period of time where different types of voters are also targeted. Separately, while some focus on the coercive nature of compliance (Stokes 2005 Brusco et al, 2004), others highlight its voluntary nature (Auyero, 2000; Kitschelt & Wilkinson, 2007). Each approach has a different perception of conditionality, which makes the definition of clientelistic linkage more difficult. Given the fact that each of these mechanisms can be used by political parties, this study prefers to differentiate it from programmatic linkage according to its discretionary and individual characteristics. It adopts a more thin definition of conditionality in which political parties formulate long-term strategies where they target different types of voters and assure their compliance voluntarily. Yet, as it will be evaluated in the next sections, this study also suggests that political parties will have a tendency to rely more on long-term strategies since it is more effective. The next sections evaluate each of these arguments. Since such a strategy requires identifying voters on an individual base, it necessitates a mechanism where political parties can directly contact the voters. As it will be discussed in the next

section, according to this dissertation strong party organizations provide such kind of a mechanism.

2.1.3- Types of Voters Political Parties Target

This study defines the clientelistic network as consisting of a set of *concentric circles* where different types of voters have different access to goods and services and different degree of contact with the party brokers. Such a definition is also supported by existing studies that highilight the mobilization of different types of voters, core, swing and opposition through material distribution. For considerable number of scholars, the decision of political parties on which strategy to rely more on is based on the predictability of the voters' elasticity and on their compliance (Stokes 2005, Kitschelt and Wilkinson, 2007). Voters elasticity is identified as the degree which the clientelistic exchange affect the decision of voters to vote or not to vote for a political party (Kitschelt & Wilkinson, p. 12). One major source of elasticity is the political preferences of voters. The socio-economic status of an individual is defined as being important in the degree of voters' elasticity. Under, low socio-economic status even a low amount of inducement would affect voter's decision. As socio-economic status increases, the amount of inducement to affect voter's decision will increase. So clientelistic distribution is expected to be carried to socio-economically lower status individuals (Kitschelt, 2000; Schady, 2000; Estéves et al, 2001; Penfold-Becerra's, 2007; Calvo & Murillo, 2010).

Yet, studies mainly focus on another source of elasticity, which is related to the voters' political preferences. Gary W. Cox and D. McCubbins (1986) identify three different types of voters: core, swing and opposition voters. Support voters are the ones who have consistently supported the party and will support him in the future, swing voters are those *who have neither consistently supportive nor consistently hostile to the party* while *opposition voters who have consistently opposed the party* (p: 376). Other things being equal, a considerable number of studies suggest that political parties will target swing voters (Stokes, 2005; Kitschelt & Wilkinson, 2007, Diaz-Cayeros & Magaloni, 2003). According to these studies, Political parties will not enter in

clientelistic exchange if the voter will vote for them anyway, or the inducement is not effective enough to change a voter's decision. Then, if political parties distribute inducement to core or opposition voters, it will probably waste its scarce resources. Such mobilization will be more effective on voters who are ideologically indifferent between competing parties. According to Kitschelt (2000) mobilization through the distribution of state resources is an important tool for political parties especially in the actual political context witnessing a decreasing trend in the importance of ideologies. Calvo and Murillo (2010) show how the difference in ideological proximity of the political parties differently affects the use of ideology or redistributive strategies by political parties to mobilize voters in Chile and Argentina.   A similar suggestion is cited by Stockes who proposes that as the ideological distance between political parties shrinks, the probability of vote buying increases (2005, p. 321).

Nevertheless, some of these scholars have suggested the long-term perception of mobilization where opposition voters are also targeted to be turned into potential swing voters through the course of their interaction with the party activists (Auyero, 2001, Thachil, 2011; Cammett & Issar, 2010, Stockes, 2005).) According to Auyero, the clientelistic network can be identified as a problem solving network which consist of a set of *concentric circles* around the broker, that have different access to goods and services and different degree of contact with the broker. Some studies illustrate circumstances where political parties distribute some of the resources also to opposition voters (Thachil, 2011; Cammett &Issar, 2010, Balla, Lawrence, Maltzman, Sigelman 2002, Penfold-Becerra's, 2007, Hawkins, 2010). Other have indicated the attempts of political parties of avoiding the possibility to be blamed of favoring only their own supporters (Balla, Lawrence, Maltzman, Sigelman 2002) or distribution for populist purposes to increase support in general as rational of the parties to distribute resources to also opposition voters.   Michael Penfold-Becerra's (2007) and Hawkins (2010) find in their studies the distribution of different types of good to different types of voter; core, swing and opposition for different purposes.

2.1.4- How Political Parties Control Compliance

This dissertation suggests that how political parties assure voters' compliance influences the effectiveness of the strategy since it affects the ability of the party to use both programmatic and clientelistic mobilization linkages at the same time. Szwarcberg (2009) differentiates between coercive and persuasive strategies. She defines a strategy coercive when the broker signals that failing to attend to a rally will imply being stripped from a promise and persuasive when she tries to convince voters to attend to a rally and do not monitor her actions. Within this respect, authors diverge on how clientelistic networks increase stability.

Based on this distinction, while some focus on the coercive nature (Stokes 2005 Brusco et al, 2004), others highlight the voluntary nature of the compliance (Auyero, 2000; Kitschelt & Wilkinson, 2007). This study suggests that political parties will rely more on persuasive strategies since they are more effective in consolidating the votes for the party in the long run. This section will briefly evaluate each of the approaches and their effect on vote consolidation. Although the first strategy of monitoring is always costly, in the other its cost decreases over time. Furthermore, the effect of each one is different on the relationship they developed between benefit and support. In the first type, the support is instrumental and expected to decrease when benefit is not distributed. In the second type, support is more emmotional and may continue even when benefit is not distributed. On the other hand, the length and degree of the interaction of the party with the voters affect which strategy a political party will use.

Scholars such as Auyero (2000) and Kitschelt & Wilkinson (2007) focus on the voluntary compliance of the clientelistic exchange, which is based on the formation of common shared values in the long run. According to these authors, consolidation does not come from monitoring but voluntary compliance through the development of widely held cognitive expectations about the appropriate behavior (Kitschelt & Wilkinson 2007, 18). Time of the interaction between the party and the voter is an important variable in understanding the development of the voluntary compliance. According to Kitschelt and Wilkinson (2007), *clientelism involves a complex web of relations where monitoring and enforcement are carried through an indirect and concealed fashion*

42

where both patrons and clients do not explain the relation as the material distribution of scare goods but *as an enactment of community relations and civic solidarity* (p. 19).

Similarly, Auyero suggests that what is important is not only whether aid is provided or not but how this aid is provided. *"What is being given (and received) and how it is being given (and received) are equally important elements in the operation of political clientelism"* (Auyero, 2000, p. 175). According to Auyero, although the major aim for brokers is to gain votes in return to their help and for the voters it is to meet their needs by using their votes, this exchange is done indirectly. The political machine *"fulfills the important social function of humanizing and personalizing all manner of assistance to those in need"* (Merton 1949, p. 49 in Auyero, 2000, p. 175). *"Trust, solidarity, hope for future, familiaristic orientation and reciprocity (see Roniger 1990, Güneş-Ayata 1994, Scott 1977) do exist in the relationship established between and verbalized by patrons, brokers and clients"* (Auyero, 2000, p. 176). Within this respect, the importance of the mechanism does not derive from its ability to monitor voters on the short run but to create a common identity of shared values and increase party attachment in the long run. As the interaction is carried repeatedly, compliance continues voluntarily without any effort of control for both parties and voters. Activists are perceived as people that sacrifices themselves for the behalf of people. (Auyero, 127) Auyero suggests that *"what appears from the outside as an exchange of votes for favors is seen by the inside in many different (and, sometimes, antagonistic) ways: as either manipulative or altruistic, as interested actions (politics, calculated exchange) or disinterested action (friendship)."* (Auyero, 2000, p. 155-6). Within this respect not only instrumental but also emotional considerations shapes the linkage.

Scholars like Stokes (2005), Brusco et al (2004) stress the importance of repeated action in the party's ability to identify and punish cheaters. According to them, the consolidating effect of the repeated actions comes from the monitoring ability of the brokers by identifying voters' past behavior. Political machines provide brokers with this kind of monitoring power. This suggestion derives from the basic observation that the party activists monitor voters' behaviors. Thus, if political parties monitor voters, compliance should be coercive in nature. Political parties would not have to monitor voters in a transaction repeated over time if compliance was voluntarily assured. Brusco et al (2004) also give a similar suggestion, when they emphasize the stability of clientelism through its ability to effectuate direct monitoring on voters' conduct.

According to the authors defending coercive mobilization, when the broker monitors the client, compliance increases as it creates a perception that the party can know his/her conduct and will punish him/her if he/she renege from the deal. Since voters believe they are being watched, they rarely disobey (Szwarcberg 2009, Stockes 2005, Brusco et al, 2004). It is this fear, not the actual capacity of the broker to monitor compliance that makes clientelistic exchange stable.

If repeated interaction increases voluntary compliance, why political parties monitor voters' past conduct even in long time repeated interactions where brokers have reputations? Szwarcberg (2012) suggests that monitoring may not be carried to threaten people, but to have an objective evaluation on voters' types and needs so to more specifically decide how different types of resources will be distributed to different types of voters. Within this respect, despite compliance may not be coercive in nature, monitoring may be applied so as to evaluate different levels of support to the party, enabling the party to make more specific targeting.

The effectiveness of voluntary compliance through the clientelistic network is not only on its diminishing effect on monitoring cost but also its ability to increase the effectiveness of programmatic mobilization, party attachment, or even party identification in the long run. Within this respect, the success of clientelistic exchange in consolidating votes does not derive from its instrumental character, the distribution of resources to meet the needs of voters, but its emmotional character, increasing attachment to the party through the formation of common values.

Assuring compliance through the formation of common shared values may also enable a political party to ideologically mobilize voters, since it creates positive connotation with the party. Under circumstances where voters evaluate shared values with the party activists they will be more inclined on the accuracy of the given messages. Such a situation is not expected to develop under coercive compliance since the relationship is built upon negative connotations such as fear and punishment. Within this respect, clientelistic mobilization through the local organizations may be an effective strategy for political parties to turn ideologically swing voters into core supporters or opposition voters into swings. In fact, some studies have illustrated how this kind of positive connotations through clientelistic exchange may change the perception of opposition voters on the party in the long run (Thachil, 2011; Cammett &Issar, 2010). In the implementation of such a strategy by the party may give flexibility

to change its position in any salient programmatic dimensions to mobilize other voters without loosening its support among clientelistically mobilized voters.

Szwarcberg (2009) argues that political parties use both types of compliance to mobilize voters. She suggests that the decision of a broker's to use either coercive or persuasive compliance is influenced by the repeated character of the interactions. What differentiates between the two strategies is the reputation of the broker in delivering the goods and the voter to deliver his/her vote. When the broker and the voter have enough reputation, he/she no more has to threaten and punish voters. Since reputation is built over the number of the interaction, then, the sequence in which broker mobilize voters is effective in explaining which strategy a broker will use. Which strategy a party will use is based on the mechanism through which the party contacts the voters. The nature of the mechanism will condition which type of voter it will target and how it will assure compliance.

2.6- Strategies to Identify and Monitor Voters: The Role of Party Organizations

There is evidence in the literature that parties use both programmatic and clientelistic linkages in order to mobilize voters and prefer to apply a portfolio diversification where both mobilization strategies is used (Kitschelt 2000, Estéves, Magaloni & Diaz-Cayeros, 2001; Diaz-Cayeros & Magaloni, 2003; Alberto Diaz-Cayero, 2008, Calvo and Murillo 2010). Yet, clientelistic mobilization necessitates the party to directly contact the voters on a repetitive course of interaction to individually indentify their type and increase trust. This study suggest that the presence of mechanism to overcome the lack of information, gets informed on the voters' elasticity, predicts their conduct and ensures compliance is important in shaping a political parties decision on which strategy it will rely more on when mobilizing voters.

Auyero (2001) suggests that for a clientelist exchange to be strong, access to information on the needs, demands and preferences of the voters is a necessity. Yet given the fact that most political settings are information scare on voters' preferences and conduct, political parties may not always acquire the necessary information. Since mobilization is costly and parties are constrained in terms of the resources at their disposal, they would probably rely on certain mechanisms to overcome the lack of

information and ensure compliance. (Calvo & Murillo, 2010). In the absence of such a mechanism, political parties would rely more on programmatic linkage strategies in a hope to attract as more voters as possible.

The literature states two different mechanisms used by political parties to overcome the lack of information: the electoral results that and the party organization provide opportunity to predict voters' compliance. With this respect, this study suggests that among these two strategies the party organization is the most effective mechanism not only in preventing the political parties to waste their scarce resources through enabling specific targeting at a very individual level, assuring compliance but also consolidating on voters' preferences in the long run. Furthermore, even under circumstances where it is mainly been established for clientelistic purposes, the party organizations may successfully be used by political parties to mobilize voters on programmatic ground, increase party attachment and identification in the long run.

2.2.1- Electoral Results and their Effect on Mobilization of Voters

According to Kitschelt and Wilkinson (2007), at a minimum, only when the predictability of the voter's conduct is high, political parties will prefer clientelistic mobilization, in contrast when predictability is low they will rely more on the programmatic distribution of resources to larger groups. One option to indentify voters elasticity and predict compliance is to use electoral results so as to focus on certain regions in order to target voters that have the potential to support them (Bartolini 2002: 93; Karp and Banducci 2007: 218). Within this respect, Weitz-Shapiro suggests that geographical targeting may be a useful strategy for parties that have restricted access to the voters by other means. Diaz-Cayeros and Magaloni (2003) who assert that geographical characteristics may solve the commitment problem also develop a similar suggestion. Within this respect, some studies have identified the use of geographical indicators to be effective in political parties' strategies. These studies have found that the party's mobilization strategy change according to the trends in the electoral support for political parties and socio-economic indicators of electoral regions.

Within this respect, a considerable amount of studies argues that political parties concentrate their efforts in electoral regions with low socio-economic indicators (Schady, 2000; Estéves et al, 2001; Penfold-Becerra's, 2007; Calvo & Murillo, 2010). On the other hand, others have found that political parties target swing districts (Anne Case, 2001, Denemark, 2000, Rocha-Menocal, 2001, Margit Tavits, 2009; Graham and Kane, 1998; Schady, 2000; Molinar and Weldon, 1994; Diaz-Cayero, 2008). Albeit, the studies have different conclusions on which type of voters political parties target, for the purpose of this section, their importance derives from their findings that electoral characteristics are influential in political parties' decision on who to target. These studies have used different electoral characteristics to understand the political parties strategies. Examples for these kinds of studies are vast in the literature. Relating the distribution of resources to the vote shares an incumbent receives in a geographical unit in an election; scholars like Anne Case (2001), Denemark (2000), Rocha-Menocal (2001), Margit Tavits (2009) have found a relationship between the amount of the electoral competition in resource distribution. On the other hand, studies of scholars such as Graham and Kane (1998), Schady (2000), Molinar and Weldon (1994), Diaz-Cayero (2008) indicates a relationship between the volatility in vote shares of the party across elections and distribution of resources. Estéves et al (2001), Alberto Diaz-Cayeros and Beatriz Magaloni (2003), Diaz-Cayeros, Magaloni and Weingast (2000) argues that a risk-adverse incumbent will prefer to rely to more on clientelistic exchange focusing on the inducement of private or club goods to consolidate its votes since it is a less risky strategy. But, unless incumbents are completely safe and there exists an electoral competition, the incumbents will diversify their portfolio to include programmatic mobilization in order to increase their vote shares (p.6). They conclude that incumbents rely more in clientelistic distribution in districts dominated by poverty and have a low level of competition and high loyalty to the party. As poverty, margins of victory and the size of core voters' decrease politicians rely more on programmatic distribution.

These studies confirm the presence of a relationship between electoral characteristics and political parties' strategies. Yet, the distribution of resources through electoral characteristics is based on the effectuation of rewarding and punishing on a geographical base according to the electoral results. Within this respect, political parties distribute resources based on a probabilistic calculation of the voter's type according to

the electoral results of the region the voters reside. They do not individually identify specific types of voters. As a result, there is still a high probability to make inefficient targeting especially under circumstances where competition is high. Although political parties try to overcome this problem by mobilizing clientelistically only core geographical units, there is still the probability that a party distribute resource to an opposition voter in this unit. Furthermore, political parties cannot differentiate between core districts that support the party on ideological or materialist grounds. Then they have the probability to use their resources ineffectively. As a result, mobilization strategy through the use of geographical characteristics seems still to be an inefficient strategy for political parties, especially when compared with the effectiveness of distribution through the clientelistic network deeply penetrated in the society.

2.2.2- Strong Party Organization and Effective Mobilization of Voters

The study suggests that strong party organization provides a suitable mechanism for the party to increase the effectiveness of its mobilization strategy. Scholars analyzing the mobilization of voters through clientelistic exchange emphasize the role of strong party organizations in providing the necessary mechanism for indentifying different types of voters and monitoring their conduct (Auyero, 2001; Kitschelt, 2000; Kirschelt and Wilkinson, 2005; Stokes, 2007). Calvo and Murillo (2010) focus on the importance of size and structure of the local organizations in understanding the effectiveness of the clientelistic linkage. Within this respect, the effectiveness and use of clientelistic exchange is tied to strength of prior partisan linkages to the constituencies (Calvo & Murillo, 2004).

According to Kitschelt and Wilkinson (2005), the organizational structures which organize upon very low geographical units such as neighborhoods enable individual targeting. A similar suggestion is given by Stokes (2007, p. 324) when she asserts that political machines and clientelistic parties are effective to the extent they insert themselves into the social network of the constituents. When they are deeply penetrated into the society, they do not only distribute resources but also consolidate support for the party in the long run. Its effectiveness derives from the fact that mobilization is

conducted a very local level at by known people on repeated course of interaction and through a large number of activists having close coordination. Within this respect, two characteristics of a strong party organization contribute to the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy. The first one concerns the quality of the relationship it creates with the voters: the level through which it makes the contact and its intensity. Deeper rooted the party organization into the society greater will be its capacity to deal with the information problem, identify different types of voters and specifically target them. Even more important, this dissertation suggests that what makes the clientelistic exchange through a strong party organization a stable strategy is not its effect in increasing the party's ability to monitor voters conduct but in the creation of a system of shared values, that promotes voluntary compliance and attachment with the party. The second contribution concerns the internal functioning of the party in terms of its breath: the number of activists and the degree of coordination between them that assure information flow. The number of activists and mechanism of information flow among them increase the number of identified voters. Within this respect, higher will be the number of the activists, greater will be the channels of information between them higher will be the scope of the consolidated clientelistic linkage. This section will briefly evaluate the effect of the later two characteristics of the party organization in identifying different types of voters and assure compliance .

2.2.3- Level and Intensity of the Interaction and Effective Mobilization

It has been suggested that clientelistic mobilization is more effective when it is carried on a long-term base and through voluntary compliance. Scholars mostly focus on the repeated character of the personal connection between the parties and the voters in explaining the increasing ability of political parties to identify different types of voters and building trust.

This study suggests that strong party organization provides a political party the opportunity to increase the clientelistic network by decreasing the costs of identification and enhancing repetitiveness of the interaction by conducting mobilization through known people sharing the same social environment. As member of the same social

environment, activists have the chance to observe voters they know during daily social interactions. A party activist will probably get more informed on the needs, electoral preferences or past electoral behavior of someone he/she regularly contacts than a person who he meets only once. Stockes (2005, p: 317-8) suggests that *political machines are good at gathering information about the voters' actions and types*. They successfully identify voters' actions- which party they vote for, their type – their partisan predispositions, discern their need and deliver it efficiently. They can also detect which party the voters have supported in the elections, enabling them to control compliance. So parties can distinguish more easily between those who oppose the party strongly, moderately and who are loyalist or indifferent to the party. This would enable them to target people more efficiently or prevent them to waste their resources. With this kind of information, local branches would be able to detect ideologically core or swing voters and mobilize each of them selectively, through ideological or economic means, depending on their diverging preferences and their types. Similarly, they will also be able to discern voters that are sensitive to material benefits from opposition voters that would not vote for the party anyway. This provides the political parties to opportunity to concentrate on mobilizing through clientelistic accountability only to voters that are elastic. Then contacting through the local organization would enable the party make specific targeting and prevent political parties to waste their resource and time.

Kitschelt & Wilkinson (2007) argue that political parties mostly rely on group monitoring so as to facilitate the provision of information. Within this respect, mobilization by people from the same social environment is argued to decrease the cost of identification and persuasion. Kitschelt & Wilkinson suggests that incorporation of the members of different groups dominant into the society will increase the party's capabilities to identify voters and increase compliance. At the local level, contacting and mobilization is expected to be more influential when activists are members of the sub-groups the party intends to mobilize. This study suggests that the characteristics of the activists at the local level are vital in understanding mobilization efforts. These characteristics have two important functions. First, it decreases the cost of acquiring information for the party. Second, it increases the persuasiveness of the promises and messages given to the voters. As a result, both parties and voters tend to be more confident on the party's reputation to keep its promise on a shorter period of time.

Within, this respect, the formation of the voter/party linkage through known activists decrease the length of the contact required to identify different types of voters and form voluntary compliance.

The characteristics of the person who initiates the contact - i.e. party volunteer versus someone in individual's social network also affect the power of the activists to persuade voters (Çarkoğlu, 2010, p.10). Specifically, individuals may be more inclined to be persuaded if they are contacted via someone they know. Mobilization will probably be more influential when the voter is contacted by a person with the same socio-economic status, a known person, a neighbor, a relative or a friend. While direct contacts by the party via a stranger who knocks on the person's door may be less effective, indirect contacts in social and political networks by known individuals sharing the same ethnic identity, close friends or family should be more effective in developing trust. For clientelistic exchange, it increases the reputation of the activist or party in keeping the promises. A considerable number of studies analyzed how social networks affect voters choice, is more effective in persuading people and increasing the reach of the organization (Wilson and Orum, 1979; Snow, Zurcher & Olson 1980, Knoke & Wood, 1981; Ferree & Miller, 1985). In fact, Stokes suggests that when parties not integrated into the social networks try to buy vote via private inducement voters evaluates their efforts with skepticism, decreasing its effect on vote direction (2005, p. 318). Similar observations have also been found in studies analyzing the effect of party canvassing in persuading voters (Huckfeldt and Sprague, 1995; Frendeis et al, 1990; Coleman, 1996; Hill and Leighley, 1993; Beck, at al, 1997).

Furthermore, the strong party organization does not only increase the effectiveness of clientelistic exchange, studies explaining vote choice provide valuable information on how the nature of long-term voter/party linkage and functions of local organizations would affect programmatic mobilization. For them, the role of the party organization in increasing party identification is decisive (Duverger, 1966; Panebianco, 1988; Mair, 1997; Bartolini, 2002). According to Panebianco (1988, p. 208) the party organization played a crucial role in explaining why electoral divisions were frozen for a relatively long period in Europe. Whiteley and Seyd (1994, p. 251) suggest that, party identification is dependent on the role of local party organizations and activist. Then, political parties will have a tendency to mobilize swing voters clientelistically through

the clientelistic network with persuasive strategies, but the party's ability to do so is influenced by the level and intensity of the interaction.

2.2.4- Breath and Coordination of the Organization and Effective Mobilization

The second contribution of a strong party organization is related to the functioning of its internal organizational structure in terms of number of activists and the mechanisms of interaction between them. The number of activists and mechanism of information flow among them increase the number of identified voters. Within this respect, the higher will be the number of the activists, the greater will be the channels of information between them, and the higher will be the scope of the consolidated clientelistic linkage. High number of activists functioning in the system certainly increases the scope of the mobilization through repeated interaction but coordination between these activists is more important in increasing its efficiency. Given the fact that party organizations function at different levels of geographical organization, cooperation for information flow becomes a necessity to assure the permanency of the formed linkages and distribution of the resources at different levels. In its absence, continuity of the linkage will be very sensitive to activists' changes or especially under circumstances where resources are extracted at the higher levels of the organizational structure provision of the promised benefit will certainly be more difficult.

Kaufman suggests that clientelistic systems are based on the ability of the leaders to control the resources and their capacity to use these resources on face-to-face exchanges with their clients. According to Kitschelt (2000) modern clientelism is different in performing this function than the traditional clientelism based on face to face relations between patrons and clients. The main difference between the two is the large-scale character of the latter one. In this new form of clientelism, regulation of the material resources is a very complex one where on one hand, the level which the patrons access to resources and distribute them are different and on the other the number of clients are too many for the patron to effectuate directly face to face contact with them. Large-scale clientelism represents a network, which is characterized by a personal relationship between the patron and the brokers on one hand and the brokers

and the clients on the other. The broker has no resources but get resources from the patron that he/she distributes to the clients. The relationship in a party organization can cover different levels resulting in a hierarchical network system based on geographical units (Jansen, 2006; Muno, 2010, Kitschelt and Wilkinson, 2007). Kaufman indicates two types of large-scale clientelistic relations: clientelistic clusters and clientelistic pyramid. While he defines the first as structures where many clients attach themselves to one leader, the second are formed when the leaders of various patron/client clusters establish clients themselves with still higher-level status. It is this type of organization that makes possible clientelism to be carried on large scale (1974, p. 291).

One problem of large-scale clientelism is to assure the circulation of information and goods among different level. To solve this problem political parties need mechanisms where they can effectively distribute these resources and circulate information at different levels. Kitschelt (2000, p. 849) argues that clientelistic parties have mostly solved the complexity of material resources flow by heavily investing on administrative infrastructures of multi-level political machines that functions from the national unit to the most local geographical unit of the organizational structure through intense network of interaction.

On the other hand, the complexity of the clientelistic exchange creates a second problem for the political parties: to prevent inefficiency in identifying voters and to assure the continuity of the linkage at the lowest level of the organizational structure. Although existing studies mostly relies on the direct relationship between the broker and the client in understanding the efficiency of the clientelistic linkage, the presence of a mechanism that assures intra or inter-level information flow on the types and compliance of the voters is also important in understanding efficiency by decreasing the cost in maintaining and enlarging the network. Recall that the stability of the linkage is based on the repeated nature of the interaction. Thus, continuity of the interaction is an important aspect. The stability of a network created through the interaction with a voter through only one individual activist is very sensitive to the circulation of activist within the party. By creating spaces where activists and voters interact regularly, the personal relationship between an individual activist and a voter transforms into a relationship between the party and the voter. Furthermore, functioning through large number of activists increases the probability of different activists to contact the same voter. Such a situation will decrease efficiency since each activist will independently try to identify

the voter. The presence of a space where activists share the information they acquire will decrease the possibility of such inefficiency.

Let me identify the problem with a concrete example. Suppose that a voter support a party through a stable relationship he/she has developed with one activist and know no one else. He/she will probably stop supporting the party if the relationship disappears because of either the removal of the activist from his/her position or his/her promotion to another position. Now suppose that another activist also contacts or knows this same voter. After identifying him/her as swing, she also try to assures her support by providing her benefit. In either of the cases, the efficiency of the mobilization will decrease.

A strong party organization with high number of activists and intense coordination mechanisms will increase the efficiency of the mobilization by assuring the information flow on both demands and types of voters and transforming the personal attachment of the voters with the activist into a more general attachment to the party.

2.7-   Ethnic Mobilization and Diverging Support for Political Parties

The study argues that members of an ethnic group are rational actors that decide on which party to vote depending on evaluating political parties' performance through either programmatic or clientelistic linkages. Through which linkage he/she will evaluate the party's performance is related to whether he/she is incorporated into the clientelistic network of the party. Recall that the breath of the network is a function of the strength of the party organization. Nevertheless, strong party organization may not be a sufficient condition to incorporate voters of a distinct ethnic group through clientelistics network. The study suggests that dynamics will induce political parties to mobilize voters from an ethnic group through co-ethnics that members of the social network: high ethnic consciousness, weak inter-community relations and potential for violence.

2.3.1- Ethnic Consciousness and Support for Political Parties

Studies on the rise of ethnic consciousness have analyzed the issue from two different perceptive. The first attempts to explain the rise of ethnic demands in a certain geographical unit mostly focused on the cultural dimension and interpret the rise of ethnic consciousness as the result of the failure of modernization and the state building process (Deutsch 1954; Gellner 1964; Lipset and Rokkan 1967, Horowitz). According to the first perception, the formation of ethnic parties is related to persistence of the center-periphery cleavage even after the nation building process due to inability of the center to penetrate in regions that have distinct ethnic and cultural characteristics. Due to the heavy concentration of the counter-culture in a region, organized resistance develops to the penetrating attempts of the center. The failure of state penetration and integration process results in the persistence of a distinct ethnic consciousness in the specific region having different values, cultures and opposing to the dominant value system constructed by the nation state.

Yet, other approaches, which our study is built upon, perceive the rise of ethnic consciousness in function of the rising competition between different ethnic groups on the distribution of material resources. They evaluate ethnic identity as a constructed concept where people choose to identify on ethnic grounds as an alternative to other possible identities (Hechter, 1978, Nielson, 1985, p. 135; Schildkraut, 2005). According to these approaches, the persistence of the center-periphery cleavage does not result from the failure but from the success of the modernization process itself. It is the competition on the distribution of resources between citizens during the modernization process that politicize ethnic identities. In fact, there is a large literature examining how competition over the resources between different ethnic groups increases ethnic consciousness and affect conflict in different states around the world (Michael Hechter, 1978; Liefer, 1981, Nielson; 1985, Michael Hechter & Margaret Levi, 1994, Olzak 1983, Yavuz, 1998; Cornell 2001 ; Kirişçi & Winrow, 2008, Cohen, 1974, Hannan, 1979, Despres, 1975, Fearon, 1999; Gallego, 2012, Otite, 1975, Skinner, 1975, Despres, 1975).

Within this respect, citizens' decision to organize on ethnic lines should be understood within the attempt of members of an ethnic group to solve the collective

action dilemma to have better access to the material resources inherited not only in clientelistic exchanges but also programmatic ones (Olson, 1965). As a specific type of resource distribution, clientelistic linkage also motivates voters to increase their power of punishing a political party if it reneges from the deal.

The study suggests that the relationship of ethnic consciousness and the increase in electoral support for ethnic parties has a complex nature and should not be evaluated as a direct function of the rise in ethnic consciousness. Saliency of ethnic identity and support for ethnic parties are two distinct processes. Although, homogeneity in terms of cultural traits, high social network, geographical concentration, labor segregation is highlighted to increase competition for the scarce resources on ethnic grounds, the main factor affecting a voter's decision to switch its votes to an ethnic party should not be evaluated as an automatic process. Decision on which party to vote may be an easy decision for partisan supporters, for swing voters the nature of the decision making process may be quite complex.

Recall that any given swing voter is faced with two kinds of accountability. First, he/she can evaluate the performance of a multi-ethnic party on programmatic ground through the policies it formulates and implements. Studies explaining the rise of ethnic parties mentions the inability of multi-ethnic political parties to meet the demands of ethnic group as the major cause for the rise of ethnic parties (Horowitz, 2000; Chandra, 2004, 2010; Michael Hechter, 1978; Hetcher and levy 1985: 141; Michael Hechter & Margaret Levi, 1994, De Winter 1998: 216). Within this respect, the voter will decide which party to vote based on his position on the salient dimensions and perceived positions of competing parties. Under this evaluation, the saliency of each dimension and the changing positions of political parties on these dimensions will be decisive in explaining vote changes across elections. On the other hand, the voter may evaluate the performance of the party through clientelistic accountability.

The study suggests that the decision to evaluate a political party by either of these linkages is based on the voter's perceived distance to the clientelistic network. If the voter is incorporated into the clientelistic network of a multi-ethnic party, his/her probability to switch his/her vote for an ethnic party will decrease even if his/her ethnic consciousness is high. High ethnic consciousness will more rapidly translate into ethnic support when the voter does perceive his/her distance to be far from the network.

2.3.2- Group Characteristics and Ethnic Mobilization:

Recall that the use of a clientelistic exchange by a political party is based on two conditions. It necessitates the ability to identify different types of voters and monitor voters compliance. From the point of view of a multi-ethnic political party that has the objective to mobilize voters, the presence of a mechanism through which it can identify these voters is an important condition affecting its responsiveness on the diverse demands of the ethnic group in concern and control their compliance. At the local level, the effectiveness of a mobilization strategy to identify different types of voters among the members of the group and get informed on their basic needs is based on the formation of communication channels through which information is extracted. Recall that party organizations were more successful to reach and persuade voters when they infiltrated into the existing social networks in the society.

Group monitoring may take different forms. The form it will take mostly depends on the characteristics of the existing groups in the society. Ethnic identification among various possible identities is especially expected to be used by political parties in heterogeneous societies where ethnic consciousness is high (Bates, 1983; Fearon & Laidin, 1996; Fearon, 1999; Kitschelt & Wilkinson, 2007; Chandra, 2004). Within this respect, political parties are expected to incorporate co-ethnics within the clientelistic network to decrease the cost of indentifying different types of voters and assure their compliance.

Why political parties, decide to use ethnic markers in order to monitor groups? Ethnic groups constitute one of these social networks especially when ethno-cultural social separation in terms of area of residence, physical appearance, social networks or labor market segmentation facilitates organization on ethnic grounds (Hetcher, 1975; Bates, 1983; Kitschelt & Wilkinson, 2005,). Then, the greater is the group's homogeneity in terms of cultural traits, the denser is its social networks, the higher they are geographically concentrated and the greater is the market segmentation; the higher is the probability of both political parties and voters to politicize on ethnic grounds. Mobilization of members of an ethnic group through activists outside the group will be less effective under these circumstances since cost of identifying voters and assure repeated actions to increasing voluntary compliance will be low.

One rational of this suggestion is that mobilization through ethnic markers decreases information costs for both voters and political parties especially where co-ethnics organize in ethnic ground through dense social networks (Kitchelt and Wilkinson, 2007). Authors such as Hetcher (1975, 1978), Leifer (1981), Bates (1983), Levi and Hetcher (1985) suggest that the formation of collective organizations in order to solve the collective action dilemma necessitates certain conditions through which voters can organize: a common goal, certain degree of relations etc. According to Hetcher (1978), the rise of ethnic consciousness in competition for resources should be understood in relation the presence of a distinct identity and dense social networks that increase interaction. A similar suggestion is given by Bates (1983) who highlights the importance of geographical concentration and similar linguistic and cultural traits in organizing on ethnic grounds. According to authors such as Ragin (1979), Hanan (1979), Despress (1967), Nielson (1978), Olzak (1982) ethnic resurgence occurs when cultural division of labor breakdowns, inequalities between different ethnic groups diminishes. Under such circumstances, organization on ethnic grounds is adopted so as to more effectively compete with members from different ethnicities for the same resource.

For political parties social networks provide readily usable channels through which voters can be identified, requests transmitted and benefits distributed (Chandra, 2004, p. 71). Members of the same ethnic group tend to interact more frequently with one another than with outsiders and get more easily informed on each other's conduct. This, in return, decreases the cost of building trust and reputation between political parties and voters necessary for a more effective clientelistic linkage. According to Fearon and Laitin (1996) *ethnic groups are marked by highly developed systems of social networks that allows cheap and rapid transmission of information about individuals and their past histories* (p. 718). According to Kitschelt (2000,p. 865) ethno-cultural social separation in terms of area of residence, physical appearance, social networks or labor market segmentation facilitates the contracting, monitoring and enforcing of clientelistics exchange between the co-ethnic brokers and the voters. On the other hand, Fearon (1996) suggests that, the decision of a political party to distribute resources on ethnic ground is the result of its desire to limit the size of the winning coalition. Since ethnic identity is not easily chosen and changed, political parties will limit the probability of free riders to benefit from the reward.

58

Chandra (2004) suggests that the presence of social networks is not a necessity for voters to organize and political parties to mobilize on ethnic grounds. In an environment of limited information ethnic identity, which is easily detectable, serve as a costless information mechanism through which people easily identify each other. Given the fact that voters evaluate parties' promises through past records of transaction, ethnic classification would be an effective strategy for distinguishing between multiple individual transactions in an environment of information constraint (p. 54-58). As costless information, easily identifiable by appearance, ethnic markers become the main criteria through which people evaluate the beneficiaries of past transactions. According to the author, it is this costless information, at first place, that orient people to form social networks on ethnic grounds. Thus, the main cause in the rise of ethnic identification is the costless information it provides for members of an ethnic group in classifying people. Then, performing clientelistic exchange through ethnic identity provides a ground for evaluating the sincerity of the promises of the political parties on the distribution of benefits.

Given the fact that voters are biased toward the distribution of benefits on ethnic categorization, political parties will favor co-ethnics for the distribution of resources as way of signaling and persuading the voters that their interest will be met by the party (p. 56,67). The presence of a co-ethnic within a party's rank will persuade voters on the sincerity of the messages of the party. Then, when co-ethnics are not represented into the party, even if the party promises benefits to the members, these promises will simply not be credible for out-groups (Fearon, 1999). Scholars like Shaw et al (2000) and Michelson (2003) suggest that mobilization by co-ethnics is also more effective for programmatic mobilization since voters are more easily persuaded on the sincerity of the political parties messages when informed co-ethnics.

2.3.3- Inter-group Relations, Potential for Violence and Ethnic Mobilization

This study suggests that the nature of inter-group relations is also important in understanding the effectiveness of mobilization through co-ethnics (Fearon & Laitin, 1996). Especially, in political context where inter-group relations are low or

nonexistent successful mobilization can be attained through the incorporation of co-ethnic within the party's ranks. Furthermore, when ethnic movements have potential for violence, infiltrating into the daily networks through co-ethnics may be the only available tool for political parties to mobilize ethnic voters in a shorter run. This section will be a detailed evaluation of these arguments in the light of the existing studies on the issue.

Scholars (Chandra, 2004; Kitschelt &Wilkinson, 2007) argue that incorporation of the co-ethnic within the party is especially important in mobilizing ethnic groups in macro level political settings where party organizations are weak. On the other hand, incorporation of ethnics may not be a necessity in micro level political settings since they are information rich where people develop face-to-face relations, know each other personally and engage in repeated transactions (Chandra, 2004, p: 67-68).

Yet, it is suggested in this study that the way the inter-group relations are shaped, in-group and out-group boundaries are set, greatly affects the ability of the members of a party to reach voters from different ethnic origins even in micro level political settings. Under conditions where inter-group relations are nonexistent or conflictual, identification and monitoring may not be possible through activists from different ethnic groups, making it difficult to apply specific targeting and assure voluntary compliance at the individual level even in the presence of a strong party organization. According to Fearon & Laitin (1996) mobilization through co-ethnics will be more effective even under the absence of social networks. Knowledge of cultural habits and signs of their own ethnic groups will facilitate the co-ethnic activists to identity the disposition of his/her co-ethnic than an activist outside the group.

Furthermore, when the group boundaries are sharply defined, politicians would compete for supporters only from their groups rather than across groups (Kitschelt, 2000), leaving members of the other ethnic group outside of the network. This dissertation argues that a political party may decide to mobilize these ethnic groups via its existing activists, but such a strategy would necessitate great efforts in term resources and time. Building trust through repeated actions would take time when relations are irregular and infrequent. Furthermore, according to Fearon & Laitin (1996) such a tendency is expected to apply when some of the members of a different ethnic group comprise of opportunistic voters that have the potential to renege from the deal. Under such circumstances, party members from the other ethnic group will have a

tendency to evaluate all the voters of the other ethnic group as opportunistic and would be reluctant to mobilize them. The result would be the exclusion of the members of the ethnic group from the benefits regardless of their type.

Recall that for Chandra mobilization through co-ethnics may be effective even when dense social network are nonexistent since political parties would signal the voters that they will be rewarded through publicly declaring the presence of co-ethnics functioning in the party. Under such circumstance, the party activists and voters from the same ethnic-group do not have to personally know each other. Yet, the study suggests that when there is potential for violence in the ethnic group, the public mobilization by unknown members may become harder. The potential for violence may create fear among activists and voters increasing their reluctance to expose themselves publicly. Under these circumstances, identification may only be conducted in more private settings where activists and voters know each other through regular interaction. Yet, in the nonexistence of inter-group relations, the mobilization of voters from one ethnic group through activists from another ethnic group will be ineffective. Under such circumstances, mobilization through co-ethnics that are members of the ethnic social networks and known by the group may become the only strategy for the party to incorporate the members of an ethnic group into the network since these social networks provide the necessary private setting to identify the type of the voter.

Based on these suggestions, this study argues that if a political party decides to mobilize swing members of an ethnic group, mobilization would be more effective in the short run when conducted by co-ethnics especially under circumstances where ethnic consciousness is high and inter-group relations are absent. When the party mobilizes voters by infiltrating in their daily activities through the social networks, its effectiveness is expected to be even higher. Furthermore, when ethnic consciousness is accompanied by potential for violence, mobilization through known activists who are members of the social network may become the only option for the party. Under such circumstances, incorporation of known co-ethnic from the ethnic social network will affect the party's ability to easily identify swing voters in the group and decrease reaction in the long run. This in return is expected to stabilize the support for the party in the long run even under conditions where the party programmatically positions towards the opposing end of the salient dimension. As a result, number of activists and amount of coordination between them being equal, the effectiveness of mobilization

through clientelistic network is expected to be influenced by two factors: time of incorporation of co-ethnics and intensity of the contact conducted by the party organization.

2.4- Explaining Divergence in the Strength of Party Organization and Incorporation of Co-ethnics

The previous section has discussed how on one hand the level and intensity of contact conducted by the partisan network, on the other the number of activists and cooperation mechanisms between them increase the effectiveness of mobilization of swing voters on clientelistic accountability. It has been illustrated that the effectiveness of the mobilization of members of an ethnic group through clientelistic exchange is based on the presence of co-ethnics within the party's ranks.

Nevertheless, the mobilization of swing voters through such kind of a clientelistic linkage necessitates a great motivation for both existing and new activists, members of different ethnic groups included, to work actively for the party. Recall that mobilization of swing voters in clientelistic exchange is carried through material inducement. Such a strategy should also successfully function for the mobilization of activists, albeit at a higher cost. Then, the presence of a deeply penetrated party organization with successfully incorporated co-ethnics should be a function of the party's desire and ability to motivate the activists through material inducement at each level of the organizational pyramid.

Some studies argue that a party's decision to strengthen its organization and incorporate new activists is a function of the electoral competition it faces. Others argue that the amount of resources available to a party may prevent parties to fulfill such a function even it desires to do so. Building upon Chandra's work, the study relates the ability of the party to motivate its activists to the presence of a competitive rule of intra-party advancement. The scarce nature of the benefits, either in terms of material incentive such as jobs, social assistance or immaterial incentives designed to distribute the scarce resources such as party posts, creates a problem of exclusion for any political parties. The allocation of new incentives to new entering activists means the displacement of existing activists. Then existing activists will resist new entry. Chandra

suggests that other things being equal a competitive rule of intra-advancement in the party solve this problem .Within this respect, this dissertation argues that the formation of such a mechanism is difficult in centralized party organizations due to the path dependent nature inherent in organization that make change of the organizational order difficult once the party is established. Yet, such a change may be realized through a critical juncture accompanied by an organizational crisis that would reset the organizational order of the party. On the other hand, the ability of the party to set the rule of competitive intra-party advancement is a function of the experience of the new leaders. The next section will elaborate each of these arguments in greater detail.

2.4.1- Material Incentive and Mobilization of the Activists

Given the fact that political participation is costly, in such a system, how brokers (activist) in the party organization are motivated becomes an important subject of concern. Literature on political participation cites diverse motivational purposes in voters' decision to actively participate in politics among which ideological commitment and material interest are important ones (Olson, 1965; Conway & Feigert, 1968; Kandermand & Oegema, 1987; Panebianco, 1988; Seyd & Witheley, 1992; Whiteley, 1995). Within this respect, a political party may decide either of the strategies to motivate activists in each level. Nevertheless, in a political system where party identification and ideological orientation is low mobilizing through ideology may not be a very effective strategy. The study suggests that the motivation of members of any ethnic group with low ideological orientations to politically participate not expected to be different from any other members.

Although former studies on the clientelistic linkage have mainly focused its use for electoral purposes, they also provide a ground to solve the issue. By classifying party activists between believers and careerists, Panebianco (1988) highlight the important of incentives in motivating participation. According to him, careerists *are active members primarily interested in selective incentives" (p. 27)*. Thus, their motivation is based on a political party's ability to distribute incentives in the form of either material or status. In fact, recent studies analyzing the attempts of political parties

to strengthen their organizations have borrowed from the clientelistic linkage to solve the problem. These studies have highlighted the growing effectiveness of patronage to motivate activists at different levels of the party organization to actively work for the party in the light of decreasing party identification and ideological attachments (Müller, 1989; Bolleyer, 2006, 2009, Scherlis, 2009; Kopecky, Spirova and Scherlis, 2011), Spirova, Van Biezen (2003). According to Scherlis (2011, p. 6), in an environment where party identification, ideology or values are down, the reliance of political parties on patronage distribution for dealing with the issue of membership and activism is an effective strategy. Similarly, Müller (1989) states that when there is no ideological motivation or traditional sense of belonging patronage becomes a useful resource to deal with the issue of membership. Then, motivating both existing and new entering activists at the local level where the party directly connects the voter through patronage or other kind of resources may be an effective strategy to enlarge the clientelistic network. Besides enabling the whole structure to work, in a highly competitive environment the incorporation of activist through patronage may also provide political parties ideological autonomy and flexibility, which they probably would not have with ideologically motivated individuals (Bolleyer, 2006; 2009).

2.4.2- Nature of the Competition and Motivation of the Activists

One possible explanation in the difference in the incorporation of new activists may be related to the electoral competition the party faces. This suggestion derives from the studies that try to explain different strategies of incumbents in mobilizing core or swing supporters. Although these studies directly deals with the mobilization of voters, given the fact that strong party organization and incorporation of co-ethnics is a function of increasing the party's support, they provide an important ground in understanding the logic of political parties recruitment strategy. These studies suggest that a political party's strategy to mobilize swing groups is a function of the electoral competition it faces. Political parties with the objective to increase their electoral support will tend to target groups outside their traditional electoral base. Diaz-Cayero (2008), suggests that the extent of electoral competition is important in understanding

the diversification of incumbents' strategy. The political parties tend to motivate first, their supporters but when these supporters are not large enough to win an election, parties will also target swing supporters. Concerning the strategy of incumbents related to core or swing supporter the author concludes that their strategy depends on the status of their incumbency. When they have a long lasting hegemony, the incumbent invests more on core supporters, where as when incumbents try to increase their electoral strength they invests more on swing voters. Within this respect, an incumbent that has a safe majority in the elections will target geographical units with core supporters in order to consolidate it votes while an incumbent that has the objective to increase its votes or will diversify its strategy concentrating on geographical units with swing voters. A similar suggestion is given by Federico Estéves, Beatriz Magaloni and Alberto Diaz-Cayeros (2001). According to them, a risk-adverse incumbent will prefer to clientelistically motivate its traditional electoral base. However, unless incumbents are completely safe and there exists an electoral competition, they will not only rely on their core supporters but also swing ones in order to increase their vote shares. As margins of victory and the size of core voters' decrease and as a result competition increases; politicians rely more on swing supporters.

Alberto Diaz-Cayeros and Beatriz Magaloni (2003) argue that the strategy of an incumbent will diverge according to its probability to lose or win the elections. Recall that strong party organization and incorporation of new activists is a suitable strategy to increase the party support through clientelistic linkage. Then, difference in strength of party organization and incorporation of members of an ethnic group is related to the party decision to increase its network. Within this respect, this study suggests that a party will only increase its organization and incorporate new activists if the electoral competition necessitates doing so. Then difference in strength of party organization and incorporation of new activists within different party branches may be the result of the diverging electoral competition the branches faces in each geographical unit.

2.4.3- Distribution of Resources and the Motivation of the Activists

Suppose that both geographical units have a similar nature of electoral competition. Then, the ability of the party to motivate activists should be effective in explaining divergence. Given the fact that participation is costly, a materialistically motivated activist will actively participate if the rewards he/she receives exceed the costs. If he/she does not receive any reward than he/she will probably not actively work. (Seyd and Whiteley, 1992; Gallager et al, 2002). Nevertheless, political parties face a dilemma where they need to control large amount of resources to put together a complex organizational structure on one hand and the scarcity resources at the party disposal on the other. Since parties cannot distribute resources to all of their activists, strengthening of the organization via selective inducement creates a problem of exclusion which destabilizes its effectiveness (Bolleyer, 2006). Studies indicate two sources of the problem of scarcity of resources and exclusion. Some focus on the external constraints on the party ability to distribute the resources, while other emphasis the internal constraints put by the party as major factors negatively affecting the use of them for organizational purposes (Bolleyer, 2006; Kopecky, Spirova, Scherlis, 2011).

According to the first set of studies, in such a system, the resource an activist/voter receives from his/her patron (or higher level broker) is first based on the amount resources available to his patron. If this amount is scarce, existing and new entering lower level brokers may not benefit from the valuable resources. The exclusion of activists from rewards may increase the frustration of the present activists or the involuntary of new activists to enter to the party. Thus, the problem of exclusion can be solved by increasing the resources distributed. According to Calvo & Murillo, 2004, the efficacy of political patronage is based on the accessibility of political parties on public jobs at different level of the government. Nevertheless, for authors such as Müller (1989), Kristinsson (2012), Shefter (1994) and Chandra (2004) political parties face major problems in controlling these resources. The declining amount of goods available to the parties, pressure of market forces, change in incumbency and media control over distribution of resources has been stated as main factors affecting the supply side of distributing the resources.

Although such an argument seems compelling, literature states a considerable number of means political parties uses to overcome the limited amount of resources. There are a growing number of studies analyzing how political parties use patronage in order to guaranty their access to state resources. According to these studies political parties appoints their supporters in key positions where resources are distributed, in order to provide benefits to strengthen their party organizations (Kopecky and Sherlis, 2008; Sherlis, 2009; Kopecky and Mair, 2011). In fact, Kopecky and Sherlis (2008, p. 363) indicates that scholars such as Pappas (2006), Jalali and Lisi (2006) have found the use of patronage for such a purpose in Greece and Portugal. Similar results have also been found by Kopecky & Spirova (2011) and Kopecky, Spirova & Scherlis (2011) in countries such as Bulgaria, Hungary, Czech Republic, Ghana and South Africa, albeit changing in degree.

Bolleyer (2006) indicates another strategy of political parties to overcome the problem of the scarcity of resources. According to her by " *transforming non-materially valued positions into a stepping stone to achieve material compensation*" (p. 19) political parties increase the effectiveness of the resources at their disposal. A similar suggestion is made by Panebianco when he asserts that one function of the internal hierarchy is to regulate the distribution process by tying selective incentives to the posts in the party hierarchy (p. 27). With such a strategy, members at either level of the organizational structure may actively work so as to be able to attain the valued resources through promotion. By the use of such a strategy, political parties may be able to motivate quite large number of activists for only one post. This is a fairly more effective strategy than directly distributing the post to only one activist. Furthermore, state resources are not the only available resource for political parties. The distribution of other private sector jobs or valued immaterial goods other than position may well transform into valuable resources where parties can motivate their activists.

The second set of studies relates the limited nature of the resources to the decision of the party leaders to distribute fewer resources. Some studies suggest that decreasing return of clientelistic distribution is a major problem political parties have to cope with. Irrespective of the access problems, reliance on distribution of resources for organizational purposes triggers an increasing demand because when resources are distributed extensively, their effectiveness on the motivation of the activists decrease since they become devaluated (Bolleyer, 2006; Panebianco, 1988). A similar suggestion

is also given by Panebianco for the amount of posts distributed. According to him too many post to be distributed would decrease the effectiveness of promotion as a way to motivate the activists. Thus, even if political parties ties the attainment to certain material goods to certain positions, the problem of exclusion still persist since political parties are forced to find equilibrium between the amount of posts/resources distributed and their effectiveness in motivating the activists. Another internal constraint is highlighted by Kemahlıoğlu (2005) who argues that intra-competition between higher and lower level activists may create incentives for the latter one to distribute less resources for organizational purposes. According to her when the posts of the higher degree activists are not safe, lower level activists will distribute fewer resources to signal the former that he is not a threat. Under these circumstances, the mechanisms through which the resources or the posts to attain these resources are distributed becomes a major issue of concern. This issue is related to internal functioning of the party organization that would be discussed in the next section.

2.4.4- Internal Structure of the Organization and Motivation of the Activists

How the posts/resources are distributed becomes vital in understanding the motivation of the activists. Even under large amount of resources, the problem of distribution is still present. The amount of resources available to a higher-level activist and his/her decision on how to use these resources are two distinct processes. Although an activist may have large resources at his/her disposal, he/she still have different options on how to distribute these resources. First, he/she may decide not to distribute them to new comers, or, second, favor some activists vis-à-vis others at the lower level. Note that the same problem is still inherent when access to certain resources is tied to specific positions. Instead of deciding how to distribute the resources, the higher-level activist will decide on how to distribute these posts.

Panebianco (1988) asserts that a certain procedure must be set for selecting leaders for the various organizational levels so as to regulate the distribution of incentives. According to Bolleyer (2006), the problem can be solved by the capacity of the party to find an efficient mode of distribution, which can assure organizational

stability and enlargement. This study adopts a similar approach. Within this respect, it suggests that the motivation of existing and new activists is based on the formation of a mechanism that assures a high probability to attain these resources/posts for both of them. It is the internal structure of the party organization that would affect the ability to form such a mechanism. Thus, the solution of the problem is tied on the procedure through which posts are distributed into the party and the division of power between different hierarchical units. This in return is based on how political parties institutionalize. Differentiating between organizational construction through territorial diffusion and penetration, Panebianco (1988) emphasizes the different power structures of these types of organizations. In political parties organized through diffusion the sub-units are fairly independent from the center, thus power is diffused between different hierarchical units. The formation of leadership cadres is decentralized and semi-autonomous from the center. On the other hand, political parties organized through penetration have powerful centers at the formation stage that control stimulate and directs the selection of the leadership. Within this respect, the power is concentrated in the center. By analyzing the ability of the Peronist Party in Argentina to adopt its organization in the economic crisis, Levitsky (2003) argues that weakly structured party organizations are better equipped to adapt and survive crisis than highly institutionalized party organizations.

Based on this classification, the model developed by Chandra on the incorporation of new elites in patronage democracies provides a suitable solution to the problem. Although she mainly focus on the incorporation of new elites, her model also is suitable to explain how the party may motivate both existing and new activists to work actively. According to her (2004; 2010) the institutional design of the party is decisive in explaining its ability to create such a mechanism. Her argument is based on the basic assumption that both existing and new activists have an incentive to acquire post in the party in the long run and are rationally instrumental. Within this respect, the decision of an activist to join a party is based on its probability of obtaining office. In return, the probability for an activist in obtaining office is the product of two independent probabilities: first, the probability of a party to win elections and his/her probability to obtain a position in the party. In a predominant party system, since the incumbent will have steady access to state resources the second probability is more decisive. For instance, in his analysis of Mexico, Greene (2007) shows how dominant parties turn

69

public resources into patronage goods to increase the cost for activists to join an opposition party. By using their incumbency advantage, they attract and retain all careerist politicians who want to win office. Thus, in predominant party systems, probability of obtaining office and resources tied to these offices, for new activists, it is the function of their expectations on how high they can advance in the party. For existing activists already in a position it means the high probability of return once she/he is displaced. Given the fact that these posts are limited, such a situation seems impossible, since existing activists would resist the entry of new ones that would threaten their positions. According to the model, the ability for any party to incorporate new elites and motivating existing ones is based on the creation of a mechanism that would tie the interest of existing elites on the incorporation of new elites. For Chandra competitive party organizations, which execute open membership policies and intraparty elections for all organizational posts, would assures such kind of a mechanism. Intraparty elections would motivate higher-level activists that want to assure their posts or promote to higher ones to increase the size of their coalition. On the other hand, open membership policies would enable present activists to increase their coalition through the incorporation of new activists in the party. Note that a party should assure both of them at the same time. A system of competitive intraparty advancement without open membership policies would result in inter-elite circulation, while the opposite would not allow advancement for the new elites.

Although not highlighted by Chandra, the system does not only solve the problem of incorporation but incentive for different level of activists to actively work for the party and cooperate with each other. An activist having such a purpose will have a strong incentive to work harder to increase his/her support base and share information, resource with lower level activists. The same logic will prevail within all levels of the organizational structure until the activists at the lowest level of the organizational structure where the party directly contacts the voter will work harder to identify potential supporters and distribute the rewards at his/her disposal to core or swing voters to increase his/her own reach. This will result in an increasing network, which in return, will increase the electoral support for the party. It is important to note that, competitive party organizations provide a self-regulating mechanism in solving the problem of motivation where no one is frustrated from the procedure.

2.4.5- **Centralized Party Organization and Motivation of the Activists**

Based on the established fact that regulations on the formal rules of intra-party advancement cannot easily be changed (Pierson, 2000, p. 259), the question suggests itself whether a centralized party organization can establish a competitive intraparty advancement mechanism if it is exogenously forced to do so? The literature suggests that intraparty advancement in centralized political parties is mostly in the hands of the top leaders, in which loyalty is the main criterion of distributing the posts (Özbudun, 1979; Sayarı, 1977; Chandra, 2004). Then, in such a system personal relations with the leaders is more decisive in attaining a post than the presence of a large coalition. As a result, activists will not be concerned in increasing their coalitions even if the party has an open membership policy since their probability to attain a post is not tied to elections. The focus of the activists would be to show their loyalty to the leaders rather than efficiently work to increase their coalition. Besides, in such a system higher level activists will resist the powering of both existing and new lower level activists since they would be evaluated as threat to their existing position.

Therefore, the decision of top leaders to set such kind of a mechanism is the decisive factor in the ability of a party to form a competitive intra-party advancement rule under a centralized party organization. Can leaders in a centralized party organization set such a mechanism when they are exogenously forced to do so? Adopting a rational institutionalist approach, Chandra suggests that only when they are secure from losing their positions, rationalist leaders would decide that interest of the party requires the incorporation of new activists and set competitive criteria for attaining rewards. According to her, the decision of leaders to adopt such a strategy is influenced by exogenous factors shaping the circumstances. Centralized party organizations can institutionally have certain functioning rules to overcome the problems of motivation. Yet, in all of these mechanisms, the decision to who the post will be distributed is again tied to the decision of the top leaders. Within this respect, leaders may impose a number of mechanisms to give access to these posts to strengthen the organization and incorporate new activists. To ensure circulation, they can create a rotation system in the distribution of the posts; ensure lower-level representativeness in higher-level decision-making organs etc. For incorporating new elites, they can

forcefully appoint members of the new group into the party's rank. In fact, this coincides to what Panebianco calls amalgamation when he explains change in the dominant party system without the restructuring of the organizational order (p. 247). Note that such a change may assure the incorporation of new elites in the party but would not motivate the activists to work actively. For such a change to happen the rules of intraparty advancement should be changed.

Thus, a more effective strategy may be the settlement of a competitive rule of advancement where increase in electoral support, membership, time of devotion to the party work may be taken as reference. Such a strategy seems a logical solution to the problem. At this point, the study deviates from Chandra's rational institutionalist argument and adopts a more historical institutionalist approach which focuses not only on exogenous factors in shaping the leaders decisions but also indigenous ones that derives from the nature of the organizational order of the party (Colier and Colier, 1991; Pierson, 1993, Thelen, 1999; Hall and Taylor, 1996; Katznelson & Berry, 2005).

Historical institutionalist approaches suggest that leaders' decisions are also shaped by the rules of the institutions in which these leaders function, since the actors internalize these rules as appropriate ways of behavior. Although, exogenous factors mainly affect the organizational design during the initial phase of formation of institutions (Thelen, 1999, p. 387); once they are designed institutions independently affect to the ability of the party to adapt its self when the conditions that shapes them at first place change. This suggestion derives from the path dependent nature inherent in all institutions. The ability of political structures to adapt themselves in changing social environments they function is deeply dependent to the characteristics of the same structure. According to Thelen (1999), "*Politics involve a political of... choice, but once a path is taken, then it can become 'locked in', as all the relevant actors adjust their strategies to accommodate the prevailing pattern*" (p. 385). Such dependence is the result of the ability of institutions to shape the actors' perceptions by creating self-reinforcing positive feedbacks (Krasner, 1988, p. 83). According to Pierson (2000), "*understanding of the political world should themselves be seen as susceptible to path dependence*" (p. 260). As a result, it may be difficult to change the structure itself since the perceptions of actors on the political world are also shaped by the previously set rules. From this perspective, the historical legacy of the party may not always enable the leaders to change the rules of advancement once they have been established.

Panebianco (1988) suggests organizations can effectively be analyzed by rational model only during their foundation phase. The author suggests that the size of the organization is dependent on the decision of the leaders that establish the organization. On the other hand, in its foundation phase, the main factors affecting the organizational structure and the composition of the leaders, as he calls "dominant coalition", is a function of the objective of the party, its ideology, support base and the competition it faces. Yet, as institutionalization begins, we note a qualitative leap. As he states:

> *"The organization will certainly undergo modifications and even profound changes in interacting throughout its entire life cycle with the continually changing environment. However, the crucial political choice made by its founding fathers, the first struggle for organizational control, and the ways in which the organization was formed will leave an indelible mark"* (p. xiii).

The effect of the organizational design of the party in shaping future activities has also been confirmed empirically. Hunter (2007) shows how the historical legacies of Worker party in Brazil between 1989 and 2002 prevented the party to adopt its strategy to changing electoral competition. Katzenstein's analysis illustrates how collective held norms define the appropriate conduct, shape actors identities and influence their behavior and interest (Katzenstein, 1996, p. 23). By treating the party's internal structures as intervening variable that mediate their responses; a similar approach is adopted by Levitsky (2003) in his analysis of the ability of the Peronist Party in Argentina to adapt its organizational structure to environmental changes. Then the ability of the political leaders in a centralized party organization to change the promotion mechanism is based on the nature of the previously set mechanism, mostly during its founding phase, which the leaders themselves have also experienced. In a political party where the rule of advancement is loyalty change in the advancement rule would probably be met with resistance from the activists, may even result with splits of the activists deprived of their post from the party.

Based on the works of scholars such as Pierson (1993, 1996) and Thelen (1999), Panebianco (1988), the study suggests that a stable change in the party organization would mostly occur through a critical juncture that would disrupt the rules of the institutions and give the opportunity for the resettlement of new ones. According to Panebianco (p.243), a critical event such a organizational crisis resulting from the joint

force of exogenous with indigenous factors, give opportunity to re-organize the party on the new rules set by the leaders.

In our case, this would be the resettlement of the dominant coalition by change in the posts on the basis of the rules of intra-party advancement. In fact, although not theoretically founded by Chandra, the different representational profile of the Congress Party in the Indian district of Karnataka is tied to such kind of critical juncture where the party experienced a major split, resulting in a change in its leadership and the reformulation of the main coalitions of the party in the district (p. 253). It is important to note that the presence of a critical juncture may not automatically lead to change in the organizational order but would create an opportunity to do so. Two factors seem to be effective in the party's ability to create this change. The experiences of the new leaders would be effective in the successful incorporation of new groups and the implementation of competitive intra-party advancement rules. Change would be more probable when the new leaders come outside the dominant coalition of the party and have the necessary organizational experience to set competitive intra-party advancement mechanisms. Second, the circulation in the posts in one level of the organizational structure through new rules of in-party advancement also is based on the availability of sufficient number of lower level activists to fulfill these posts. Under the absence of a sufficient number of activists, the party will forced to uses existing activists who would probably resists to the changes. Under such condition, the party may not be able to immediately increase its network even if its leaders desire to do so.

CHAPTER 3

IDENTIFYING THE NATURE OF THE COMPETITION IN ELECTORAL TERMS

This study rests on the main assumption that first, AKP and BDP are the main competitors among citizens of Kurdish origin. Second, it suggests that a large amount of citizens of Kurdish origin constitutes a common electoral base for AKP and BDP. Third, it argues that the competition between the two parties is characterized by volatility. Put it differently there is a considerable number of voters of Kurdish origin that switches their votes from one party to another across elections. As illustrated in Chapter 2, existing studies confirms these arguments. Studies analyzing the nature of the competition mainly focus on the programmatic positioning of both parties in understanding the electoral changes. The major aim of this chapter is to test the nature of the electoral competition and its relationship with the programmatic mobilization by analyzing the electoral results for both parties across elections in the light of the policies of AKP on the Kurdish issue and the economic realm. This analysis will be carried in three levels: national, regional and provincial. This would provide the opportunity to track major differences at each level on the nature of the electoral competition. This is why, after briefly evaluating the move towards a dominant party system with AKP and BDP's electoral trajectories, this section will try to illustrate this competition by analyzing the programmatic position of AKP on the issue and the voting patterns in the Kurdish speaking provinces of Turkey in each general election after 2002. Three major points will be highlighted.

First, the difference in the competition AKP faces in the region from the rest of Turkey will be illustrated. Then the study will electorally show the emergence of AKP and BDP as the major rivals among citizens of Kurdish origin. Lastly, different electoral patterns at more local level will be analyzed in order assess whether they support our

expectation on the presence of a volatile electorate. Although the main assumptions of the study are tested in the province of Istanbul, as it will be illustrated in detail, this chapter mainly focuses on the provinces where the citizens of Kurdish origin constitute the majority. With its estimated non-Kurdish population of nearly 87%, Istanbul has been excluded from these analyses to have a better account of the voting behavior of citizens of Kurdish origin.

3.3- Turkish Party System: Towards A Predominant Party System?

Recent studies (Çarkoğlu, 2012a; Sayarı, 2007, Müftüler-Baç & Keyman, 2012) on the electoral outcomes indicate the move to a predominant party system. In fact, the political landscape after 2011 general elections is quite different from 1990s, which was characterized by high level of instability, volatility and great fractionalization[4]. The 2002 general elections made sign of the entering of the Turkish party system into a new decade with the victory of AKP at the ballot box gaining 34.28% of the support of the Turkish electorate.   The particularity of the developments taking place after 2002 general elections in the Turkish electoral scene highlights two important tendencies on AKP's electoral success. First, AKP has been the second party in Turkey's democratic history that could gain the necessary majority to form the government in three consecutive elections. A similar success was gained by in 1950's by the DP (Democratic Party – *Demokrat Parti*) who managed to gain the necessary majority of the votes in 1950, 1954, 1957 general elections to form the government on its own. What is more impressive and what differentiates AKP from DP is the ability of the party not only to gain the necessary votes to form the government on its own but also to increase its electoral support among Turkish voters after each consecutive election. Although DP was successful in gaining the necessary majority of the votes by acquiring 52.7%, 57.6% and 47,9 % of the eligible votes it did not manage to steadily increase them.   Within this respect, AKP can be defined as 'su-generis' case since it is the only

---

[4]   For more information on the historical account of party system indicators consult Çarkoğlu, A. (1998, 2012a); S.Sayarı (2002,2007), Arıkan & Şekercioğlu (2008) .

party that managed to both win the necessary majority of the votes and increased its votes shares from 34.3 %, 46,5 and 49,9% in 2002, 2007 and 2011 general elections.

An important characteristic of this emerging predominant party system concerns the composition of the opposition parties and the fluidity in the electoral preferences among them. Studies highlight (Çarkoğlu, 2007, 2011, 2012; Sayarı, 2007; Şekercioğlu & Arıkan 2007, 2012) the formation of a party system where four blocks of political parties are functioning effectively. Decreasing volatility among these block indicates the stabilization of the competition in the system.

This part will built upon the evaluation of the developments taking place in the Turkish party system. Within this respect, first, a brief electoral account on support gained by political parties across elections will be evaluated in light of the general political context. Second, based on existing literature, the main characteristics of the new emerging predominant party system will be highlighted.

3.1.1- Increasing Electoral Support for AKP

The closure of the political Islamist Party FP (*Fazilet partisi*- Virtue Party) for anti- secular and anti-Republican activities was an important turning point in Turkey's political life since it resulted in the split of the more moderate generation of the members of the National Outlook Movement (*Milli Görüş hareketi*) from FP to form a new political party. Within this respect AKP was established on August 14, 2001 by, as Kalaycıoğlu (2010) calls, 'the Young Turks' of the movement who became the key leaders of the party and shaped the ideology of the party contributing to its electoral success.

Although coming from the *Milli Görüş* Movement, as the party expressed in its official ideological stands, it came evident that, with its more moderate tone, AKP diverged from its precedents concerning its attitude on salient issues of Turkish politics (Özbudun, 2006, Özbudun and Hale, 2010). AKP's decision to adopt a more moderate strategy seems to lie in the experiences of its precedents that have been closed several times, de-legitimized from the system, accused and sentenced for their anti-secular

actions and witnessed decreases in their electoral support[5]. Actually, strategy to be adopted was the main line of conflict between the two cadres and the cause of split of the young leaders who defended a more moderate approach to gain legitimacy and support within the system. Whatever the motivation behind such a strategy, the 2002 general elections has changed the political landscape of politics in Turkey where a newly formed party has managed to gain the necessary votes to form the government on its own after long years of experience of coalition governments.

AKP entered the 2002 general elections as a rightist but moderate, untried political party representing the peripheral forces historically opposing the Republican Center in a political context of instability characterized by an economic crisis, tensions between the partners of the coalition government mainly around the reforms to be carried for EU membership. The third column of table 3.1 and graph 3.1 show the vote shares of each party's in the 2002 general elections. AKP became the first party gaining 34,43%, CHP became the second party gaining 19,47% of the eligible votes. Although, DYP became the third party, by gaining only 9,54%, it could not enter to the parliament (TGNA-Turkish Grand National Assembly) failing to pass the 10% national threshold required to get representation in the parliament. The election results were rather negative for the former partners of the coalition government. The vote shares of DSP, ANAP and MHP respectively decreased from 22,10%, 13,22% and 17,98% in 1999 to 1,22%, 5,11% and 8,35% in 2002 elections. This was especially a punishment for DSP, the grand partner of the coalition government. Only two parties, AKP and CHP could be represented in the parliament with respectively 365 and 177 seats creating a 46,19 % of unrepresented votes in the parliament as a consequence of the 10% threshold. Although this favored AKP, who gained nearly 67% of the seats with 34,43%

---

[5] Established after the 1980 Military coup RP (*Refah Partisi*, Welfare Party) succeeded to gain 21,38% of the national votes in 1995 general elections and has managed to form the *Refahyol* coalition government with DYP. This coalition governed the country from June 1996 until the demission of Erbakan, president of the party and prime minister of the government in June 1997, as the result of serious pressures to the party as the result of 'Process of February 28' launched by the state authorities where the Military was the most dominant actor. The accusation of the party due to its anti-secular and anti-republican action violating the basic principles of the Republic resulted in the closure of the party in January 1998 and the ban of its leaders to enter the elections for 5 years period. In electoral terms, the effect of this process was tremendous. Entering the 1999 general elections under the name of the newly established FP (*Fazilet Partisi*, Virtue party), the party obtained 15,41% of the votes with a decrease of 5,97% of its vote shares compared to 1995 general elections. Changing its name to SP (*Saadet Partisi*, Felicity Party) because of its closure in June 2011, the success of the party heavily decreased due to the split of an important number of its cadres to form AKP.

of the votes, it also created the risk of delegitimizing the policies of the party. In fact, one of the major claims of CHP concerning the conflict in the election of the president prior to 2007 general elections was based on this aspect of the electoral results. [6]

Political parties electoral vote shares across elections (%)					
	2011	2007	2002	1999	1995
AKP*	49,95	46,58	34,43	15,41*	21,38*
DSP	0,25	----	1,22	22,19	14,64
MHP	12,98	14,27	8,35	17,98	8,18
SP*	1,25	2,34	2,49	15,41*	21,38*
DP**	0,65	5,42	14,65**	25,23**	38,83**
ANAP	----	----	5,11	13,22	19,65
DYP	----	----	9,54	12,01	19,18
CHP	25,94	20,88	19,41	8,71	10,71
BDP***	6,58	5,32***	6,14***	4,75***	4,17***
GP	----	3,04	7,25	----	------
others:	2,4	2,15	6,06	5,63	2,08

Table3.1: Political parties' vote shares across elections
*AKP and SP were founded as the result of the division of FP in 2002 who entered the elections under the name of RP in 1995 and FP in 1999 general elections. So the vote shares of AKP and SP for 1999 and 1995 general elections are the vote shares of these parties.
**DP has been established in 2007 with the unification of ANAP and DYP. Votes of DP for 2002, 1999 and 2007 general elections is the sum of the votes shares of these two parties.
*** BDP is the successor of the pro-Kurdish parties DTP, DEHAP, HADEP. So the votes shares of BDP in the table are those of DTP for 2007, DEHAP for 2002 and HADEP for 1999 and 1995 general elections.

AKP entered the 2007 general elections in a highly polarized political context where a major tension occurred between the AKP as the representative of the periphery and secular bureaucracy on the election of the new president of the Turkish Republic. A second development, prior to the elections were the attempts of the center right parties, namely ANAP and DYP, and center left parties CHP and DSP to unify. These attempts have been unsuccessful for the center right. DYP entered the elections under the newly formed party, purposefully named as DP (*Demokrat Parti*, Democratic Party) emphasizing the heritage of the DP of 1950's. On the Left side of the center, a pre-election coalition has been formed between CHP and DSP who entered the elections under the name of CHP. A third development prior to the elections was the decision of the Pro-Kurdish party DTP (*Demokratik Toplum Partisi*-Democratic Society Party) to enter the elections with independent deputy candidates to overcome the barrier of the

---

[6] The election of the president of the Turkish Republic one the major cause of AKP's decision to go the elections earlier than scheduled. The crisis began when the term of 10th president Necdet Sezer ended in August 2007 and AKP put the candidacy of Abdullah Gül, the most important personality in the party after Erdoğan. One of the most important claim of CHP was the problem of legitimacy it would cause if the president was to be elected by a parliament where AKP was represented far above its electoral vote shares.

10% national threshold. It is in this context that AKP managed to increase its vote shares from 34.3 percent in the 2002 general elections to 46.5 percent in the 2007 general elections and again obtained an overwhelming majority in the Turkish Grand National Assembly (TGNA). Other political parties that found representation in the parliament were CHP, MHP and the Pro-Kurdish Party DTP obtaining 20,88 %, 14,7% and 5,32% of the vote shares. The poor performance of DP which votes shares decreased to 5,42% was an important outcome of the elections. While CHP was able to increase its vote shares only by 1%, MHP managed to capture 14,27% of the votes. Another interesting outcome was the decrease in vote shares of DTP although the party had for the first time the potential to enter the parliament by bypassing the 10% national threshold. Nevertheless, the allocation of the seats in the parliament was 341, 112, 71 and 26 for AKP, CHP, MHP and DTP. The amount of un-represented vote in the parliament decreased approximately to 13%. With this figure, the parliament was composed of groups with very different and contrasting ideological positions. The performance of the parliament that was composed of AKP and CHP located in opposite side of the Secular/Anti-secular axis, MHP and DTP located in the opposite side of Turkish/Kurdish nationalism axis was a general concern.[7]

The political context prior to the 2011 general elections was characterized on one hand by the increasing violence of the Kurdish terrorist organization PKK, the government's harsh stand on representatives of the Kurdish movement and the Kurdish problem in general and on the other hand by the making of a new constitution after the elections. After the stillborn attempts to launch a "democratic opening" package to gain the support of voters of Kurdish origin in 2010, AKP seemed to have returned to MHP supporters to increase its electoral base. Meanwhile, MHP suffered from scandals as the result of the leak of a number of cassettes on the sexual relationships of some of its deputy candidates to the Media. The winds of change in CHP that began with the election of its new leader Kılıçdaroğlu on May 22, 2010 after the resignation of Baykal due to a similar cassette scandal was an important development in the center left which

---

[7] These two axes are identified as the two salient dimensions of Turkish Politics (Çarkoğlu and Hinich, 2006). For more information on the dominance of the center/periphery mostly measured in terms of religiosity consult Ergüder,1980-81; Esmer, 2002 ; Kalaycıoğlu, 1994, 1999 ; Çarkoğlu & Kalaycıoğlu, 2007, 2009. The Turkish/Kurdish nationalism axis is identified to be effective especially after 1990s for more information Consult, Çarkoğlu and Hinich, 2006; Kalaycıoğlu,1999.

raised unrealistic expectations on a large increase in the party's vote shares.[8] From the part of AKP, gaining 320 of the 550 seat was put as an objective to attain the necessary majority to make a referendum for the approval of a new constitution. Furthermore, the pro-Kurdish party, BDP (Barış ve Demokrasi Partisi-Peace and Democracy Party)[9] once again decided to enter the elections with independent deputy candidates in the provinces it has strong electoral base. Constant conflict between the Prime Minister Erdoğan and CHP's president Kılıçtaroğlu during the electoral campaigning period, decision of the High Election Board (YSK-Yüksek Seçim Kurulu) to annul some of the candidacies of the pro-Kurdish party BDP and the debates in its aftermath contributed to the polarization that was existent in the system.
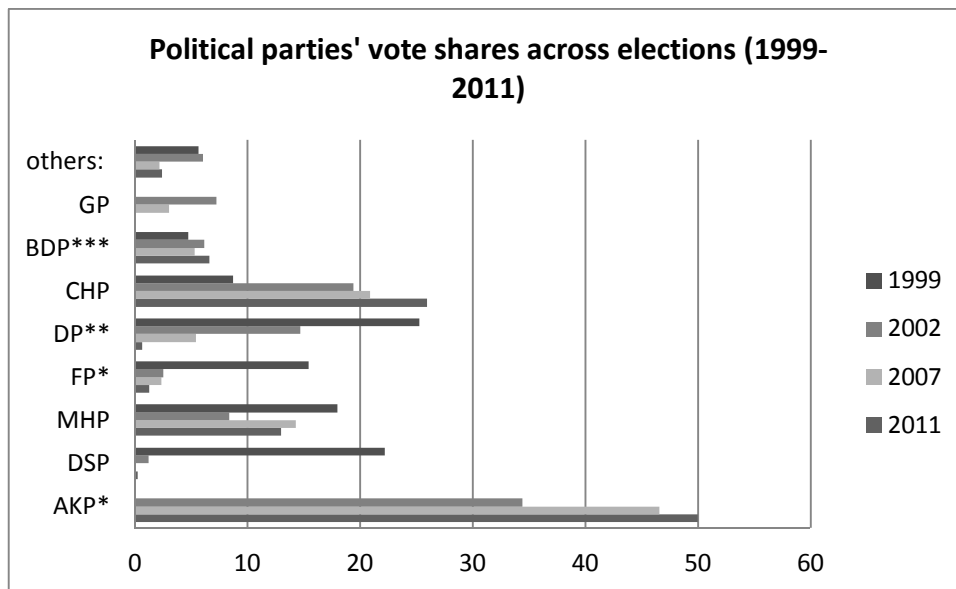
Graph 3.1: Political parties' vote shares across elections
*AKP and SP were founded as the result of the division of FP in 2002 who entered the elections under the name of RP in 1995 and FP in 1999 general elections. So the vote shares of AKP and SP for 1999 general elections in the table are the vote shares of these parties.
**DP has been established in 2007 with the unification of ANAP and DYP. Votes of DP for 2002, 1999 and 2007 general elections is the sum of the votes shares of these two parties.
*** BDP is the successor of the pro-Kurdish parties DTP, DEHAP, HADEP. So the votes shares of BDP in the table are those of DTP for 2007, DEHAP for 2002 and HADEP for 1999 and 1995 general elections.

The result of 2011 general elections was not very a surprise but a disappointment for both AKP and CHP. By gaining 49,95% of the votes and 326 of the seats in the

---

[8] After having important positions in the party, Deniz Baykal has been elected as the president of CHP in September 1992. He remained on the post until he resigned in May 2010 when a cassette on his sexual relationship with a female deputy candidate was published on internet. Kılıçtaroğlu has been selected as the new president of the party on May 2012.

[9] BDP has been founded in May 2008 after the decision of the Constitutional Court to close DTP due to its organic link with the terrorist organization the PKK.

parliament, AKP lost the possibility to approve the new constitution on its own. CHP managed to increase its votes to 25,95%, a percentage below the expectations, and got represented in the parliament with 135 deputies. Both MHP and BDP were able to increase their votes gaining respectively 12,98%; 6,58% of the votes and 53, 36 seats in the parliament. Representativeness in the parliament increased as the percentage of unrepresented vote decreased to 4,55%. The result was once again a parliament represented by 4 ideologically opposed groups that has on its main agenda the making of a more democratic constitution.

3.1.2- Evaluating the General Trend of Competition in the Turkish Party System

Although the 2011 general election did not satisfied the major players, namely AKP and CHP, it provides important clues on the changing nature of the competition in the Turkish party System. The data from 2007 to 2011 indicates a growing consolidation of the Turkish electorate around 4 political parties. Based on existing literature Çarkoğlu (2012a) defines the new system as predominant in terms of electoral vote shares, composition of the opposition and period of incumbency. With its fragmented opposition composed of CHP, MHP and BDP who are not real competitors for incumbency, its increasing victory in three successive elections and large electoral margin of victory, he suggests that AKP fulfills Sartori's (1976) criteria of predominant party system. Within this respect, the Turkish party system can defined as moving towards a predominant party system where electoral votes are divided between four political blocks: AKP as the dominant party, CHP as the main opposition party in ideological terms, MHP as the representative of the more nationalists and BDP as the representative of the Kurdish rights. The diverging positions of the parties forming the opposition on salient issues with their different ideological positions increase their division and make it difficult for them formulate a common position. This in turn strengthens the policy margins of AKP.

An important trend concerning the nature of the composition is the changing landscape of the ideological composition of the system. Within this respect, the system witnesses the gradual change in composition of the left-right ideological camps. A trend

that is suggested by Arıkan and Şekercioğlu (2008) to begin by 1990s and largely favoring AKP. The study adopts the classification made by Çarkoğlu (2002) based on the historical roots of the parties in order to assess the general trends. Within this respect, having their roots in the socialist parties of 1970s the pro-Kurdish parties are at the end of the left direction representing the extreme left. As previously highlighted between 1995 and 2011 four pro-Kurdish parties which kept changing names in order to survive, were banned. These parties are HADEP, DEHAP, DTP and BDP respectively. The BDP emerged from the ashes of the banned Democratic Society Party (DTP, Demokratik Toplum Partisi) at the end of 2010, DSP and CHP are positioned in the center of the left due to their common historical roots[10] although DSP has a more nationalist tone.

National level ideological shifts (1995-2011)					
	1995	1999	2002	2007	2011
AKP*	21,38*	15,41*	34,43	46,58	49,95
Center-Left	25,35	30,9	20,63	20,88	26,19
AKP + Center right	60,21	40,64	56,33	55,04	50,6
Center right	38,83	25,23	21,9	8,46	0,65
Extreme Right	29,56	33,39	45,27	63,19	64,18
Extreme Right without AKP	29,56	33,39	10,84	16,61	14,23
Extreme left	4,17	4,75	6,14	5,32	6,58
others	2,09	5,63	6,06	2,15	2,4

Table 3.2: National level ideological shifts (1995-2011)
*AKP was founded as the result of the division of FP in 2002 who entered the elections under the name of RP in 1995 and FP in 1999 general elections. So the vote shares of AKP for 1995 and 1999 general elections in the table are the vote shares of these parties.

Three parties are positioned on the center-right, namely ANAP, DYP and GP (*Genç Parti*-Young party). Both ANAP and DYP possess a common historical root as they both claim to be the successors of AP (*Adalet partisi*- Justice Party) of 1960s, 1970s and the DP of 1950s. The non-ideological nature of GP makes it difficult to be classified but as it shares the same electoral base with ANAP and DYP it has been classified as a center-right party. DP, as the successor of DYP, has represented the center right after 2007 general elections. On the extreme right lies pro-Islamist parties coming from the Milli Görüş tradition, MNP (*Milli Nizam Partisi*, National Order

---

[10] DSP leader Bülent Ecevit led CHP for a long period in the 70s and oriented the party towards a more left-wing policy stand. In the aftermath of the 1980 Military Coup, he spitted from CHP and entered politics by establishing DSP (Çarkoğlu, 2002, p. 125).

Party) and MSP (*Milli Selamet Partisi*-National Salvation Party) in 1970s and RP (*Refah Partisi*-Welfare party) after the 1980 military coup founded by Necmettin Erbakan. After the closure of FP in 2001, the movement spitted and continued under two different parties: SP and AKP. It should be mentioned that a considerable number of scholars investigating the ideological foundation of AKP, positions the party on the center-right of the ideological spectrum (Özbudun, 2006; Çınar, 2006; Dağı, 2008, Özbudun and Hale, 2010). In fact, the electoral results also support such a suggestion since the party has been successful in gaining the center-right vote. Although supporting these arguments, the study has preferred to classify it under the pro-Islamist umbrella so as to be able to show the shift from center-right parties to these parties in electoral terms.
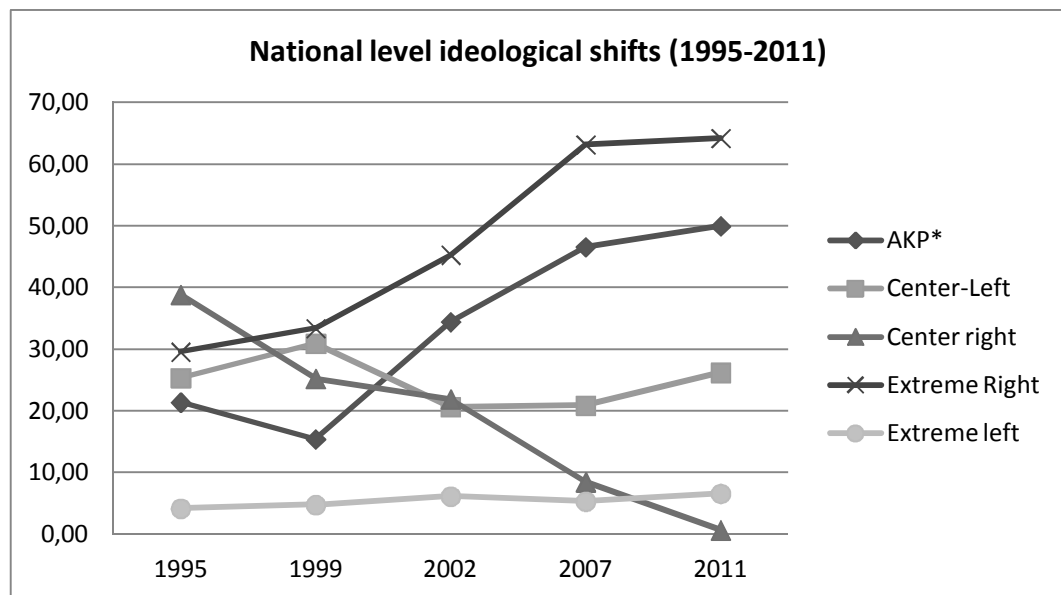
Graph3.2: National level ideological shifts (1995-2011) (%)
*AKP was founded as the result of the division of FP in 2002 who entered the elections under the name of RP in 1995 and FP in 1999 general elections. So the vote shares of AKP for 1995 and 1999 general elections in the table are the vote shares of these parties

Table 3.2 and Graph 3.2 illustrate the change in the vote shares of each ideologically distinct party group. The changing vote shares of AKP alone have also been included to show how much AKP benefitted from these shifts. Although macro level data is not appropriate to understand individual level changes in preferences, it provides important clues on the possible direction of this change. First, the data show the gradual erosion of the center-right parties. Their vote shares from 1999 to 2011 are 25,23 %, 21,9%, 8,46% and 0,65%. The total lost from 1999 to 2011 general elections

is 24,58 % . The votes shares of the center left is 30,9%, 20,63%, 20,88% and 26,19 % from 1999 to 2011 general elections. Although CHP seems to be able to gather some of the votes shares of other center left parties, 4,71% of previous center-left votes seems to be have shifted to other parties from 1999 to 2011. The extreme-right parties respectively received 33,39%, 27%, 63,19%,64,18% in 1999, 2002, 2007 and 2011 general elections. This coincides with an increase of 30,79% from 1999 to 2011 general elections. In overall, the data confirms previous studies that mention the shift towards a more rightist electorate in Turkey that began with 1990's. (Sayarı, 2007; Arıkan & Şekercioğlu, 2008; Çarkoğlu, 2012a, 2002).

While the ideological shift in the preferences of the electorate is an important dimension of the competition, researches on party system indicators, indicates a stabilizing competition in the Turkish Party System that began with the elections of 2002. Effective number of parties and volatility index are usually used in the literature to measure the amount of stability in the system. While effective number of parties gives a measure of the number of the parties competing within the system, volatility index provide information on the number of voters that switch their preferences across elections, providing a measure of potential swing voters in the system.

	Comparison of ideological shifts across elections					
	2011-2007	2007-2002	2002-1999*	2011-2007	2011-2002	2011-1999*
AKP*	3,37	12,15	19,02	3,37	15,52	34,54
Center-Left	5,31	0,25	-10,27	5,31	5,56	-4,71
Center right	-7,81	-13,44	-3,33	-7,81	-21,25	-24,58
Extreme Right	0,99	17,92	11,88	0,99	18,91	30,79
Extreme Right without AKP	-2,38	5,77	-22,55	-2,38	3,39	-19,16
Extreme left	1,26	-0,82	1,39	1,26	0,44	1,83
others	0,25	-3,91	0,43	0,25	-3,66	-3,23

Table 3.3: Comparison of ideological shifts across elections
*AKP was founded as the result of the division of FP in 2002. So the vote shares of AKP for 1999 general elections in the table are the vote shares of these parties

Within this respect, in Turkey, the picture after 2011 general elections seems to be considerably different from the instability of the 1990's characterized by high volatility and fragmentation (Çarkoğlu, 1997; Sayarı, 2002). This trend has been evaluated by a considerable number of scholars as a shift in the Turkish party system to a more stable one with votes consolidated mainly around one predominant party and 3 minor opposition parties (Çarkoğlu, 2007, 2011, 2012; Sayarı, 2007; Şekercioğlu &

Arıkan 2007, 2012). A gradual decrease in effective number of parties and volatility rates [11] are major findings of these studies. Although the main motivation behind the application of the 10% threshold after 1980 military coup was to bring stability to the system by decreasing the number of parties represented in the parliament. Only after a decay of the military coup and two consecutive elections, the effective number of parties gradually began to increase making its peak with 6.73 in 1999 general elections. After 1999 general elections, a sharp decrease in 2002 general elections that continued through 2007 and 2011 can be observed. The effective number of parties after the 2011 general elections is 2,96 which has been attained without any formal changes in the electoral laws. The amount of this decrease in such a short period is remarkable. In terms of competition, this translates to around three parties effectively competing in the system.

A similar pattern can be observed for the volatility index in the system that measures the shifts in electorate's party preferences across two elections. After the military coup of 1980, a gradual increase in the electoral volatility index can be measured. On the other hand, the increase has its top from 1999 to 2002 when AKP entered the political space. What is interesting is the sharp decrease after 2007 and 2011 general elections. While previous patterns represent a great shift in voters' preferences on parties, the last outcome indicates a process of consolidation of votes around the four parties entering the parliament with the dominance of AKP.

AKP's increasing dominancy can also be observed when the geographical support for the party is analyzed. A gradual expansion of AKP's support base across elections in most of the provinces of Turkey is an important observation. Studies on regional electoral outcomes divides the Turkish provinces in three regions with different electoral patterns and socioeconomic characteristics (Çarkoğlu & Avcı 2002, Çarkoğlu 2000). The first region covers the coastal provinces, while the second region consists of Kurdish populated eastern provinces. The last region consists of large number of central provinces lying between the others (Çarkoğu divides this region into three sub-regions due to different competition patterns, Çarkoğlu, 2002). In 2002 general elections, AKP was able to become the first party in 50 of the total provinces, mostly in the third region,

---

[11] Çarkoğlu calculates these indexes as follows. The volatility index (V) is calculated with the following formula where i=1,…N parties in the system : $Vt=(1/2) \Sigma(Vote\%i,t – Vote\%i,t-1)$. Effective number of parties is calculated by using again N parties in the following Formula Ft: $1/\Sigma(Vote\%i,t)2$. See Pedersen (1979) for volatility index and Laakso and Taagepera for the effective number of parties (1979).

while CHP became the first party in 15 coastal provinces. The support in 12 provinces in the Southeast region of Turkey was in favor of Pro-Kurdish party HADEP. The 2007 general election was characterized by the shrinking of both first and second region in favor of AKP. While CHP managed to win the elections only in four provinces namely, Izmir, Edirne, Kırklareli and Tekirdağ, the independent candidates of HADEP became the first in only 6 provinces, namely Iğdır, Muş, Diyarbakır, Tunceli, Şırnak, Hakkari. MHP managed to be the first party in the provinces of Osmaniye and İçel. AKP has managed to become the first party in all other provinces which total number is 69. The 2011 general elections are characterized by a similar picture but with some variations. CHP managed to gain the province of Aydın, Muğla and Tunceli and became the first party in seven provinces. Similarly, the independent candidates of the pro-Kurdish party BDP became the winners in seven provinces, losing Tunceli and gaining Mardin and Van from AKP. What is interesting is the increasing vote shares of AKP in the coastal provinces where CHP has been the winner. Nevertheless, this success seems to have come at the expenses of the party's vote lost in the 9 Southeastern provinces in the Kurdish populated region. Within this respect, this region seems to have different competition patterns than the rest of Turkey.

The electoral outcomes from 1999 to 2011 general elections and party system indicators show two important trends in the Turkish party system. First, it indicates the move towards a predominant party system where AKP managed to consolidate its leadership by increasing its vote shares in each consecutive election. Second, an important characteristic of this emerging predominant party system is the relative weakness of the three opposition parties, namely CHP, MHP and BDP vis-à-vis AKP. Furthermore, decreasing volatility among these block indicates the stabilization of the support for the four blocks. For the purpose of the study this outcomes signals the low probability of change in the system that could decrease the party's control over the state resources unless it faces an unexpected organizational economic crisis. Yet, the stabilization of the system also reveals the difficulties the party may face in increasing it electoral support. Under these circumstances, the party may decide to mobilize ideologically swing voters through the distribution of the state resources to increase its support. Within this respect, as it will be evaluated in the next section the nature of the competition the party faces with BDP among voters of Kurdish origin makes these voters potential targets.

3.4- Identifying Electoral Competition between AKP and the Pro-Kurdish Parties

This section builds upon demonstrating first, how AKP and BDP become the two major competitors among voters of Kurdish origin from 1990's until the general elections of 2011. The second objective is to depict the volatility of the votes among these voters for the two parties. The study will depict a historical account of the election results within two periods in the Kurdish populated region. The first covers the period beginning with the formation of the first pro-Kurdish party in 1990 until the 2002 general election where AKP entered the electoral scene. The second period will be an analysis of the developments until the 2011 general elections. Then, the changing electoral competition in the region will be analyzed through basic indicators such as the ideological shift, volatility index, effective number of parties and margin of victory will be evaluated. A similar analysis will also be conducted for each of the provinces. This analysis is carried to be able to show two patterns. First, it will demonstrate the high magnitude of the volatility of the votes that regional indicators do not capture. Second, it will indicate that AKP and BDP are also the main competitors in each of the provinces expect for Tunceli and Iğdır capturing to gather nearly all of the votes. The provinces included for the measurements consist of provinces specified in table 3.4. The basic criteria of selection were first demography; second the presence of deputy candidates of BDP in 2011 general elections. Although the field research of the study has been conducted in Istanbul and BDP entered the elections with independent deputy candidates, the province has been excluded from the calculations as it deviates in terms of the percentage of the Kurdish population residing in these provinces. Such a decision was the natural outcome of the objective of this section, which aims at evaluating the electoral preferences of voters of Kurdish origin by analyzing aggregate data. The incorporation of Istanbul that has a large quantity of non-Kurdish voters would increase the specific risk of miscalculating the electoral preferences of voters of Kurdish origin.

3.2.1- The Pro-Kurdish Parties Entering the Competition (1990-2002)

Support for pro-Kurdish parties began in 1995 general elections when DEP decided to enter the elections in the region on its own. The party managed to get 24,67% (see table 3.5) of the votes in the region, but it could not get representation in the parliament, gaining 4,5% of the national vote shares, a percentage far below the 10% national threshold. The regional electoral performance of the party was not uniform and diverged between two groups of provinces. Its electoral votes shares was high and the party was the first in provinces such as Hakkari, Diyarbakır, Batman, Van, Şırnak, Mardin gaining respectively 54.2%, 46.34%, 37.24%, 28%, 25.95% and 21.95% of the vote shares. On the other hand, the party's vote shares were moderate in provinces such Bitlis, Bingöl, Kars where its support was 10%, 7.11% and 7.77% (for the parties vote shares in each province consult table 1.5). The second party was RP that received 23.48% of the total votes, while DYP and ANAP were respectively the third and fourth parties gaining 16,27% and 15,97% of the vote shares. The bad performance especially of CHP compared with 1991 general elections indicates how poor the true electoral base of the party was in the region. The inability of HADEP to enter the parliament created a representational bias in favor of other political parties; namely RP, DYP and ANAP.

HADEP entered the 1999 general elections in a political environment of increasing tone of Turkish nationalism due to the arrest of the PKK leader Öcalan in Kenya and his return to Turkey under the responsibility of the government led by DSP. DSP and MHP were among the winners of the elections at the national level. They were even able to moderately increase their vote shares in the southeast province. Gaining nationally 4,75 % of the support HADEP once again could not pass the 10% threshold and stood out of the parliament. Nevertheless, the real winner in the region was once again HADEP increasing its vote shares to 29,32% in nearly all provinces except Şırnak. This was especially the case, in provinces such as Muş, Ağrı and Kars where the party's performance was moderate in 1995 general elections (see table1.5). The party also gained considerable number of votes in the coastal provinces of Mersin and Istanbul raising its electoral support to 8.8% and 4 % respectively. The decrease in the support for FP which could only receive 15,49% of the votes, was another important

outcome. The two parties were followed by DYP and ANAP gaining 15.31% and 12.65% of the votes. As in the 1995 general elections RP, who gain 22 out of 70 seats with 15,49% was the party that benefited from the inability of HADEP to pass the 10% threshold.

Provincial Level Vote Shares for AKP and BDP in (1995-2011)												
		AKP*						Pro-Kurdish Parties				
Province	est. Kurd. Pop.	AKP 2011	AKP 2009	AKP 2007	AKP 2002	FP 1999	RP 1995	BDP 2011	DTP 2009	DTP 2007	DEHAP 2002	HADEP 1999	HADEP 1995
Hakkari	89,47%	16,5	15,1	33,5	6,8	9,9	6	79,8	80,2	□6,	45,1	46,1	54,2
Şırnak	79,03%	20,6	42,6	26,9	14	11,14	8,3	72,3	53,7	51,8	45,9	24,1	25,9
Siirt	78,78%	48	45,8	48,8	84,8	13,4	28	42,5	49,4	39,5	0	22,1	26,6
Batman	76,81%	37,1	36,7	46,4	20,6	13,9	25,8	51,5	59,7	39,4	47,1	43,4	37,2
Bingöl	76,63%	67,1	42,8	71,1	31,7	24,4	51,6	23,9	33,8	14,3	22,2	12,9	7,1
Mardin	74,84%	32,2	45	44,1	15,4	11,8	20	60,9	36,3	38,8	39,6	25,3	22
Diyarbakır	72,78%	32,2	31,3	40,9	16	14,6	18,8	61,7	65,6	47	56,1	45,9	46,3
Van	70,70%	40,2	39,2	53,2	25,9	18,9	23,8	49,5	53,5	32,6	40,9	35,7	28
Ağrı	70,45%	47,6	39,6	63	17,7	12,8	30,7	43,4	32,4	24,4	35,1	33,7	17,9
Muş	67,75%	42,8	37,2	38,6	16,9	10,9	29,7	44,3	50,5	45,8	38,1	31,8	16,7
Bitlis	64,03%	50,7	43,1	58,8	17,7	20,8	29	40,2	34,4	21,8	29,6	13,7	10
Tunceli	55,90%	15,8	21,6	12,3	6,7	2,4	2,7	22,2	30	60	32,5	13,4	16,9
Şanlıurfa	47,84%	63,5	39,3	59,8	22,9	21,4	26,2	27	10,5	20,1	19,3	16,6	13,7
Iğdır	19,02%	28,3	30,5	28,9	6,5	12,9	9,4	31,5	39,6	40,5	32,7	29,7	21,6
Kars	19,02%	42,6	32,7	41,2	17,2	9,8	20,5	19,2	14,7	15,6	19,6	17,5	6,8
İçel	9,71%	32	21,3	27,2	18,1	5,2	10,7	9,7	17,5	6,6	9,5	8,8	7,9
İstanbul	8,16%	49,4	44,2	45,2	37,2	21,3	23,9	5,3	4,6	5,9	5,5	4	3,6

Table 3.4: Provincial electoral vote shares of AKP and pro-Kurdish parties (1995-2011)
*AKP was founded as the result of the division of FP in 2002 who entered the elections under the name of RP in 1995 and FP in 1999 general elections. So the vote shares of AKP for 1995 and 1999 general elections in the table are the vote shares of these parties.

At the provincial level, HADEP managed to be the first party in Iğdır, Ağrı, Muş, Diyarbakır, Van, Hakkari, Batman, Mardin, Şırnak and Siirt.[12] The second party was RP in the first seven provinces while in the last three provinces HADEP was followed by DYP and ANAP. Kars, Bitlis, Bingöl, Adıyaman and Ş.Urfa was dominated by RP, followed by DYP and ANAP, while HADEP's performance was poor.

---

[12] In his study where he effectuates a cluster analysis Çarkoğlu (2000) finds three different clusters where the electoral results diverges. He separates Mardin , Şırnak and Siirt as in contrast to the other 7 provinces the party that follows HADEP is DYP or ANAP instead of RP.

3.2.2- Entering of AKP in the electoral scene and Changing competition after the 2002 general elections

The reluctance of major political parties and state institutions to recognize HADEP as the legitimate representative of the Kurdish issue and as a result, attempt to push the party out of the system by emphasizing its relationship with PKK was still a major problem the party faced when 2002 general elections were approaching. As a result of the possible closure of HADEP, the party entered the general elections under the name of DEHAP which was established in 1997. Gaining 6,14% of the national vote shares DEHAP once again remained out of parliament while significantly expanding its electoral base when compared with the 1995 and 1999 elections. Its support rose to 36,10% in the region and only in Hakkari did DEHAP obtain a slightly lower level of support than HADEP gained then. In all other provinces, DEHAP increased its vote shares by an average of about ten percentage points. The second party in the region was AKP who gained 20,45% of the votes, a performance above its precedent's in 1999 elections but still below 1995. Nevertheless, AKP expanded the votes of former FP in all the provinces in this region except Bitlis, Hakkari and Igdır.[13] DYP and ANAP, which respectively gained 9.25% and 6.38%, lost half of their support in the region. Another, remarkable outcome outside of the region was the moderately increasing trend in DEHAP's vote shares in the province of Mersin and Istanbul where it gained 9,5% and 5.5 % of the total votes.

Electoral vote shares of political parties (Southeast Region)						
	1995	1999	2002	2007	2009	2011
AKP	------	------	20,45	47,96	34,00	42,10
BDP	24,67	29,32	36,10	34,70	43,00	46,78
CHP	4,09	5,08	8,70	4,96		4,38
MHP	5,17	6,41	4,82	4,25		3,28
SP	23,48	15,49	3,30	1,30		0,50
DP	------	------	------	4,72		0,35
GP	------	------	1,51	0,48		0,00
DSP	3,27	5,67	0,88	0,00		0,34
ANAP	15,97	12,65	6,38	------		------
DYP	16,27	15,31	9,25	------		------
Independents	4,20	4,70	5,87			
Others	2,87	5,38	2,73	1,64		2,19

Table 3.5: Regional level electoral vote shares of political parties

---

[13] Similar results were found by Çarkoğlu (2002)

In terms of the winners at provincial level, once again two different clusters could be identified. The first cluster consisted of 13 provinces Ağrı, Bitlis, Diyarbakır, Hakkari, Mardin, Muş, Siirt, Tunceli, Van, Batman, Şırnak, Iğdır, Kars where DEHAP was the first party and AKP the second party. Compared to 1999 general elections DEHAP managed to take from the pro-Islamist FP the provinces of Bitlis, Siirt and Şırnak (see table 3.4). Only in two provinces Şanlıurfa and Bingöl AKP managed to be the first party but its votes share were still very low.[14] Although elections results was a success for DEHAP, the national threshold left the party out of the parliament and worked in favor of AKP who gained 40 of 64 parliamentary seats from the region with 20,45% of the votes.

Stability was the main characteristics in the economic field of Turkey before 2007 general elections. Inflation dropped steadily since 2002 and was accompanied by considerable economic growth (Çarkoğlu, 2012b). In contrast, the 2007 general elections took place in a highly polarized political environment characterized by the conflict between AKP as the representative of the common people constituting the periphery and the state institutions as the defenders of the Republican Center. The capture of the presidency by the periphery, a position designed as the representative of the center in the 1982 constitution, was at the heart of the debate. The elections was perceived in a way as the struggle between the representative of the peripheral forces, in which the Kurdish population constitutes one of the important players, in favor of change and the central forces that defended the status-quo. Both developments seem to have contributed to the electoral support for the party at national, regional and provincial level.

The positive stand of AKP towards the Kurdish problem, during the first period of its incumbency, increased sympathy for the party among citizens of Kurdish origin. The democratic reforms carried within the cadre of the EU accession program accepted in August 2002 were important dimensions of this support. Changes carried within this framework were, the lifting of the emergency rule over 13 Kurdish populated provinces, the introduction of broadcasting and right of education in the mother tongue on a limited basis and the realization of necessary amendments to release imprisoned former

---

[14] For more information on the difference in the performance of other political parties consult Çarkoğlu's (2002) Cluster Analysis.

HADEP deputies[15]. As Larabee and Tol (2011, p. 146) point it out, although these reforms initially helped the AKP to improve its political support among the Kurds, they were hindered by bureaucratic obstacles. The speech of Erdoğan in August 2005 in Diyarbakır was in a sense the declaration of AKP's position on the Kurdish issue. While proclaiming that he was against regional or ethnic separatist movements, the prime minister defined past policies of state bureaucracy as a mistake and asserted his support for cultural pluralism tolerant to minority cultures (Efegil, 2011, 31).

Meanwhile, the pro-Kurdish party HADEP faced the same destiny with its processors and was closed by the constitutional Court in 2003. The movement entered the 2007 general election under the newly formed DTP. For DTP the 2007 general elections was a turning point, since the party attempted to circumvent the 10% threshold by running the elections with independent candidates in the Kurdish populated region and the coastal provinces of Istanbul and Mersin. Although the party managed to enter the parliament, as Arıkan and Şekercioğlu (2008) points it out, one of the most important results of the 2007 general elections has been the penetration of AKP in the Kurdish populated region. The votes shares of DTP, decreased only by 2 %, but AKP managed to increase its support to 47,96% in the region. In the provinces of Diyarbakır, Mardin, Batman, Van, Ağrı, Bitlis, Bingöl and Kars the vote shares of DTP decreased between 3 and 9 %. On the other hand, AKP increased its support in all 15 provinces except Siirt (see table 3.4). While DTP got the largest electoral support in the provinces of Hakkari, Şırnak, Diyarbakır, Iğdır, Tunceli, Muş followed by AKP, AKP gained the highest vote shares in the provinces of Mardin, Batman, Van, Ağrı, Siirt, Bitlis, Ş.Urfa, Bingöl and Kars.[16] Representing the center right DP's vote shares shrunk to 4,72%. MHP and CHP gaining each less than 5% faced similar results. DTP managed to gain 22 of 70 parliamentary seats, while AKP obtained 45 of them. Still, this representation was far below DTP's electoral vote shares, thanks to the 10% threshold forcing the party to enter the elections with independent candidates. DTP's performance in the coastal provinces was divergent. While its vote shares were nearly constant in Istanbul with 5.9%, in Mersin the party experienced a considerable decrease of 3% gaining 6.6%

---

[15] The rule had been in place for more than 15 years and was blamed for huge human rights violations against the citizens living in the region. Although the constitutional amendment permitting the mother tongue broadcasting was carried during the former government, AKP managed to overcome bureaucratic resistance to its implementation (Kirişçi, 2011,p. 340)

[16] For more details on a cluster analysis of the region consult Arıkan & Şekercioğlu (2008)

of the total vote shares. Nevertheless, the party managed to gain two seats in the parliament from Istanbul.

AKP's success in the region in the 2007 general elections meant that the government would have to address the Kurdish question if it wanted this support to persist. In fact, the sharp decrease in the party's votes in the 2009 municipal elections (see table 3.4) was an important signal sent to the government in this sense since the party's support decreased to 34% in favor of DTP. Çarkoğlu (2009a, 2009b) suggests that decrease in AKP's vote shares not only in the Kurdish populated region but also at the national level was also affected by the decreasing economic performance of the party. Having pretty well understood this message, AKP decided to take a huge step on the Kurdish issue on October 2009 by not only giving a series of rights to the citizens of Kurdish origin but also initiating several attempts to solve the problem of PKK under the so called the 'democratic Opening' package. Differentiating between the Kurdish issue and PKK terrorism, the major aim was to increase the legitimacy of the state in the region through the improvement of economic, social and cultural conditions and the amendment of constitution. Indeed, several steps have been taken before the declaration of the "democratic opening" package such as the repeal of the ban on Kurdish, the implementation of the decision taken in 2002 to lift emergency law, permission for broadcasting in Kurdish in 2004, and the opening of public TV in Kurdish-TRT 6 in 2008 (Kirişci, 2011). Concerning the PKK terrorism, an important step was the government's attempts of amnesty and permission to 34 PKK members from PKK's Kandil and Makhmour Camps situated in Iraq to return to Turkey. Polarization between the citizens of Kurdish origin who interpreted this as a victory and reaction from Nationalist circles forced the government to retreat from its policy, end the democratic opening even before it has actually started. (Çiçek 2011, p.15)

Developments after the stillborn democratic opening package have been largely characterized by the attempts of both AKP and state institutions to delegitimize the DTP as the representative of the citizens of Kurdish origin. Growing polarization between the two parties was in a sense in accordance with AKP policy to proclaim itself as the only legitimate party capable of solving the Kurdish issue. The closure of DTP in December 2009 by the Constitutional Court and the political ban put to important names of the party for 5 years was another important development, confirming once more the state's unchanged position towards the pro-Kurdish parties. This resulted in the expulsion of

two deputies of DTP, co-presidents of the party at the same time, *Ahmet Türk* and *Aysel Tuğluk*, from the parliament on the grounds of supporting and maintaining organic links with the PKK. The DTP was replaced by a new pro-Kurdish political party called the Peace and Democracy Party (*BDP-Barış ve Democracy Partisi*) led by *Selahattin Demirtaş*. The arrestment of about 1,500 Kurdish politicians, including mayors, vice presidents, former MPs and directors of central and local branches of the DTP (Çiçek, 2011) as a result of the operations against the Union of Communities in Kurdistan (KCK) increased polarization concerning the Kurdish issue. It was under these circumstances that Turkey entered the 2011 general elections. The main agenda of the elections set by AKP was the making of a new constitution for a more democratic Turkey. During the electoral campaigning period, declarations of Erdoğan on the Kurdish issue had sometimes a tone so harsh that some authors have introduced it as a u-turn in AKP's policy (Arıkan Akdağ, 2012; Şekercioğlu & Arıkan, 2012).

In this political context, the result of the 2011 general elections in the region was an increase in the vote shares of BDP. While BDP increase its votes to 46.78%, AKP's electoral support decreased to 42.10 %. These results coincide respectively to nearly 12% higher for BDP and 5% lower for AKP when compared with 2007 general elections. When vote shares at provincial level are analyzed, we observe a considerable decrease in AKP's support in most of the provinces except Muş, Siirt, Ş.Urfa, Tunceli, Kars while BDP increased its votes in 13 provinces. The exception was Tunceli and Iğdır, the only two provinces where a third competitor performed very well, respectively CHP and MHP. If these two provinces are excluded from the observations two clusters can still be identified even if number of provinces in each clusters have changed. BDP became the winner in seven provinces: Hakkari, Şırnak, Diyarbakır, Mardin, Batman, Van and Muş; while AKP saved its position in the provinces of Ağrı, Siirt, Bitlis, Ş.Urfa and Bingöl and lost its position in Mardin, Batman and Van. DYP and SP's vote shrunk even more in size decreasing each to less than 0.5%. CHP and MHP managed to save their considerably small vote shares. The allocation of the seats was once again favoring AKP who got the right to be represented in the parliament with 37 seats. The allocation of the remaining seats was 30 for BDP, 2 for CHP from Tunceli and 1 for MHP from Iğdır. The performance of BDP in the provinces of Istanbul and Mersin was 5.3% and 9.7%. With these electoral results, the party managed to gain one seat from Mersin and threes parliamentary seats from Istanbul.

Regional Level Electoral Vote Shares of political parties (1999-2011)
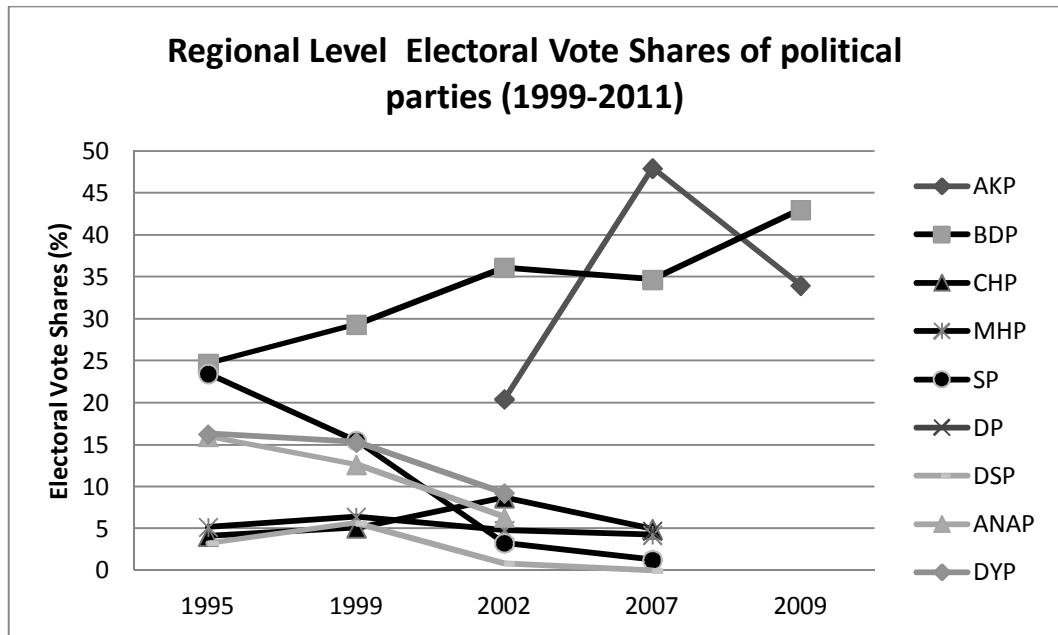
Graph 3.1: Regional level electoral vote shares of political parties (1995-2011)

3.2.3- **Analysis of the General Trend in Party System Indicators in the Region**.

The electoral characteristics from 1991 to 2011 reveal an important change in the nature of the competition in the Kurdish populated region. In the first period between 1991 and 2002 the region face a multiplicity of competitors as pro-Kurdish and RP enter the scene as real challengers to the existing parties, DYP and ANAP. The second period that begins with the entering of AKP into Turkish politics indicates the beginning of the stabilization of the system around two forces that represent the periphery, AKP and pro-Kurdish. This trend coincides with a considerable shift in the ideological composition of the vote preferences similar to the rest of Turkey. Nevertheless, the picture at region differentiates from the whole of Turkey in two senses. First, Although AKP faces relatively weak opposing forces at the national level, in the Kurdish populated region it has to compete with a strong opposition. Second, although at national level the electoral base of the four parties functioning effectively in the system seems to be stable, the provincial electoral shifts from 2007 to 2011 general elections indicate the competition of two parties for a considerably large common electoral base. This section will evaluate in detail these major trends in the party system characteristics at both regional and provincial level.

96

Regional level ideological shifts (1995-2011)					
	1995	1999	2002	2007	2011
AKP			20,45	47,96	42,10
Center-Left	7,36	10,75	9,58	4,96	4,71
Center-Right	32,25	27,96	17,15	5,20	0,35
Extreme-Right	28,65	21,90	28,58	53,51	45,89
Extreme-Right without AKP	28,65	21,90	8,12	5,55	3,78
Extreme-Left	24,67	29,32	36,10	34,70	46,78
others	8,07	27,96	15,64	0,00	0,00
total right	60,90	49,85	45,72	58,71	46,23
Total Left	32,03	40,07	45,69	39,65	51,49

Table 3.6: Regional level ideological shifts (1995-2011)
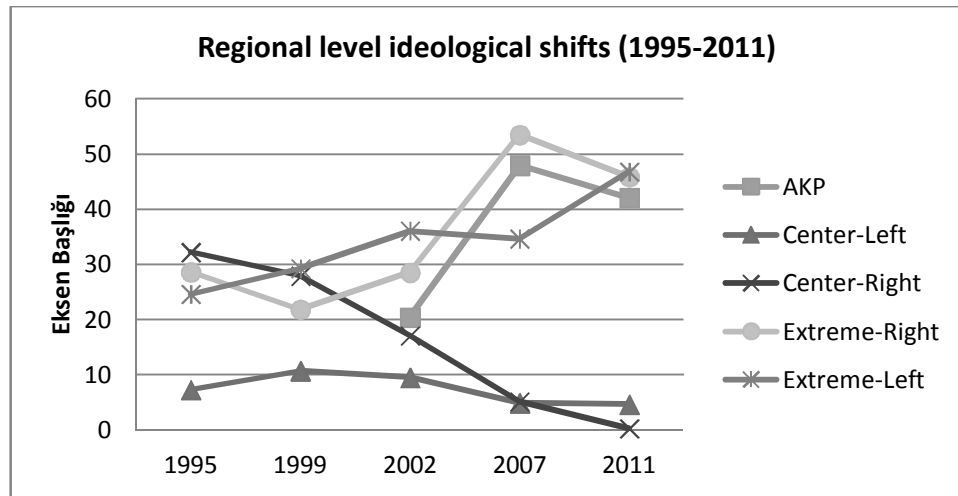
Graph 3.4: Regional level ideological shifts (1995-2011)

Table 3.6 and Graph 3.4 show the percentage of the support to each ideological group of parties in the region. The erosion of the support for the center-right parties throughout the period under investigation is one of the most important trends. While in 1995 these parties gained 32,25% of the support, this share gradually decreases across elections and finally reaches 0,35% in 2011 general elections. Nevertheless, in contrast to the national level tendencies this decrease seems not only to favor pro-Islamist (RP, FP and AKP) but also pro-Kurdish parties. Graph 3.5 illustrates the vote shares in terms of left and right scale. An interesting observation is the shifts between the two poles across elections. From 1995 to 2002 one can observe increase in the left spectrum at the expense of the right. Nevertheless, the 2007 general elections are critical in the sense that the right recaptures an important amount of the votes. On the other hand, the 2011 general elections is characterized by an opposite direction. Although AKP becomes the only representative of the extreme right in the region where both SP and MHP have

considerably poor support, it seems that, as the representative of the extreme-left, especially in 2011 general elections BDP managed to gain an important portion of the right support. This means that although support for AKP is high for 2007 and 2011 elections, when it is compared with the total vote shares of the right in 1995 general elections, a considerable amount seems to have shifted to the left in favor of the pro-Kurdish parties, especially in 2011 general elections. When we compare the total vote shares of the left (center left + extreme left) we see an increase of nearly 18% from 1995 to 2011.
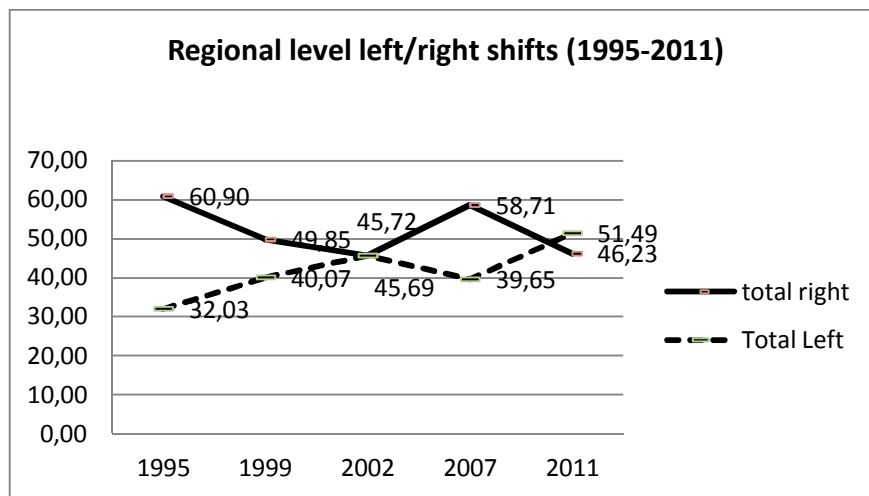
Graph 3.5: Regional level left/right shifts (1995-2011)

The effective number of parties supports the diverging trend in terms of fragmentation in the region. The increasing fragmentation in the region between 1995 and 1999 general elections is also reflected in the effective number of parties. Furthermore, the declining trend in effective number of parties after 2002 signals the presence of a competitive system dominated by two ideologically opposed groups on the left/right dimension, each represented by one party. Within this respect, as illustrated in table 3.7, Although AKP and BDP took together nearly 57% of the total votes in the region in 2002 general elections, this amount got larger in 2007 with 82,5% and has its peak in 2011 where the two parties got 89% of the total votes. The effective number of parties gradually decreased from 6.08 in 1995, 4.99 in 2002 to 2.8 in 2007 and 2.5 in 2011 (see Table 3.6). It should be taken into account that this number can even be lower if Iğdır where MHP is traditionally strong and Tunceli where CHP's support is high is excluded from the observations. Within this respect, low level of

fragmentation is an important characteristic of the electoral competition in the region. As Şekercioğlu & Arıkan (2012) points it out *unlike in the Western Anatolia where AKP has one strong or moderately sized opposition (either CHP or MHP), in the East and Southeast apart from the independents AKP has no real competitors.*

Regional level total electoral support for AKP and pro-Kurdish parties (1995-2011)						
	1995*	1999*	2002	2007	2009	2011
*AKP + pro-Kurdish parties	48,15	44,81	56,56	82,65	77,00	88,88

Table 3.7: Regional level total electoral support for AKP and pro-Kurdish parties (1995-2011)
* The vote shares of AKP for 1995 and 1999 general elections in the table are the vote shares of RP for 1995 and FP for 1999 general elections.

When the regional trend is compared with the national trend, we can observe a similar pattern at both levels. 1999 was the election the most fragmented of all elections at both national and regional level where respectively 6.73 and 6.08 effective parties were competing in the system while the decreasing general trend after 1999 general elections is similar. What differentiated the regional as opposed to national level fragmentation is the lower level of effective number of parties in the Kurdish populated region which are 4.99, 2.80 and 2.50 compared to 5.41, 3.46 and 2.96 at the national level for 2002, 2007 and 2011 general elections.
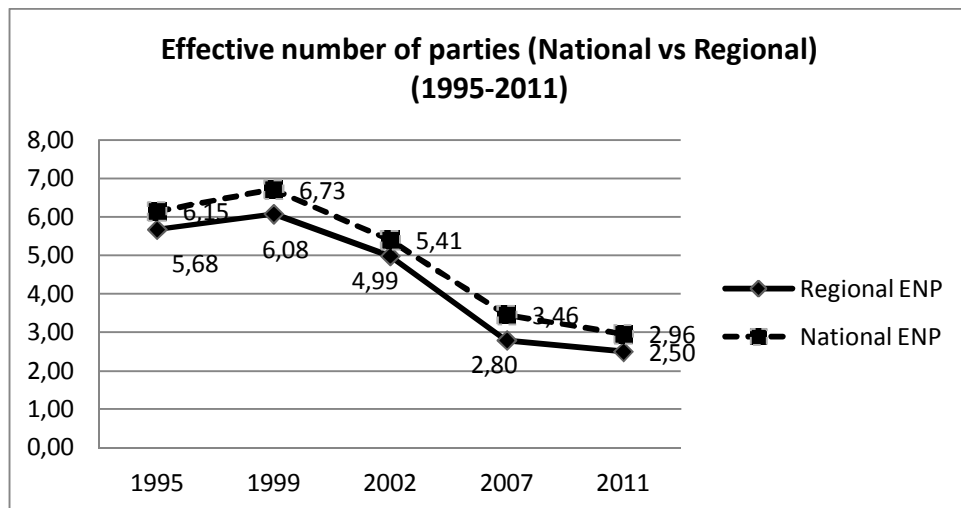
Graph 3.6: Effective number of parties (Regional vs National) (1995-2011)
* The formula used by Çarkoğlu has been selected for calculating the effective number of parties and Volatility index. The basic motivation was being able to compare the results.[17]

---

[17] For detailed information on the calculation of effective number of parties and volatility index consult footnote 11.

Graph 3.7 illustrates the regional and national pattern of volatility index, which shows the amount of the shift in voters' preferences for parties across two consecutive elections. Although there is no available data at individual level to confirm this trend, regional level indicators reveal different patterns across elections. Within this respect, 2002 and 2007 general elections seems to be critical in the changing preferences of voters; whereas in 1999 and 2011 general elections, voters' preferences at regional level seem to be considerably more stable. This is an interesting outcome when the strong opposed position of AKP to the Kurdish problem during the elections is taken into consideration. Within this respect, when compared with national level volatility index throughout the period one can observe a different trend. Although 2002 is characterized by a sharp increase in the volatility (0,44) at national level, this trend was lower for the region. On the other hand, while the decrease in volatility index to 0,18 in 2007 at the national level indicates a stabilization at national level in terms of party preferences, this seems not to be true for the region. Voters' preferences in this election have once again shifted.
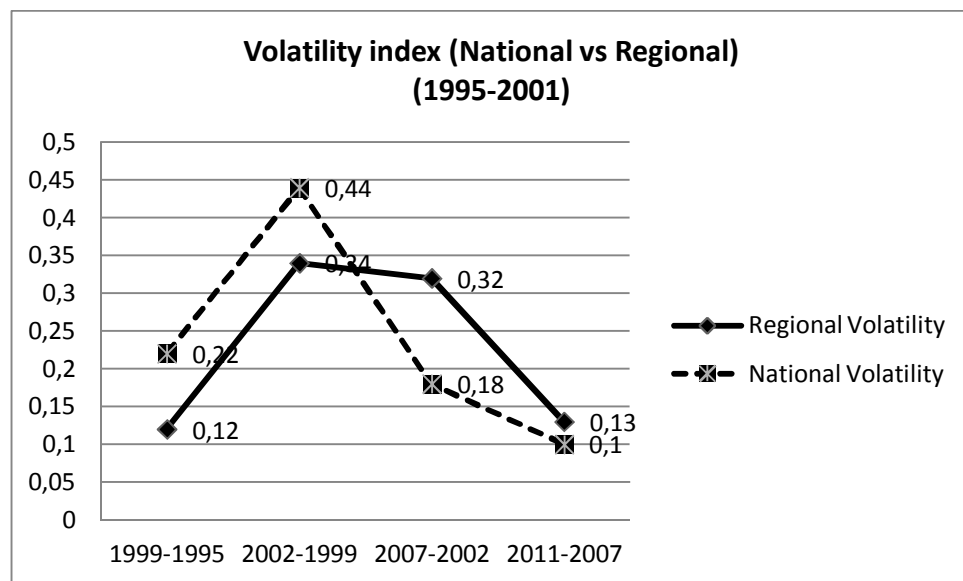
Graph 3.7: Volatility index (National VS Regional) (1995-2011)

The effective number of parties and volatility index together indicate the formation of an electoral context with two competing parties that have considerably solid block of supporters. Nevertheless, one should be careful in evaluating the regional level effective number of parties and volatility index since a different picture may be inherent at lower levels.

Although the effective numbers of parties at provincial and regional level indicate a similar competition, the volatility index reveals greater shift in the vote shares between AKP and BDP that cannot be observed at the regional level. When the effective number of parties in each province is analyzed decreasing amount of effective number of parties across elections and a stabilization between 2 and 2,50 after the 2011 general elections seems to be a common characteristics. This signifies a major competition between AKP and BDP. This is in conformity with regional level data. Kars and Iğdır with around 3.5 point are exceptions. Table 3.9 illustrates the total of the votes gained by AKP and BDP in each of the provinces across elections. In all the provinces, the two parties together have managed to gain nearly 90% of the votes in both 2007 and 2011 general elections with the exception of Tunceli, Kars and Iğdır. Provincial results also confirm the suggestion that the competition is mainly between AKP and BDP in all the provinces.

Provincial level total electoral support for AKP and pro-Kurdish parties(1995-2011)				
Province	2002	2007	2009	2011
Hakkari	51,9	89,7	95,3	96,3
Şırnak	59,9	78,7	96,3	92,9
Diyarbakır	72,1	87,9	96,9	93,9
Mardin	55	82,9	81,3	93,1
Batman	67,7	85,8	96,4	88,6
Van	66,8	85,8	92,7	89,7
Muş	55	84,4	87,7	87,1
Ağrı	52,8	87,4	72	91
Siirt	84,8	88,3	95,2	90,5
Bitlis	47,3	80,6	77,5	90,9
Iğdır	39,2	69,4	70,1	59,8
Şanlıurfa	42,2	79,9	49,8	90,5
Bingöl	53,9	85,4	76,6	91
Tunceli	39,2	72,3	51,6	38
Kars	36,8	56,8	47,4	61,8

Table 3.8: Provincial level total electoral support for AKP and pro-Kurdish parties (1995-2011)

In contrast, although regional level volatility index signals low level of shift in voters' preferences, provincial level data indicates a divergence in this pattern. While in some provinces such as Muş, Siirt, Bingöl, Ş.Urfa, Kars the volatility index in 2011 general elections is about 0.10, in other provinces such as Hakkari, Diyarbakır, Şırnak,

Mardin, Ağrı, Van, Batman, Bitlis the index is between 0.16-0.24.[18] This means that in the first group of provinces, the parties have been able to keep an important amount of the vote shares compared to 2007. The situation in the second group of provinces is different. The high level of volatility signifies the larger shifts in voters' preferences from one party to the other.

Provincial volatility index (1999-2011)			Provincial effective number of parties (1999-2011)			
	2002-1999	2007-2002	2011-2007	1999	2002	2007	2011
Hakkari	0,30	0,40	0,24	3,68	3,64	2,32	1,51
şırnak	0,26	0,29	0,21	6,77	3,85	2,83	1,76
Diyarbakır	0,20	0,31	0,16	3,77	2,84	2,55	2,06
Mardin	0,31	0,34	0,23	6,17	4,61	2,83	2,10
Batman	0,17	0,32	0,16	4,06	3,50	2,66	2,45
Van	0,19	0,30	0,17	5,02	4,02	2,54	2,44
Muş	0,19	0,36	0,09	5,96	4,79	2,74	2,61
Ağrı	0,21	0,48	0,21	5,56	5,40	2,17	2,40
Siirt	0,79	0,46	0,06	6,60	1,35	2,52	2,42
bitlis	0,34	0,47	0,20	6,77	5,90	2,47	2,38
Iğdır	0,18	0,36	0,21	5,78	5,62	3,57	3,37
Şanlıurfa	0,19	0,44	0,12	6,06	6,75	2,45	2,09
Bingöl	0,28	0,44	0,11	7,03	5,41	1,88	1,96
Tunceli	0,34	0,34	0,45	7,09	4,92	2,45	2,47
Kars	0,35	0,36	0,09	7,29	7,25	3,92	3,62
Istanbul	0,10	0,23	0,47	5,43	4,58	3,35	2,80

Table3.9 : Provincial level volatility index and effective number of parties (1999-2011)

When the electoral votes shares of AKP and BDP across provinces for the 2007 general, 2009 municipal and 2011 general elections is analyzed the changing nature of the vote shifts is interesting. Although the general decrease of AKP vote shares in the region for 2009 municipal and 2011 general elections compared to 2007 general elections is explained in terms the shift in AKP's position and policies on the Kurdish issue, the provincial level results are not similar to this trend. As it can be seen from table 1.4 illustrating provincial level AKP and BDP votes, three diverging trends are present. While in provinces such as Şırnak, Mardin, Tunceli AKP's vote shares decreased, it increased in the provinces of Muş, Ağrı, Siirt, Bitlis, Şanlıurfa, Bingöl, Kars and remained constant in Hakkari, Diyarbakır, Batman, Van, Iğdır.

A considerable number of studies use the margin of victory defined as the difference between the two main competitors as an indicators of degree of competition

---

[18]Iğdır and Tunceli have not been taken into consideration since the nature of the electoral competition is different. In Tunceli, where large number of citizens of the Alevi Islamic Sect resides, the votes shifted to CHP whose new president is from the same sect. In Iğdır MHP had a very stong candidate and managed to be the winner of the elections.

in a geographical unit. This may provide a reliable data to understand the diverging nature of competition between AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties at provincial level. Table 3.10 indicates the margin of victory for each of the provinces in the region. These values have been calculated simply by subtracting the pro-Kurdish parties' vote shares from AKP vote shares for each general election. When the number has positive signs, the pro-Kurdish parties are the winners in the province while the negative sign means AKP is the winner. Furthermore, as the number decreases so does the margin of victory that indicates an increasing competition. Although 2009 elections are municipal and expected to be shaped by local factors as well, it has been indicated to give an idea of the competition. According to the table, in provinces of Hakkari, Şırnak and Diyarbakır where BDP has traditionally been the winner, the 2007 was critical in the sense that the margin of victory between the two parties drastically decreased, where as in 2011 general elections it raised nearly at the 2002 level.   A similar pattern may be observed for the provinces of Mardin, Batman, Van, Ağrı and Bitlis where the ranking changed between the pro-Kurdish parties and AKP across elections. This is an expected outcome since AKP's stance towards the Kurdish issue was different in each of the elections. What is interesting is the nearly constant nature of the margin of victory in provinces of Şanlıurfa, Bingöl, Kars and Siirt[19] (except for 2002 in Siirt where AKP gained 87% of the votes) even in the polarized environment of the 2011 general elections. The decrease in the margin of victory in the provinces of Muş and Iğdır in 2011 general elections where BDP was well ahead AKP in 2002 general elections is an even more interesting outcome. This divergence in the nature of the competition may indicate the possible effect of more provincial level parameters that have affected AKP's mobilization strategy and voters preferences, independently from national level parameters. A diverging pattern can also be observed in the Western provinces of Mersin and Istanbul. Although margins of victory do not provide an appropriate tool to understand the shifts in votes since the change in AKP's electoral support may have different sources, volatility of BDP vote shares may provide a certain measure. When the party's votes shares are analyzed one can see the divergence between Istanbul where vote shares are stabilized to nearly 5.5 % and Mersin where BDP witnesses an increasing electoral support shifting from 9.5 in 2002 to 17.5% in 2011 (See table 3.4).

---

[19] This province deviates for the elections of 2002 where AKP gained nearly 85% of the votes. This is probably due to the circumstances specific to this election probably related with the candidate of AKP.

Margin of victory between the pro-Kurdish parties-AKP in each of the provinces (2002-2011)				
Province	2002	2007	2009	2011
Hakkari	38,3	22,7	65,1	63,3
Şırnak	31,9	24,9	11,1	51,7
Diyarbakır	40,1	6,1	34,3	29,5
Mardin	24,2	-5,3	-8,7	28,7
Batman	26,5	-7	23	14,4
Van	15	-20,6	14,3	9,3
Muş	21,2	7,2	13,3	1,5
Ağrı	17,4	-38,6	-7,2	-4,2
Siirt	-84,8	-9,3	3,6	-5,5
Bitlis	11,9	-37	-8,7	-10,5
Iğdır	26,2	11,6	9,1	3,2
Şanlıurfa	-3,6	-39,7	-28,8	-36,5
Bingöl	-9,5	-56,8	-9	-43,2
Tunceli	25,8	47,7	8,4	6,4
Kars	2,4	-25,6	-18	-23,4

Table 3.10: Margin of victory between the pro-Kurdish parties-AKP in each of the provinces (2002-2011)

A detailed analysis of the vote shares at regional and provincial level our argument that AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties are the major competitors in nearly all of the provinces in the region while other political parties have poor performance with the exception of Iğdır and Tunceli. Yet, although at regional level 2011 general elections seems to indicate stabilization in terms of volatility, this stabilization seems to be lower when provincial level votes shift are taken into account. Volatility can also be traced in geographical subunits as lowest as neighborhoods. Furthermore, margins of victory at provincial level also indicate changes in the nature of the electoral competition between the two parties across provinces and elections. When the direction of this change is analyzed, discrepancy with the programmatic positioning of AKP can be observed. This, in turn, supports our expectation that besides its programmatic positioning, part of this change can be explained by clientelistic mobilization conducted at a more local level. Yet, a more detailed analysis should be conducted to draw an empirically valid conclusion.

CHAPTER 4

RESEARCH DESIGN AND SELECTION OF THE CASES

The study aims at understanding the mobilization strategy of the party to consolidate or increase its votes among citizens of Kurdish origin and identify the factors affecting the implementation and effectiveness of this strategy. The previous section has identified the main hypothesis of the study. Within this respect, it has been suggested that clientelistic linkage provides an alternative source of accountability other than programmatic linkage for voters. Mobilization through the clientelistic network is expected to be especially important for consolidating or increasing ethnic votes in the elections of 2011 since the AKP positioned itself far from the Kurdish cause and closer to the ideological stand of MHP supporters.

It has been suggested that the clientelistic linkage is expected to be more effective when carried through a party organization which is in repeated interaction with the voters since it increases identification of different types of voters and assure voluntary compliance. Nevertheless, the mobilization of citizens of Kurdish origin is argued to be different from other ideologically potential swing voters due to the potential of violence among Kurdish voters and the weakness of inter-community relations. Within this respect, mobilization is argued to more effective when carried through activists of Kurdish origin since they can more easily identify potential swing voters. Then the study suggests that effectiveness of mobilization, measured in terms of support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin across the elections is based on the intensity of the interaction of the organization and the time of incorporation of activists of Kurdish origin into the network.

The second hypothesis concerns the explanation of why not all district branches carry such a strategy if the intensity of the interaction of the organization and the

incorporation of citizens of Kurdish origin is a more effective strategy. Basing its assumption that most activists are motivated by selective incentive, the study suggests that the internal structure of the party organization, which regulates the distribution of these incentives, affects the ability of the party to adopt the necessary strategies to increase its network. Even when it is electorally required to do so, centralized party organizations where power is concentrated at the higher levels of the organizational structure prevent the formation of a competitive rule of intra-party investment that motivate both present and new activists to work more actively for the party. On the other hand, the study suggest that such a change can only be carried when the district organization phases a critical juncture that for it to reformulate the horizontal and vertical power relations in the party.

Since the major aim of the study is to measure the effect of such a network on mobilizing citizens of Kurdish origin and identify factors affecting the formation of such a network at the neighborhood level, it uses the method of similarity to select the districts where deeper analysis will be conducted, so as to control factors that can independently affect the mobilization strategy. AKP should first have an incentive to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin. The party is expected to formulate such a strategy in districts where it would make a difference in the electoral outcomes. Then, the analysis should be conducted in districts where, AKP would have the incentive to mobilize these citizens. For the mobilization of citizens of Kurdish origin to be electorally efficient, first, there must be a considerable number of citizens of Kurdish origin that would affect the electoral outcome. Second, mobilization itself should have an effect on changing the preferences of the voters. Parties are expected to use material inducement when voters have lower socio-economic conditions since this makes them more sensitive to the provision of such an inducement. The amount of the competition the party faces is also expected to be effective in the decision of the district branches to increase their networks. Other studies mention the amount of resources available to the political parties as a factor affecting different abilities of the political parties to motivate their activists (Calvo & Murillo, 2004, Chandra, 2004). Within this respect, all districts in Istanbul will be classified in terms of the estimated percentages of Kurdish origin, socioeconomic indicators, electoral competition and amount of resources available to the party so as to be able to select similar districts that diverge in terms of the electoral support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin. The next step has been to classify

the districts according to the dependent variable of the study: the effectiveness of mobilization of voters of Kurdish origin through clientelistic linkage. In order to measure the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy the study uses the amount of support for BDP across elections in each of the districts.

Within this respect, this section will mainly focus on the classification of districts for case selection, according to the percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin, socio-economic characteristics of citizens of Kurdish origin, amount of municipal resources and electoral patterns at district level. The last part, explains the logic behind the selection of Sancaktepe, Beyoğlu and Beykoz on the bases of method of similarity to test the main hypothesis of the study.

4.7- Citizens of Kurdish origin in Istanbul: Size and Geographical Distribution across Districts

The first assumption of the study is that the number of the citizens of Kurdish origin living in the district is an important indicator in AKP's decision to formulate a mobilization strategy towards citizens of Kurdish origin. Furthermore, it also suggests that the strategy the party uses to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin will diverge from the rest of the population. Within this realm, the first step in the study is to classify the districts in Istanbul according to their percentages of residents of Kurdish origin.

The main difficulty in studying ethnic groups is the ambiguity in the definition of ethnicity (Sirkeci, 2000, p. 151). Increasing number of works highlights the social relativity of ethnic identities. According to these studies, how a person defines him/herself is not constant and may change in the course of time and space (Hechter, 1978, Nielson, 1985, p. 135; Schildkraut, 2005). Nevertheless, the mostly used criterion in the literature to define these groups has been objective and measurable components such as language (Hutchinson & Smith, 1993; İçduygu, Romano & Sirkeci, 1999, Sirkeci, 2000 ; Koç, Hancıoğlu & Cavlin, 2008, p. 448; Kalaycıoğlu, 2010, p. 34,). A similar definition has been adopted in this study where ethnicity is measured by reference to mother tongue and knowledge of any sect of the Kurdish language. The general perception of the study towards ethnic identities does not contradict the social character of ethnicity. Quite to the contrary, by evaluating why some Kurdish-speaking

citizens tend to switch their votes to ethnic parties while others do not, the study sustains the social relativity of ethnicity and aims at transposing some of its possible causes.

The major difficulty in the calculation the numbers of residents of Kurdish origin in each district is the lack of availability of this kind of data at national, municipal or district level. Although there are some considerable studies that have mostly used mathematical estimations, nearly all estimated the citizens of Kurdish origin at the national level. Another major characteristics of these studies is the diversity in their estimation ranging from 7 to 20 million (Özsoy et al, 19992; Bruinessen, 1998; Sirkeci 2000, Koç, Hancıoğlu & Cavlin, 2008, p. 449). Even if these studies merits attention they unfortunately do not provide a useful framework for the purpose of this study since it is impossible to extract the number of citizens of Kurdish origin at the district level. The only useful data is the estimations of Servet Mutlu (Mutlu, 1996) published in 1996 which provides information on the percentage of Kurdish-speaking residents in each provinces of Turkey. Mutlu bases his estimation on the national census conducted in 1935 and 1965, which provides the number of citizens of Kurdish origin according to their mother tongue. By using provincial natural population growth rates and migration rates, the study pictures the distribution of Kurdish-speaking citizens for the year of 1990 at the provincial level.

As highlighted in the previous chapters, the data indicates the concentration of the Kurdish-speaking citizens in provinces of East and Southeast region of Turkey. Unfortunately, the estimated percentage of Kurdish population of provinces such as Aksaray, Ardahan, Bartın, Batman, Bayburt, Düzce, Iğdır, Karabük, Karaman, Kilis, Kırıkkale, Osmaniye, Şırnak, Yalova which are provinces created after 1990, were not available in Mutlu's estimations. These missing values have been calculated by taking the mean of the Kurdish population percentages of the provinces from which they have administratively been separated.[20]

Since this data does not provide on its own the necessary information for estimating the percentages of citizens of Kurdish origin at district level an alternative strategy has been adopted. Data on the citizens' province of registry, which is available at district level in Turkish Statistical Institute website, have been used for such a purpose. The necessary data has been calculated combining Mutlu's estimations with

---

[20] These province have been formed after 1990. For more details on the calculation see Appendix B.

2010 district level data on the distribution of province registry of the citizens in each district. Within this respect, the estimated number of Kurdish residents in each district has been calculated by summing the number of citizens registered to each provinces multiplied by the estimated percentage of Kurdish citizens in that province. The formula used is

$$\sum_{i:1}^{n} Xi.Yi$$

In which "*n*" denotes each provinces in Turkey; "*Xi*" is the number of residents in the given district that are registered to "n" the province and "*Yi*" is the number of estimated percentage of Kurdish population in the "n" province. The estimated number of Kurdish-speaking residents of each districts of Istanbul is highlighted at table 4.2.

A possible criticism for this measurement can be the use of the data of 1990 for the estimated percentage of Kurdish citizens in each province instead of updating the data for 2009. This could have been a possible step since necessary variables for updating are statistically available. In fact, the 1990 data has intentionally been used in the study. The main logic derives from the fact that the province of registry of the residents in each district is expected to be slightly unchanged even if large amount of migration flow have occurred after 1990's from the Kurdish-speaking region. Thus, although the actual demographic characteristics are expected to have changed due to large migration flows, these changes are not expected to be followed by a similar shift in the registration records. This expectation is due to the fact that in Turkey, most residents do not transfer their registration records to the provinces they migrate, preferring to remain registered to their hometown province. As a result the 1990 data is expected to be a more accurate variable of measurement.

Table 4.1 shows the estimated percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin, which is the result of the division of the estimated numbers of Kurdish citizens by the total population of each district in Istanbul. Concerning the calculations computed several remarks have to be made. First, in each district large numbers of citizens are registered to the province of Istanbul. These citizens are mostly the ones whose hometown origin is Istanbul since transfer of registration records is low among immigrants. Even if some citizens of Kurdish origin have the possibility to have transferred their records, it is impossible to distinguish them in that category. Furthermore, even if Mutlu found 8% of citizens of Kurdish origin residing in Istanbul, there is no information on which

province these citizens are registered to Istanbul or to their hometown origin. This creates the possibility of miscalculating the number of citizens of Kurdish origin especially in districts with high residents registered to Istanbul. In order to overcome this shortcoming the estimated number of citizens of Kurdish has been calculated in two different manners. First, a normal calculation has been conducted; then, the percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin living in Istanbul has been excluded from the calculation for each district. The first and second columns depict the estimated percentage of Kurdish citizens including and excluding the residents whose province of registry is Istanbul respectively for each district. Results especially diverge for districts with low percentages of estimated Kurdish population like Çatalca, Şile, Beşiktaş or Kadıköy. In contrast for districts with high percentages such Sultanbeyli, Sancaktepe, Küçükçekmece, Esenler or Beyoğlu the difference is less than 1%. Since the study will mainly focus on the districts with higher percentages of citizens of Kurdish origin, the possibility of over-estimation greatly decreases, strengthening the significance of the conducted estimations. Yet, at the cost of under-estimating the percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin, the study will take into account the second column for the classification of the districts.

Furthermore, the calculation is based on the assumption that immigrants reflect the demographic composition of their provinces of origin in terms of the shares of the citizens of Kurdish origin in the population. For example, the immigrants in each district from Bingöl which has 76.63% of its population from Kurdish origin are assumed to have the same demographic composition. In reality, the immigration flows from the region beginning with 1990s, witnesses an over representation of the citizens of Kurdish origin. As a result, the actual number of these residents in each district may be higher than the estimated ones. Second, it is important to note that this calculation does not provide a precise number of the residents of Kurdish origin, but it provides an objective base for an accurate comparison and classification of the districts in terms of their residing citizens of Kurdish origin which is a sufficient condition for the purpose of the study.

% Estimation of citizens of Kurdish origin in each district for 2009					
District	Normal Estimation	Ist. %0	District	Normal Estimation	Ist. %0
Çatalca	9,58	4,02	**Ist. Mean**	**13,10**	**11,88**
Beykoz	6,99	4,33	Ümraniye	13,21	12,19
Şile	9,51	4,59	Tuzla	13,76	12,89
Beşiktaş	8,62	5,66	Avcılar	14,47	13,12
Kadıköy	9,38	6,54	G.osmanpaşa	15,53	14,14
B.paşa	9,20	7,03	Beyoğlu	15,68	14,38
Sarıyer	9,09	7,31	K.çekmece	15,73	14,73
B.çekmece	10,07	8,01	Arnavutköy	16,35	15,34
Bakırköy	11,34	8,30	Sancaktepe	16,00	15,58
Silivri	11,80	8,43	Bahçelievler	17,12	16,09
Şişli	10,61	8,70	Fatih	18,32	16,29
Üsküdar	10,49	8,77	Esenler	16,94	16,38
Eyüp	11,13	9,35	Güngören	18,09	17,01
Ataşehir	10,63	9,56	Esenyurt	17,85	17,17
Maltepe	11,05	9,59	Bağcılar	18,76	18,21
Pendik	10,61	9,80	Sultangazi	18,91	18,41
Adalar	13,29	9,87	Başakşehir	19,32	18,47
Çekmeköy	11,51	10,18	Z.burnu	20,14	18,54
Beylikdüzü	12,82	11,01	Sultanbeyli	20,25	20,01
Kağıthane	12,24	11,38			
Kartal	13,13	11,83			

Table 4.1: Estimated percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin in the districts of Istanbul for 2009

According to the calculations, approximately 11% of Istanbul's population is from Kurdish origin. This corresponds to a population of 1,470 million out of 12.867 million for the year of 2009. The results indicates diversity in terms of residents of Kurdish origin in each districts ranging from 4% to 20 % and concentrating in certain districts such as Gaziosmanpaşa, Beyoğlu, Küçükçekmece, Arnavutköy, Sancaktepe, Bahçelievler, Fatih, Esenler, Güngören, Esenyurt, Bağcılar, Sultangazi, Başakşehir, Zeytinburnu and Sultanbeyli having between 14-20% of residents of Kurdish origin. Where as in districts such as Çatalca, Beykoz, Şile, Beşiktaş their percentage is below 6%. In fact, the identified districts with higher number of citizens of Kurdish origin is sustained by the work of Çelik who states districts such as Ümraniye, Bağcılar, Sultanbeyli, Gaziosmanpaşa, Küçükçekmece, Sarıyer and Beyoğlu as districts where large number of Kurdish citizens have immigrated after 1990s (Çelik, 2002, p:116). It is important to note that the districts of Arnavutköy, Sancaktepe, Esenyurt, Sultangazi, Başakşehir are absent in Çelik's work. Yet, the main reason is the establishment of these districts in 2008 after her study. Similarly, the Kurdish population of Fatih has increased after it has unified with Eminönü in 2008. Within this respect, the study expects AKP's district branches to try to mobilize the citizens of Kurdish origin

111

especially in the first group of the districts where estimated percentages of citizens of Kurdish origin is high. Although the data gives a useful account of the geographical dispersion of the citizens of Kurdish origin across districts, how this relates to socio-economic characteristics should also be evaluated. This is conducted in the next section.

4.8- Socio-economic Indicators of the Districts

Studies suggest that both ideological and material mobilization is more effective among voters with low socioeconomic conditions. Ideologically mobilization is expected to be important to convince confused voters unable to discern between the different positions of the political parties on different issues due to the decreasing differences in political parties' ideological appeals, decreasing party identification, inability to understand complex messages the political parties give, or simply lack of interest in politics. These mobilization efforts are expected to be higher especially among voters with low socio-economic status as these messages are especially less understood among them (Verba et al, 1995)

Similarly, materially, studies suggest that it is a more efficient strategy for political parties to distribute selective incentives to groups with lower socio-economic conditions since they are more sensitive to these kind of incentives and cheaper to persuade (Molinar and Weldon, 1994, Graham and Kane, 1998, Schady, 2000; Diaz-Cayeros and Magaloni, 2003; Stokes, 2007; Penfold-Becerra, 2007). Furthermore, the literature suggests that, citizens of Kurdish origin with lower socio-economic condition tend to support more BDP (Sarıgil's, 2010). Then, socio-economic indicators may lead to diverging electoral outcomes.

Generally, the Turkish literature has focused on variables such as income, education, percentage of drinking water from pipes, sanitation conditions, number of people per sleeping room, availability of durable consumer goods to measure individual level socio-economic indicators (Sarıgil, 2010, p. 540; İçduygu, Romano & Sirkeci, 1999, p. 1005). Separately, a large number of variables such as per-capita income, illiteracy rate, infant mortality rate, fertility rates, life of expectancy, number of people per specialist doctor have been used as a measure of geographical level socio-economic

indicators. (Çarkoğlu, 2002, p. 150, İçduygu, Romano & Sirkeci,1999; p. 1002, poverty indicator). The only publicly available data on socio-economic indicators at the district level is the illiteracy rate, which is available at the Turkish Statistical Institute database on population and demography for the year of 2009. Yet, illiteracy rate should provide accurate information on the socio-economic indicators in geographical terms.

Illiteracy rates for each district (%)			
District	%	District	%
Beşiktaş	0,0153	Mean	0,0507
Bakırköy	0,0169	Pendik	0,0515
Kadıköy	0,0183	Ümraniye	0,0515
Beylikdüzü	0,0229	Fatih	0,0529
Maltepe	0,0330	Beykoz	0,0539
B.çekmece	0,0342	Başakşehir	0,0551
Adalar	0,0348	Şile	0,0565
Silivri	0,0350	Çekmeköy	0,0569
Üsküdar	0,0358	K.çekmece	0,0578
Çatalca	0,0367	Zeytinburnu	0,0589
Sarıyer	0,0372	G.paşa	0,0622
Şişli	0,0380	Esenyurt	0,0684
Avcılar	0,0433	Bağcılar	0,0689
B.paşa	0,0439	Beyoğlu	0,0702
Tuzla	0,0471	Esenler	0,0730
Eyüp	0,0477	Sultangazi	0,0748
Ataşehir	0,0479	Sancaktepe	0,0813
Güngören	0,0483	Arnavutköy	0,0951
Kağıthane	0,0483	Sultanbeyli	0,1056
Kartal	0,0498		
Bahçelievler	0,0499		

Table 4.2: Illiteracy rates in the districts of Istanbul for 2009

Since the study's main focus is on citizens who are eligible to vote, which is the age of 18 in Turkey, only citizens older than 18 have been included in the measurement. Furthermore, missing values in the data on the level of education of the residents has also been excluded from the calculations. Table 4.2 shows the illiteracy rate of each district in Istanbul. While the overall illiteracy rate for Istanbul is 0.05%, the data illustrates a great variation in the distribution of the districts in terms of illiteracy rate ranging from 0,01% to 0,1 %. Within this respect, one can observe that 21 district are below the average with district such as Beşiktaş, Bakırköy and Kadıköy having an average close to 0,01% while 10 districts are over the average with districts such as Beyoğlu, Sancaktepe, Arnavutköy, Sultanbeyli with an average close to 0,1%.

113

Estimated share of citizens of Kurdish origin VS Illiteracy rate					
District	est. Kurd	Illiteracy*	District	est. Kurd	Illiteracy*
Çatalca	4,02	0,0367	**Ist. Mean**	**11,88**	**0,0507**
Beykoz	4,33	0,0539	Ümraniye	12,19	0,0515
Şile	4,59	0,0565	Tuzla	12,89	0,0471
Beşiktaş	5,66	0,0153	Avcılar	13,12	0,0433
Kadıköy	6,54	0,0183	G.osmanpaşa	14,14	0,0622
B.paşa	7,03	0,0439	Beyoğlu	14,38	0,0702
Sarıyer	7,31	0,0372	K.çekmece	14,73	0,0578
B.çekmece	8,01	0,0342	Arnavutköy	15,34	0,0951
Bakırköy	8,30	0,0169	Sancaktepe	15,58	0,0813
Silivri	8,43	0,0350	Bahçelievler	16,09	0,0499
Şişli	8,70	0,0380	Fatih	16,29	0,0529
Üsküdar	8,77	0,0358	Esenler	16,38	0,0730
Eyüp	9,35	0,0477	Güngören	17,01	0,0483
Ataşehir	9,56	0,0479	Esenyurt	17,17	0,0684
Maltepe	9,59	0,0330	Bağcılar	18,21	0,0689
Pendik	9,80	0,0515	Sultangazi	18,41	0,0748
Adalar	9,87	0,0348	Başakşehir	18,47	0,0551
Çekmeköy	10,18	0,0569	Z.burnu	18,54	0,0589
Beylikdüzü	11,01	0,0229	Sultanbeyli	20,01	0,1056
Kağıthane	11,38	0,0483			
Kartal	11,83	0,0498			

*Colored districts are the ones above the average illiteracy rate for Istanbul

Table 4.3: Estimated share of citizens of Kurdish origin vs illiteracy rate in districts of Istanbul for 2009.

When estimated percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin and illiteracy rate at district level is analyzed, the aggregate results support the general suggestion that citizens of Kurdish origin reside in socioeconomically worse conditions. As table 4.3 displays, 14 of the districts having an estimated Kurdish population over the Istanbul average are among districts with higher illiteracy rate with the exception of Tuzla, Avcılar, Bahçelievler and Güngören. Similarly only 4 districts, namely Beykoz, Şile, Pendik and Çekmeköy with low percentage of estimated Kurdish population are above the Istanbul average in terms the illiteracy rates. Citizens of Kurdish origin are very low in districts with very high socio-economic indicators such Beşiktaş, Kadıköy, Bakıköy, Sarıyer. This supports previous studies' findings on the high correlation between socio-economic indicators and density of residents of Kurdish origin at district level.

A detailed analysis of the districts highly populated with citizens of Kurdish origin demonstrates two different patterns in terms of socioeconomic indicators. While in districts such as Sultanbeyli, Sultangazi, Esenler, Sancaktepe, Arnavutköy, Beyoğlu illiteracy rate is considerably high, in districts such as Zeytinburnu, Başakşehir, Fatih,

114

Güngören, Bahçelievler Küçükçekmece, Tuzla, Avcılar, Ümraniye illiteracy rate is very close to the Istanbul mean.

Two kinds of explanation can be given to this situation. First, it can be suggested that citizens of Kurdish origin in the first groups are in worse conditions than their co-ethnic in the second group. As an alternative, this result can be linked to the presence of an inequality in terms of the conditions of the residents in the districts. Such a situation could have been tested with neighborhood level data but unfortunately, there is no available quantitative data to test the socio-economic differences across neighborhoods. Indepth interviews conducted with AKP representatives and personal observations during visits performed to these districts support the later explanation. In the districts such as Başakşehir, Küçükçekmece, Bahçelievler, Zeytinburnu, less in Beyoğlu and Fatih, there is a considerable socio-economic gap between neighborhoods, which disfavors especially the ones where citizens of Kurdish origin reside. In contrast, in districts such as Sancaktepe, Sultanbeyli, Esenler, which are formed by immigrants, the socio-economic gap between neighborhoods is less evident. Yet, such variation is not observable within the neighborhoods in neither of the districts. On the overall, these observations strengthen the study's expectation that citizens of Kurdish origin have similar socioeconomic conditions in these districts. After having evaluated the relationship between socio-economic indicators and percentage of estimated citizens of Kurdish origin at district level, the next step of the study is to compare the district according to the municipal resources that are the party's district branch disposal.

4.9- Municipal Resources of the Districts:

The study mainly focuses on the use of state resources as a mean to increase political support. Within this respect, the literature suggests that the amount of the resources at the party's disposal is effective in increasing electoral support. In Turkey, important units where state resources are distributed at most local level are district municipalities. For AKP district branches to have access to these resources, control of the municipality by a co-partisan is a necessity. Control of the municipality is an important factor independently affecting the party's strategy on distribution since it

determines the amount of resource available to the party. As a result, the district level mobilization strategy of AKP towards citizens of Kurdish origin may heavily be influenced by its control over the municipality and amount of resources at the latter's disposal.

District	2009 Mun. Incum.	2010 Mun. Budget	2010 Size of the District	Mun. Budget/ Pop.	District	2009 Mun. Incum.	2010 Mun. Budget	2010 Size of the District	Mun. Budget/ Pop.
Çatalca	CHP		62.001		Ümraniye	AKP	168.911.276	603.431	279,92
Beykoz	AKP	89.700.000	246.136	364,43	Tuzla	AKP	79.073.361	185.819	425,54
Şile	AKP	14.608.370	28.119	519,52	Avcılar	CHP		364.682	
beşiktaş	CHP		184.390		G.osmanpaşa	AKP	83.207.260	474.259	175,45
Kadıköy	CHP		532.835		Beyoğlu	AKP	98.680.381	248.084	397,77
B.paşa	AKP	75.579.804	269.481	280,46	K.çekmece	AKP	200.247.472	695.988	287,72
Sarıyer	CHP		280.802		Arnavutköy	AKP	61.964.995	188.011	329,58
B.çekmece	CHP		182.017		Sancaktepe	AKP	110.213.557	256.442	429,78
bakırköy	CHP		219.145		Bahçelievler	AKP	103.393.264	590.063	175,22
Silivri	CHP		138.797		Fatih	AKP	166.367.326	431.147	385,87
Şişli	DSP		317.337		Esenler**	AKP	98.500.000	461.073	213,63
Üsküdar	AKP	166.831.060	526.947	316,60	Güngören	AKP		309.624	
Eyüp	AKP	108.128.277	338.329	319,60	Esenyurt	AKP		446.777	
Ataşehir	CHP	79.073.361	375.208	210,75	Bağcılar	AKP	173.000.882	738.809	234,16
Maltepe	CHP		438.257		Sultangazi *	AKP	104.507.510	468.274	223,18
Pendik	AKP	128.254.087	585.196	219,16	Başakşehir*	AKP	62.319.811	248.467	250,82
adalar	CHP		14.221		Z.burnu	AKP	99.286.863	292.430	339,52
Çekmeköy	AKP	62.250.832	168.438	369,58	Sultanbeyli	AKP	61.779.467	291.063	212,25
Beylikdüzü	AKP	87.720.180	204.873	428,17					
Kağıthane	AKP	97.028.939	416.515	232,95	Ist. District mean		2580628335	9.764.801	264,28
Kartal	CHP		432.199						

Table 4.4: District level municipal resources (2010)
*2011 realized budget has been taken since 2010 was not available
**The expected budget has been taken the realized budget was not available
***Budget data was not available for these districts

Table 4.4 shows municipal incumbency after the municipal elections of 2009; the realized budget population size and budget share per citizens of each municipality governed by AKP for the year of 2010. The ranking of the districts have been conducted according to their estimated percentages of citizens of Kurdish origin. Within this respect, the districts in the left group of columns are below while the districts in the right group of columns are above the Istanbul average in terms of estimated percentages of Kurdish citizens. Furthermore, grey colored districts have an illiteracy rate above the Istanbul average. The district municipalities governed by other parties have been excluded since one should probably observe no cooperation between CHP governed municipalities of Beşiktaş, Çatalca, Kadıköy or DSP governed Şişli and AKP district branches. AKP governs 27 out of 39 municipalities in Istanbul. While the number of

116

municipalities with an illiteracy rate lower than Istanbul average governed by AKP is 10, this amount is 17 for the municipalities with higher illiteracy rate. Furthermore, as it can be seen from the table, all municipal districts, except Avcılar, with a higher percentage of Kurdish citizens were controlled by AKP during the period between 2009 and 2011.

Among these districts, only 3, namely, Tuzla, Bahçelievler and Güngören have an illiteracy rate lower than the Istanbul average. The average of municipal resource per citizen for AKP governed municipalities of Istanbul is 264.28 Turkish Lira. 15 municipalities have municipal budget per citizen above this average. 8 of the municipalities, namely Ümraniye, Tuzla, Beyoğlu, K.Çekmece, Arnavutköy, Sancaktepe, Fatih, Zeytinburnu have number of Kurdish citizens higher than Istanbul average. In the overall, there is a considerably high variety in the municipal budget per citizens of the districts with higher percentages of citizens of Kurdish origin and illiteracy rate ranging from 279,92 for Ümraniye and 429,78 for Sancaktepe. This divergence may have an effect on the success of the mobilization of the citizens of Kurdish origin by AKP's district branch. The next section will be the evaluation of the districts' electoral characteristics and its possible relationship with independent variables defined by the study.

4.10- Degree of Electoral Competition and Population Size

Who a political party targets has been a major debated issue in the political science literature on the distribution of selective incentive. The debate has developed around whether political parties target core, swing or opposition voters. Studies have independently found either core or swing voters to be targeted by political parties (Cox and McCubbins, 1986; Lindbeck and Weibull, 1987; Dixit and Londregan, 1996; Graham and Kane, 1998; Case, 2001; Matz Dahlberg and Eva Johanssen, 2002; Weitz-Shapiro, 2006; Stockes, 2007; Tavits, 2009,). Incorporating the degree of competition in their analysis, a considerable number of studies have highlighted that the degree of competition a political party faces affects who the party targets (Molinar and Weldon, 1994; Schady, 2000; Estéves, Magaloni and Diaz-Cayeros, 2001; Alberto Diaz-Cayeros

and Beatriz Magaloni, 2003; Diaz-Cayero, 2008). Within this respect, parties tend to use funds first to reward their supporters but when these supporters are not large enough to win an election, parties will also target swing voters. Within this respect, a district that has strong support may not target citizens of Kurdish origin even if such a strategy may have an effective outcome. As a result, in districts where the party's support is safe, shift in electoral preferences may not be due to the party's inability but reluctance to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin. The study controls such a possibility by selecting districts where AKP faces relatively more competition.

District	2009 Mun. Incub.	Mu	2010 Size of the District	2007 AKP vote Shares	2007 Marg. of votes	District	2009 Mun. Incub.		2010 Size of the District	2007 AKP vote Shares	2007 Marg. of votes
Çatalca	CHP	0,00	62.001	27,13	-1,65	Ümraniye	AKP	279,92	603.431	56,61	37,29
Beykoz	AKP	364,43	246.136	47,86	27,60	Tuzla	AKP	425,54	185.819	45,92	19,86
Şile	AKP	519,52	28.119	43,33	24,26	Avcılar	CHP	0,00	364.682	38,33	3,81
beşiktaş	CHP	0,00	184.390	18,62	-35,30	G.osmanpaşa	AKP	175,45	474.259	53,30	37,05
Kadıköy	CHP	0,00	532.835	22,13	-31,25	Beyoğlu	AKP	397,77	248.084	47,56	24,79
B.paşa	AKP	280,46	269.481	50,37	32,88	K.çekmece	AKP	287,72	695.988	43,07	14,80
Sarıyer	CHP	0,00	280.802	36,97	2,45	Arnavutköy	AKP	329,58	188.011	55,14	45,38
B.çekmece	CHP	0,00	182.017	41,46	11,12	Sancaktepe	AKP	429,78	256.442	51,62	26,44
bakırköy	CHP	0,00	219.145	22,56	-27,06	Bahçelievler	AKP	175,22	590.063	48,47	23,07
Silivri	CHP	0,00	138.797	31,29	-2,08	Fatih	AKP	385,87	431.147	46,93	24,87
Şişli	DSP	0,00	317.337	32,05	-6,62	Esenler**	AKP	213,63	461.072	60,53	47,06
Üsküdar	AKP	316,60	526.947	46,26	18,16	Güngören	AKP	0,00	309.624	50,90	28,81
Eyüp	AKP	319,60	338.329	45,42	19,22	Esenyurt	AKP	0,00	446.777	45,50	18,75
Ataşehir	CHP	210,75	375.208	43,22	10,99	Bağcılar	AKP	234,16	738.809	56,98	41,08
Maltepe	CHP	0,00	438.257	38,24	0,98	Sultangazi *	AKP	223,18	468.274	57,11	37,53
Pendik	AKP	219,16	585.196	51,96	31,26	Başakşehir*	AKP	250,82	248.467	46,90	23,62
adalar	CHP	0,00	14.221	23,96	-18,13	Z.burnu	AKP	339,52	292.430	46,93	27,74
Çekmeköy	AKP	369,58	168.438	49,22	27,22	Sultanbeyli	AKP	212,25	291.063	67,16	59,64
Beylikdüzü	AKP	428,17	204.873	40,70	9,19						
Kağıthane	AKP	232,95	416.515	52,96	33,22	Ist. District mean		264,28	339.889	49,4	
Kartal	CHP	0,00	432.199	41,82	10,34						

Table 4.5: Classification of the districts according to control variables

The literature have measured the degree of competition in several ways such as the vote shares of a party in a specific election (Anne Case, 2001; Penfold-Becerra's, 2007), the margin of victory (Denemark, 2000; Rocha-Menocal, 2001; Weitz-Shapiro, 2006) and volatility of its votes shares across elections (Diaz-Cayeros, Magaloni and Weingast, 2000, Schady, 2000; Estéves, Magaloni and Diaz-Cayeros, 2001;). This study has classified the districts according to the first and second criteria (see table 4.5) since the steady increase of AKP vote shares across elections prevent us to use the volatility as a sign of competition. 2007 general elections have been used for measurement, since

the party's strategy before 2011 general elections is expected to be influenced by these results. Yet, the margin of victory for each election seems to be highly related with AKP's vote shares, which makes the use of either of the variables appropriate for comparison. As it can be seen from table 4.5, the degree of competition the party faces varies greatly even in the districts municipally governed by AKP. While in districts like Sultanbeyli, Esenler support for the party is above 60%, in districts such as Şile, Beykoz, Tuzla, Küçükçekmece the party's support is below 52% for 2007. The party's strategy to target potential swing voters is not expected to be identical in the two groups of the districts.

Population size may affect the percentages of voters the party reaches via its partisan network. This is why the study has preferred to select districts whose sizes are relatively at average and similar to each other. Third column of 4.5 indicates the population size of the district for the year of 2010. As it can be seen from the data there is great divergence among districts in terms the population size they have. The District of Adalar is the smallest with a population size of 14.221, while Bağcılar has the largest with population size of 738.809.

4.11- Effectiveness of the Mobilization Strategy

Recall that most of the studies evaluate the nature of the competition between AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties in terms of the positioning of AKP on the Kurdish issue. Yet, Chapter 2 has demonstrated that there is a divergence in more micro level vote shifts from one party to the other across elections, which is hardly explained by the programmatic positioning. This study suggests that the mobilization of the voters of Kurdish origin by AKP through clientelistic linkage may explain divergence in the shifts in the electoral preferences of voters of Kurdish origin. Under such conditions, shifts in electoral preferences should be a function of the type of the mobilization strategy. As a result, divergence in the shift in the support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin across elections is used as a proxy to measure the effectiveness of clientelistic mobilization. The objective of this section is to identify first, the overall support of each party among citizens of Kurdish origin. The second and more important

aim is to classify the districts according to their divergence in terms of support for the pro-Kurdish parties across elections.

A major difficulty in identifying support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin derives from the fact that these citizens to do not constitute the entire population of the districts. Although, support for pro-Kurdish parties among citizens of Kurdish origin can be analyzed by their vote shares, vote shifts from one party to the other are more difficult to be observed. Nevertheless, this section mainly focuses on change in BDP's vote shares to understand the changing nature of the competition between the two parties. Such a strategy seems logical since previous chapters have successfully showed that AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties take nearly the entire of the votes while other parties performs very poorly in the Kurdish populated region. As a result, an increase in the support for pro-Kurdish parties is interpreted as a decrease in AKP's support among citizens of Kurdish origin or vice versa. One objection to such an assumption, may derive from the possible fact that change in the vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties may not result from change in AKP's support among citizens of Kurdish origin but change in number of these citizens in given districts from one election to the other. Nevertheless, it will be demonstrated in the next chapters that such kind of a situation is not present in the selected districts.

The third group and fourth group of column of Table 4.5 demonstrates the electoral vote shares of AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties in each district for 2011, 2009, 2007, 2002 and 1999 general elections. Some important notes should be made on the calculation and interpretation of the data before evaluating the results. Although the 2009 elections are municipal, they have also been included in the analysis. Given the fact that the pro-Kurdish party, DTP was not in a position to win the municipality in any of these districts, support for the party in these elections may be introduced as a reaction of ideologically motivated voters to AKP. Additionally, the election results of 1999 have been added only for reference and have not been included in the analysis since it was FP and not AKP, which was established only in 2001, who ran in the elections.

Similarly, the name of the pro-Kurdish parties has changed across elections due to their closure by the constitutional Court. Although legally, it is not proclaimed, these parties are perceived to be each other's successors. Within this respect, the pro-Kurdish party entered the 1999 general elections as DEP, the 2002 general elections as HADEP

and the 2007 general elections as DTP. With the closure of DTP in December 2009 the party has been reestablished under the name of BDP.

It has been indicated in the previous chapters that BDP entered the 2007 and 2011 general elections via independent deputy candidates. For the 2007 general elections, these candidates were Ufuk Uras for the first electoral region, Erbaş Doğan for the second electoral region and Sebahat Tuncel for the third electoral region. For 2011 general Elections deputy candidates were Sabahat Tuncel for the first electoral region, Sırrı Süreyya Önder for the second region and Abdullah Levent Tüzel for the third electoral region. As a result, the strategy used to calculate support for the pro-Kurdish parties was as follows: the vote shares of each independent deputy candidates in the electoral regions of Istanbul that the parties have declared support have been taken as the party's vote shares.[21]

Third, vote shares of AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties have been recalculated for certain districts due to changes in their administrative frontiers. Ataşehir, Başakşehir, Beylikdüzü, Çekmeköy, Esenyurt, Sancaktepe and Sultangazi became legally districts while Eminönü was unified with Fatih in 2008; so their vote shares for 1999, 2002 and 2007 general elections have been re-calculated based on the Act on the Reorganization of the Administrative Borders of the Districts.[22] This was accompanied by a parallel recalculation for the vote shares of districts such as Eyüp, Fatih, Gaziosmanpaşa, Kadıköy, Kartal, Kağıthane, Küçükçekmece, Ümraniye from which the new districts have been administratively separated.[23] The calculation of the electoral results has been difficult for some of the districts. In most districts division has been carried on neighborhood level whose electoral results are publicly available but in few instances, neighborhoods have been divided into two, or some streets have been separated from a neighborhood and tied to another one. It has been impossible to conduct the identical

---

[21]Although data from the Turkish Statistical Institute does not differentiate the vote shares among independent deputy candidates , their separate vote numbers in each polling stations can be find in the website of the High electoral Board for 2007 and 2011 general elections. The study has used the second data in order to have the precise vote shares of BDP's deputy candidates.

[22] For detail on the act 5747 accepted on 6 march 2008 and the administrative frontiers of the districts see Apendix 3. This act is available at http://www.tbmm.gov.tr/kanunlar/k5747.html (consulted on 08.11.2010).

[23]Detailed data at neighborhood level on 2011, 2007, 2002 and 1999 general elections results is available at the websites of YSK (High Electoral Board) and TUİK (Turkish Statistics Institute).

recalculation for the data. The followed strategy was to divide the vote shares for each party or neglect such a separation in reorganizations where it was minor.

The variation in the estimated percentage of Kurdish citizens makes the comparison of AKP versus BDP support among citizens of Kurdish origin within each district difficult. To be able to make a systemic account of the electoral results, the percentage of BDP support among the citizens of Kurdish origin for each district has been calculated for the elections of 2011, 2009, 2007, 2002 and 1999.[24] The first group of columns of table 4.6 indicates the percentage of BDP support among the estimated percentage of Kurdish citizens in each district for the elections of 2011, 2009, 2007, 2002 and 1999.

Although the evaluation of the outcomes of the elections mostly focuses on the districts that are above the average in terms of percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin a few observations should be highlighted for the other districts. As it can be seen from table 4.6, the high increase in BDP votes in districts such as Kadıköy, Şile, Ataşehir or Adalar with low numbers of Kurdish citizens for the elections for 2007 general elections, Beşiktaş and Şişli in 2011 is possibly due to the candidacy of Ufuk Uras and Sırrı Süreyya Önder in the region who were also popular among non-Kurdish citizens. These kinds of variations should not be taken into consideration.

When support for pro-Kurdish parties in each district is analyzed two important trends indicating the nature of the competition between the two parties can be observed. The first one is the difference in the support for pro-Kurdish parties and estimated percentage of Kurdish citizens within each district, which indicates the magnitude of the estimated electoral support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin. The second one concerns the divergence of the districts in terms of shifting support for the pro-Kurdish parties across elections.

Given the fact that the competition for the electoral support of citizens of Kurdish origin is between AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties, this means that in all districts there is a considerable number of citizens of Kurdish origin that vote for AKP. Furthermore, although this trend can be observed for all the districts, support for pro-Kurdish parties among citizens of Kurdish origin greatly diverges across districts for each of the

---

[24] The Formula used is: *BDPi / EPKSi*100* for each district where *BDPi* is BDP's electoral vote share for district *i and EPKSi* is the estimated number of Kurdish citizens for district *i.*

elections. In districts such as Ümraniye, Tuzla, Avcılar, Fatih, Güngören, Bahçelievler their support among citizens of Kurdish origin is nearly 30% while this support

		BDP 2011/ est. Kurd (%)	DTP 2009 /est Kurd. (%)	DTP 2007/ est. Kurd (%)	DEHAP 2002/ est. Kurd (%)	HADEP 1999/ est. Kurd (%)	AKP * (%)					Pro-Kurdish Parties (%)				
District	est. Kurd (%)						2011	2009	2007	2002	1999*	2011	2009	2007	2002	1999
Çatalca	4,02	21,65	0,00	11,87	40,51	34,92	38,28	28,60	27,13	16,43	7,42	0,87	0,00	0,48	1,63	1,40
Beykoz	4,33	44,16	30,05	53,63	76,79	55,62	52,60	37,30	47,86	42,32	22,51	1,91	1,30	2,32	3,32	2,41
Şile	4,59	39,90	0,00	149,92	42,67	35,90	52,17	50,90	43,33	33,48	12,74	1,83	0,00	6,88	1,96	1,65
Beşiktaş	5,66	39,41	0,00	4,22	27,76	15,43	20,28	15,80	18,62	13,95	7,35	2,23	0,00	0,24	1,57	0,87
Kadıköy	6,54	28,45	1,53	54,79	31,41	19,16	24,54	21,90	22,13	17,44	9,23	1,86	0,10	3,58	2,05	1,25
B.paşa	7,03	26,61	24,19	22,44	31,46	27,30	54,31	44,50	50,37	43,42	24,85	1,87	1,70	1,58	2,21	1,92
Sarıyer	7,31	33,94	20,53	13,37	53,53	40,02	40,32	31,80	36,97	32,81	18,16	2,48	1,50	0,98	3,91	2,92
B.çekmece	8,01	26,85	7,49	21,61	60,51	36,42	45,19	43,80	41,46	31,44	12,74	2,15	0,60	1,73	4,84	2,92
Bakırköy	8,30	20,12	27,71	15,92	21,01	14,98	26,13	23,80	22,56	15,82	7,15	1,67	2,30	1,32	1,74	1,24
Silivri	8,43	35,96	48,66	20,48	41,64	37,22	41,35	40,00	31,29	18,93	8,35	3,03	4,10	1,73	3,51	3,14
Şişli	8,70	44,95	22,99	15,43	30,12	18,96	35,77	18,70	32,05	25,20	12,86	3,91	2,00	1,34	2,62	1,65
Üsküdar	8,77	22,46	17,10	34,90	39,97	28,34	49,93	37,90	46,26	39,10	22,80	1,97	1,50	3,06	3,51	2,49
Eyüp	9,35	29,74	24,60	21,57	40,40	28,85	48,66	37,20	45,42	39,01	23,61	2,78	2,30	2,02	3,78	2,70
Ataşehir	9,56	30,45	30,35	50,83	63,88	50,05	45,59	39,70	43,22	37,22	22,22	2,91	2,90	4,86	6,10	4,78
Maltepe	9,59	22,20	21,89	33,47	43,53	31,27	42,12	37,90	38,24	33,22	17,39	2,13	2,10	3,21	4,18	3,00
Pendik	9,80	29,59	27,55	28,21	49,20	37,95	56,39	43,30	51,96	44,81	25,41	2,90	2,70	2,76	4,82	3,72
adalar	9,87	42,36	0,00	83,05	31,52	20,08	32,55	36,00	23,96	16,37	7,08	4,18	0,00	8,20	3,11	1,98
Çekmeköy	10,18	36,13	35,35	31,56	74,01	61,53	53,81	43,40	49,22	43,61	24,91	3,68	3,60	3,21	7,54	6,27
Beylikdüzü	11,01	23,52	16,35	17,28	37,13	31,55	43,78	32,10	40,70	30,80	13,93	2,59	1,80	1,90	4,09	3,47
Kağıthane	11,38	33,58	33,40	23,09	42,95	30,32	55,08	43,10	52,96	43,62	25,16	3,82	3,80	2,63	4,89	3,45
Kartal	11,83	26,29	26,20	34,88	45,37	31,88	45,51	37,90	41,82	35,20	20,52	3,11	3,10	4,13	5,37	3,77
Ist. mean	**11,88**	**44,63**	**38,73**	**50,32**	**46,38**	**33,64**	**49,40**	**44,20**	**45.20**	**37,18**	**21,22**	**5,30**	**4,60**	**5,98**	**5,51**	**3,99**
Ümraniye	12,19	28,47	30,36	35,40	52,54	40,68	57,86	43,90	56,61	48,89	29,76	3,47	3,70	4,31	6,40	4,96
Tuzla	12,89	27,69	1,55	32,80	51,07	36,20	51,55	40,60	45,92	37,50	19,94	3,57	0,20	4,23	6,58	4,67
Avcılar	13,12	28,96	23,62	25,96	43,01	30,21	42,56	37,40	38,33	29,19	13,79	3,80	3,10	3,41	5,64	3,96
G.osmanpaşa	14,14	38,39	31,11	27,63	42,71	33,53	57,07	44,30	53,30	43,50	26,21	5,43	4,40	3,91	6,04	4,74
Beyoğlu	14,38	57,59	46,60	34,41	44,26	31,22	50,65	37,40	47,56	39,71	24,62	8,28	6,70	4,95	6,36	4,49
K.çekmece	14,73	38,35	40,72	33,82	49,70	32,15	46,32	47,20	43,07	36,44	16,61	5,65	6,00	4,98	7,32	4,74
Arnavutköy	15,34	43,88	76,94	36,75	73,47	59,36	61,86	41,60	55,14	43,88	20,22	6,73	11,80	5,64	11,27	9,10
Sancaktepe	15,58	48,15	57,78	44,70	80,10	65,84	52,06	39,90	51,62	42,24	27,31	7,50	9,00	6,96	12,48	10,26
Bahçelievler	16,09	31,88	36,05	28,84	40,89	30,03	51,75	47,50	48,47	39,40	22,67	5,13	5,80	4,64	6,58	4,83
Fatih	16,29	30,32	24,55	18,42	26,46	23,22	51,71	42,80	46,93	37,81	26,41	4,94	4,00	3,00	4,31	3,78
Esenler	16,38	37,19	39,69	30,50	41,93	31,07	64,71	47,50	60,53	53,72	32,73	6,09	6,50	4,99	6,87	5,09
Güngören	17,01	27,39	32,33	22,91	30,54	21,63	55,63	43,80	50,90	43,04	25,25	4,66	5,50	3,90	5,20	3,68
Esenyurt	17,17	50,21	85,63	43,21	89,96	73,41	48,58	42,20	45,50	34,11	17,82	8,62	14,70	7,42	15,44	12,60
Bağcılar	18,21	39,97	50,51	35,80	50,26	37,99	60,42	49,20	56,98	48,95	29,78	7,28	9,20	6,52	9,15	6,92
Sultangazi	18,41	36,99	37,48	26,22	44,06	37,43	59,76	48,40	57,11	47,72	32,80	6,81	6,90	4,83	8,11	6,89
Başakşehir	18,47	41,86	53,07	45,39	84,55	73,87	51,55	39,00	46,90	34,85	20,11	7,73	9,80	8,38	15,61	13,64
Z.burnu	18,54	44,78	34,53	29,99	31,82	21,52	51,56	44,40	46,93	41,10	22,40	8,30	6,40	5,56	5,90	3,99
Sultanbeyli	20,01	47,34	60,98	33,04	72,81	72,81	68,85	51,00	67,16	50,28	41,96	9,47	12,20	6,61	14,57	14,57

Table 4.6: District level electoral indicators across elections (2011-1999)
*Colored districts are the ones above the average illiteracy rate for Istanbul
** The votes shares of FP has been used for 1999 general elections

123

increases to nearly 50% in districts such as Beyoğlu, Sancaktepe, Esenyurt for 2011 general elections. Similar variations can also be found for districts with lower shares of residents of Kurdish-origin. Although the amount of citizens of Kurdish origin in each districts are not absolute but estimated percentages which may diverge from the actual situation, it can be suggested that the overall support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin is considerably high, even for the 2011 general elections.

When electoral results across the elections are analyzed, although similar patterns can be observed for the 2002 and 2007 general elections, it is evident that the patterns diverge for the elections of 2009 and 2011. The first pattern concerns AKP vote shares which steadily increases across the general elections of 2002, 2007, 2011 in all the districts. The 2009 general election is characterized by a deviation from these results where support for AKP is lower than both the 2007 and 2011 general elections with the exception of Çatalca, Şile, B.Çekmece, Bakırköy and Silivri where the increase continued, and Adalar and K.Çekmece where the party gained the highest vote shares in 2009 compared to 2011 and 2007 general elections. This decrease is probly related to the economic considerations (Çarkoğlu 2009a, 2009b).

When a similar analysis is conducted for the electoral support of pro-Kurdish piarties among citizens of Kurdish origin, one can observe an interesting phenomenon. In all districts, except Sultanbeyli, their vote shares have increased from 1999 to 2002 general elections but have re-decreased in 2007 general elections following two distinct patterns. In districts such as Ümraniye, Tuzla, Avcılar, Sultanbeyli, Başakşehir, Esenyurt, Sancaktepe, Arnavutköy, Ümraniye its votes shares in 2007 general elections seems to have decreased considerably below 1999 general elections, while in other districts the party's vote shares for 1999 and 2007 general elections are very close. One should be careful in evaluating this trend because the first group of districts has witnessed high increase in number of eligible voters between 2002 and 2007. Unfortunately, there is no available information on either the main cause of this increase or change in the percentage of citizens of Kurdish as a result of this increase. One probable cause may be the increase of the population as a result of both internal and external immigration. Actually, population growth was the main cause of the reorganization of these districts as distinct administrative units in 2008. Another possible cause may be the increase in the eligible young first time voters. However, it is still impossible to discern how much of this increase results from either of these causes.

124

Furthermore, the percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin among these new voters can neither be estimated. Statistical data is not available for the immigration flows from the Kurdish-populated region to neither Istanbul nor its districts for the years between 2002 and 2007, making difficult to assess the share of citizens of Kurdish origin.

Nevertheless, available data shows that from 2007 to 2011 Istanbul received 310.222[25] immigrants from the provinces of the Kurdish-speaking region. If a similar flow is expected to be experienced between 2002 and 2007, this makes approximately 387.770 people from the region migrating to Istanbul between 2007-2011. Since these districts are the ones witnessing large migration flows from the Kurdish-speaking region, the shares of Kurdish population among these new voters should probably be high. In fact, most of the AKP representatives interviewed in the districts such as Sancaktepe, Sultanbeyli, Başakşehir highlighted that their districts were formed by immigrants coming from different regions from Turkey where the citizens of Kurdish origin constituted one of the largest groups. As a result, decrease in the electoral performance of pro-Kurdish parties in these districts can be evaluated as an actual decrease in the party's support among the citizens of Kurdish origin and not only as the result of increase in non-Kurdish population. Even if, we conclude that there is no difference in terms of electoral patterns in Kurdish-populated districts for the elections of 2002 and 2007, a clear distinct pattern can be observed when 2007, 2009 and 2011 general elections, which are our main focus of analysis, are analyzed in terms of both percentage and magnitude of the votes of the pro-Kurdish parties.

Table 4.7 illustrates the classification of the districts according to their electoral characteristics. The major classification criterion has been variation in the electoral results from 2007 to 2009 and 2009 to 2011. As indicated previously, the 2009 municipal elections provide significant data for understanding the change in support for pro-Kurdish parties. This is due to the fact that DTP was not in a position to win the municipality in any of the districts of Istanbul. Increase in support for the party in this election is probably the result of a reaction of ideologically motivated voters to AKP's position on the Kurdish issue. Within this respect, we can observe 3 different groups of

---

[25] The provinces of origin for the migration flows to Istanbul for the years of 2007-2008, 2008-2009, 2009-2010 and 2010-2011 is a published data by Turkish Statistical Institute. The migration flows from the Kurdish-speaking region is calculated by adding the flows from each provinces defined by the study as Kurdish-speaking for the four years period. Then this number has been divided by 4 (the number of years the period covers2007-2010) which gave an average of amount of migration flow per year. The number found has been multiplied with 5 (the number of years the period of 2002-2007 covers)

districts having different electoral patterns. In the first group of districts such as Bayrampaşa, Fatih, Çekmeköy, Zeytinburnu, G.Osmanpaşa, Beyoğlu a steady increase in support for pro-Kurdish parties among citizens of Kurdish origin can be observed across 2007, 2009, 2011 general elections. In contrast, in the second group of districts composed of Bakırköy, Silivri, Tuzla, Güngören, Bahçelievler, Başakşehir, K.Çekmece, Ümraniye, Başakşehir, Esenyurt, Bağcılar, Esenler, Sultangazi, Sancaktepe, Arnavutköy, Sultanbeyli one can observe a reversed V shape where support for pro-Kurdish parties increased in 2009 and re-decreased in 2011. Furthermore, in the districts of Ümraniye, Tuzla and Başakşehir this support in 2011 general elections is even at a lower level than 2007 general elections. The third group of districts is the ones where vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties have considerably decreased in 2009 municipal elections. This group consist of districts such as Beşiktaş, Kadıköy, Maltepe, Büyükçekmece, Adalar, Üsküdar, Çatalca, Sarıyer, Avcılar, Ataşehir, kağıthane, Kartal, pendik, Eyüp, Beykoz, Şile. These three groups of districts seem to have clearly different electoral patterns across elections. Given the fact that the pro-Kurdish parties have consecutively increased their vote shares vis-à-vis AKP in 2007, 2009 and 2011 elections in the Kurdish population region, the results in the second group seem to deviate from the trend in terms of electoral outcomes.[26]

Table 4.7 also provides information on the districts' percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin, socioeconomic indicators and municipal budget per resident. As it can be seen from the table when the dispersion of districts is analyzed a systematic relationship between percentages of Kurdish citizens, socio-economic indicators, degree of electoral competition, population size and electoral shift is not very evident especially in differentiating the first from the second group. The third group differentiates from the first and the second in terms of both socio-economic indicators and percentages of citizens of Kurdish origin. The districts in the third group are the ones with low percentage of Kurdish citizens except for Avcılar. Nearly all of these districts, have mostly low level of illiteracy rate except Pendik, Beykoz and Şile which are close to the Istanbul mean and where support for the pro-Kurdish party DTP in 2009 elections is very low.

---

[26] For more detail on the electoral trend in the region consult Chapter 2

1.st group						2nd .group						3.rd group					
district	Est. Kurd.	il. rate	Pop. Size	d. Comp.	Mun. Bud./Pop	district	Est. Kurd.	Pop. Size	d. Comp.	il. rate	Mun .Bud./Pop	district	Est. Kurd.	il. rate	Pop. Size	d. Comp.	Mun. Bud./Pop
B.düzü	11,01	0,022	204.873	40,70		bakırköy	8,30	219.145	22,56	0,016		beşiktaş	5,66	0,015	184.390	18,62	
Sarıyer	7,31	0,037	280.802	36,97		Silivri	8,43	138.797	31,29	0,035		Kadıköy	6,54	0,018	532.835	22,13	
Şişli	8,70	0,038	317.337	32,05		Tuzla	12,89	185.819	45,92	0,047	425	Maltepe	9,59	0,033	438.257	38,24	
B.paşa	7,03	0,043	269.481	50,37	280	G.gören	17,01	309.624	50,90	0,048		B.çekmece	8,01	0,034	182.017	41,46	
Fatih	16,29	0,052	431.147	46,93	385	B.evler	16,09	590.063	48,47	0,049	175	adalar	9,87	0,035	14.221	23,96	
Eyüp	9,35	0,053	338.329	45,42		K.çekmece	14,73	695.988	43,07	0,057	287	Üsküdar	8,77	0,036	526.947	46,26	316
Ç.köy	10,18	0,056	168.438	49,22	369	Ümraniye	12,19	603.431	56,61	0,051	279	Çatalca	4,02	0,037	62.001	27,13	
Z.burnu	18,54	0,058	292.430	46,93	339	B.şehir	18,47	248.467	46,90	0,055	250	Avcılar	13,12	0,043	364.682	38,33	
G.paşa	14,14	0,062	474.259	53,30	175	Esenyurt	17,17	446.777	45,50	0,068		Ataşehir	9,56	0,048	375.208	43,22	
Beyoğlu	14,38	0,070	248.084	47,56	397	Bağcılar	18,21	738.809	56,98	0,068	234	Kağıthane	11,38	0,048	416.515	52,96	232
						Esenler	16,38	461.072	60,53	0,073	213	Kartal	11,83	0,050	432.199	41,82	
						S.gazi	18,41	468.274	57,11	0,074	223	Pendik	9,80	0,051	585.196	51,96	219
						S.tepe	15,58	256.442	51,62	0,081	429	beykoz	4,33	0,054	246.136	47,86	364
						A.köy	15,34	188.011	55,14	0,095	223	Şile	4,59	0,056	28.119	43,33	519
						S.beyli	20,01	291.063	67,16	0,105	212						

Table 4.7: Classification of the districts according to the independent and dependent variables
*The districts having an illiteracy rate above the Istanbul average have been lightly colored. Similarly, the districts where percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin is higher than Istanbul average have been darkly colored.

The interpretation of the relationship between the socio-economic indicators and shift in support for pro-Kurdish parties or AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin for the first and second group is more complicated. Although, according to the data the two groups seem to slightly diverge in terms of the number of districts with different socioeconomic indicators, such a result should be interpreted very carefully. Socio-economic indicators seem to have an effect of electoral shifts, yet other variables for these districts seems also to be in power. Increase in pro-Kurdish parties vote shares from 2009 to 2011 is witnessed in districts with lower illiteracy rate where as decrease in their votes shares from 2009 to 2011 is witnessed mostly in districts with higher illiteracy rates

When a more detailed analysis on the socio-economic conditions of citizens of Kurdish origin in each district is conducted the role of socioeconomic indicators decreases even more. As identified in previous sections, most of the residents of Kurdish origin in districts from the first group such as Fatih, Zeytinburnu, Beyoğlu and the second group such as Sancaktepe, Başakşehir, Sultanbeyli have similar socioeconomic patterns since they are late immigrants with lower socio-economic conditions. As a result, the variation in vote shifts across elections is difficult to be interpreted as the results of different socio-economic conditions, decreasing the explanatory power of socioeconomic indicators. Even after taking into account the

shares of Kurdish population, socioeconomic characteristics, degree of the electoral competition, population size and municipal budget per residents, district level voting behavior of Kurdish population shows variation that needs further explanation. The next section will be the selection of the districts where a deeper analysis will be conducted to identify AKP's diverging mobilization strategy for citizens of Kurdish versus non-Kurdish origin and main factors affecting a successful mobilization strategy on Kurdish supporters.

4.12-   Selection of the Cases

The previous section focused on the classification of districts first, according to the variables that may affect AKP's decision to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin via selective incentive. The districts have been classified according to their estimated percentages of Kurdish origin, socio-economic indicators, municipal resources per residents, degree of the political competition the party faces and their population size. The next step was the classification of the district according to the dependent variable: efficiency of the party's mobilization strategy measured in terms of changing electoral support for the pro-Kurdish parties across elections. Since the study has the purpose of first understanding the main difference in the party's strategy to mobilize Kurdish as opposed to non-Kurdish citizens, the first selection criterion has been the percentage of Kurdish citizens. Based on the second purpose of the study, which is to understand the effectiveness of such a strategy the selection criteria has been divergence in the electoral support for the pro-Kurdish parties across elections. Within this respect three districts, Beyoğlu, Sancaktepe and Beykoz that are similar in terms of socio-economic indicators, municipal budget per resident, the degree of electoral competition the party faces and population size have been selected to effectuate a deeper analysis. In order to test the role of the clientelistic network in explaining vote shifts two districts, Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe that have high and similar percentages of Kurdish citizens, illiteracy rates, electoral competition patterns and municipal resources per resident but greatly diverge in terms of electoral outcomes across elections have been selected. In order to understand the difference in mobilizing citizens of Kurdish origin from their non-

128

Kurdish counterparts, Beykoz with low percentage of Kurdish citizens has been selected as a control case. The electoral trends in support for pro-Kurdish parties have not been taken into consideration for this selection. I have been careful to select districts that have high illiteracy rates, high electoral competition, high available amount of municipal resources and average population size. The major objective of such a selection was to increase the probability of occurrence of my tested variables, since I expect the party to clientelistically target the voters of Kurdish origin under these circumstances.

The estimated percentages of citizens of Kurdish origin for the districts are 4.33%, 14.38 % and 15.58 % for Beykoz, Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe respectively. Furthermore, most of the residents of Kurdish origin of these districts have migrated after 1990, witnessing similar experiences and socio-economic difficulties. In electoral terms, each district coincides to one of the groups of districts in table 4.8. AKP vote shares have a V shape in these districts, where 2009 municipal election is the lowest. In contrast, the shifts in the vote shares of the pro-Kurdish parties among citizens of Kurdish origin are divergent. Although they have considerably increased in Beyoğlu from 34.41% to 46.60% and 57.59% across 2007, 2009 and 2011 elections, in Sancaktepe its vote shares are 44.70%, 57.78% and 48.15% for these elections. The overall illiteracy rate for Beykoz, Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe are 0.053%, 0.070% and 0.81% respectively. Albeit, the illiteracy rate of Sancaktepe is considerably high when compared with the other two cases, I have preferred to select this district since it is similarly close to Beyoğlu in terms of the other control variables. Furthermore, conducted interviews confirm that residents of Kurdish origin in both districts have similar socio-economic conditions. Both districts constitutes of late immigrants of Kurdish origin with low socioeconomic conditions. As a result, I would expect voters of Kurdish origin to be equally sensitive towards material incentives. On the supply side, the municipal budget per resident of all three district are above the Istanbul average with 397,77 TL for Beyoğlu, 429,78TL for Sancaktepe and 364,43 for Beykoz. Additionally, they are also similar in terms of variables that may independently affect the district level mobilization strategy of the party such as, the population size of the districts, the degree of competition the party faces. As it can be seen from the table there is great divergence in the population size where in districts such as Ümraniye, K.çekmece, Bağcılar this amount attains to nearly 600.000 residents. With their population size of 246.136, 248.084 and 256.442 Beykoz,

Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe are districts with similar and considerably medium population sizes. Within this respect, the vote shares of AKP for the 2007 general elections in the selected districts are considerably low and close to each other respectively gaining 47,86%, 47,56% and 51,62% of the votes in Beykoz, Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe. A similar situation can be observed for the margin of victory of the districts which are 27.60, 24.79 and 26,44 (see table 4.9).

This chapter has mainly focused on the explanation of the logic behind the basic selection criteria of districts in Istanbul as units where a deeper analysis to understand the factors contributing to AKP's ability to formulate a successful mobilization strategy towards citizens of Kurdish origin.

CHAPTER 5

THE MAIN DISTRICT LEVEL ORGANS RESPONSIBLE OF THE MOBILIZATION OF THE VOTERS

As it has been discussed in Chapter 2, not yet illustrated, the internal organizational structure of the party is important in increasing the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy. First, the number of activists and the level of contacts with the voters contribute to a more effective strategy by increasing the scope of the mobilization and decreasing the cost of identifying different types of voters and conducting compliance. Second, the mechanisms of information flow between different organs responsible for strategy formulation and redistribution of resources are important in decreasing the cost of identifying voters and contributing to the party's responsiveness on voters' demands by providing arenas where activists cooperate with each other and share information. Last, the intra-party advancement rule is argued to be effective in motivating the activists to cooperate with each other and increase their support coalition. Within this respect, the way through which posts are acquired and mechanisms to evaluate the performances of the activists are important in understanding the motivation of existing and new activists to actively work for the party.

Based on these arguments, this chapter evaluates the formal design of the party. The first section defines the main decision-making organs at the district level, their organizational structures and functions. Nevertheless, distribution of incentives does not only consist of the identification of the mechanism where decisions are taken but also the mechanisms through which information between different units circulates. This is why, the second section mainly focuses on the mechanisms, which assure the circulation of information between different units. The last section is an analysis of the centralized nature of the party organization and the mechanisms available to the party

for evaluating the performance of the activists to understand how the structure affects the intra-party rule of advancement in the party.

5.5- Main Decision Making Organs at the District Level

According to the 29th Article of the Party's Inner Organization Act, *'The party organization signifies a whole which is composed of people from all hierarchical and horizontal degrees from the bottom to the top that are legally hierarchically and spiritually voluntarily bound to each other'*.[27] The Party Regulation defines a very institutionalized party organization where the responsibilities of each organ are precisely specified. The structure of the party is a complex network composed of different organs functioning at different levels that are deeply penetrated into the society at the most local level and intensely tied to each other within and among each level. One of the main principles upon which the organization structure is built is its ability to penetrate in the society to make direct contact with citizens possible. Another important principle is the responsiveness of the party to the demands and preferences of the voters.

Officially, the main organ responsible for the formulation and application of mobilization strategy is the district branch of the party. The neighborhood organs provide the mechanism through which the party systematically contacts the voters and functions as brokers that circulate all kind of information between the party and the voters. More importantly, it is the neighborhood organization, which increases solidarity among existing members of the network and incorporate new members. The next sections are a brief analysis of the structure and functions of each of these organs.

5.1.1- District Level Organizational Structure of the Party

As illustrated in the party's Inner Party Regulation, the legal party organs are formed at national, provincial and district levels, reflecting the geographical

---

[27] (translated by the author) AK parti Tüzüğü, available at AKP's web site. Consulted on 26.07.12

administrative structure of the Turkish state. In terms of its legal organizational structure, AKP does not differ from other Turkish political parties. The real difference lies in what the regulation calls the auxiliary organs, which are geographically the neighborhood and polling station administration boards. The district organization is the most local decision making unit that formulates the party's mobilization strategy for the district. It is the official representative of the party in its relations with other organizations and institutions, the municipality included. Besides, it is the main unit that controls the resources and decides their distribution within the party's lower ranks. The party performs these functions through official organs that are defined by the Party's Inner Organization Act.

Horizontally, in order to perform a more efficient targeting, the party is organized at each level around three different branches; main, woman and youth. Legally, according to the 29th Article of the Party Inner Organization Act, the main branch is the official representative of the party while the women and youth branches function as un-official auxiliary organs that are tied to the former. In practice, women and youth organizations are autonomous and are not responsible to the main branch of their geographical unit but directly to their own branch's higher organ. Nevertheless, as it will be illustrated later, all three organizations work in tight coordination with each other in all organizational levels under the responsibility of the district president.

The district organization in the three horizontal branches -main, women and youth are composed of 4 official organs: The District Congress, the District President, the District Administrative Committee, and the District Executive Committee. This organizational structure is similar at the higher official levels -provincial, and center. The main function of the District Congress is to coordinate of the process of the elections to select the president and the administrative committees. The three other organs are responsible of the functioning of the party at the district level. Women and youth branches are organized in a similar way each having their own 4 organs at the district level. The district functions through the Administrative and Executive Committee under the responsibility of the District President. The Administrative Committee is officially composed of 4 to 30 members depending on the district population and has an Auxiliary Committee composed of the same amount of members. Since all observed districts have a population higher than 100.000, the district level administrations and their auxiliary committees are each composed of 30 members.

Furthermore, the district organization has an executive committee of 13 members. The total number of formal activists functioning under the district organs is 90, all three branches included. In practice this number is higher since there are also other activists outside the district organs who work for the party.

The main responsibilities of these organs are divergent, and are strictly defined in the party's Inner Organization Regulation. The president, who is elected by the District Congress delegates, is the highest official representative of the party in the district who regulates its relations with all private and official institutions and organizations. Its main responsibility is to coordinate and control the overall functioning of the district party organization, including the coordination between the deputies of electoral region, members of the provincial council, district mayors, members of the municipal council and the party organization.

The formal responsibility of the Administrative Committee is to formulate policies and activities to be carried at district level and control their conformity to the party's regulation. It is the main decision-making organ of the organization. The Executive Committee, which is composed of 13 members, including the district president, has the main responsibility to execute the policies set by the Administrative Committee. The members of the committee who work as vice presidents have the responsibility to execute policies through 12 functional units. Each of these functional units mostly works with experts and professional under the approval of the district president. These units are Vice Presidencies of Political and Legal Affairs, Organizational Affairs, Electoral Affairs, Accounting, Municipal Affairs, Secretary, Advertisement and Media, External Affairs, Social Affairs, Economic Affairs, Public Relations, Research and Development. The Vice Presidencies of Organization, Political and Legal Affairs, Electoral Affairs, Accounting and Secretary are responsible for the main functioning of the party organization. Among these units, the vice presidencies the Organization in all geographical level is vital for the party's organizational design. While Vice Presidencies of Political and Legal Affairs, Accounting and Secretary are responsible for dealing with legal issues, financial issues and circulation of information concerning the party' activities respectively; the Vice Presidency of Electoral Affairs has the main responsibility to prepare and implement the electoral campaign. Among this responsibility is to establish the Elections Coordination Center, which is in charge to coordinate and implement whole activities during the electoral campaign.

The Vice Presidencies of Advertisement and Media, Foreign Relations and Economic Affairs are the main organs that are responsible for preparing the content of the information prepared for mobilization. The main activities of the former are to prepare the propaganda material to inform people on the party's policies, coordinate publicly open meetings, panels, and conferences. The second has the responsibility to inform the party organization and voters on national and municipal economic policies, while the main responsibility of the latter is to introduce the foreign policy of the government to the party members and voters.

The activities of the Vice Presidencies of Advertisement and Media, Economic Affairs and Foreign Relations focus on more programmatic nature of the party's policies. On the other hand, the Vice Presidencies of Social Affairs, Public Opinion and Municipalities are important for the service-based mobilization of the voters, since they are the organs that collect information on voters' material demands and provide access to the necessary resources to meet these demands. The Vice President of Social Affairs is responsible to identify the social problems such as the helpless people in the district, report them to higher organs and prepare projects and programs for the amelioration of their conditions. To contact and prepare joint activities with social and cultural non-governmental organizations in the district, to inform the party organization and voters on the social policies of the government on family, health, education, work, culture and environment are among its other responsibilities. The Vice President of Municipal Affairs is responsible of all kind of coordination and activities related to the municipality. Its main responsibilities include ensuring the harmonious, effective functioning of the party organization together with the district municipal mayors, members of general municipal assembly of the district and province, identifying the local demands and expectations of the voters, and finding solutions to their problems. In practice its one of the main organ where municipal resources are provided.

5.1.2- The Neighborhood Organization

The neighborhood organizations are the most important organs for the successful functioning of the mobilization strategy since it is mostly through them that the party

effectuates regular direct contacts with the voters, identifies the types of voters, gathers information on the voters' needs, demands, preferences and disseminates information on the policies and issue stances of the government and municipality. In the presence of a clientelistic network, it is through these organizations that the resources are distributed and control on compliance is assured.

At the neighborhood level, the organization usually consists of two different organs: polling station administrations and the neighborhood administrations formed for each polling station and neighborhood respectively. Members of these organizations are selected from the party members and have to be composed of at least 3 representatives. For the selection, primacy is given to the representation of main, women and youth branches each with at least one representative. While the polling station administration board functions through the neighborhood administration, the neighborhood administration is directly responsible to the district president. These organizations are defined as subsidiary non-formal organs, tied to the district, functioning under its supervision, established to perform activities set by the district at the neighborhood level.

According to the 19th article of the Party Inner Organization Regulation, the main avenue for the party's activities is the polling station. The polling station administration consists of a total of 9 members in which the main, youth and women branches each has 3 representatives. One of the members is the president who is responsible for designation of the voters under the responsibility of each member and supervision of their activities. According to the Party Inner Organization Regulation, formally, the polling station administration comprises the most local level of the party organization where the party directly connects to the voter. Given the fact that each polling station consist of approximately 250 to 300 voters, such an organizational design provides deep party penetration into the society where each party representative is in active contact with 30-35 voters. The function of the polling station administration is defined as contacting citizens and members to inform them on the party's policies, provide solution to their problems, ensure the participation of the members to party activities, and recruit new members. Nevertheless, in practice, the polling station administration mainly functions as information provider on different types of voters, their needs and transfers this information to the neighborhood organization which is the most the active organ in the neighborhood.

Each branch; main, women and youth; are legally represented with an administration of at least 11 members in neighborhoods with 4 to 30 polling stations and 15 members in neighborhoods with 30 to 45 polling stations. One of these members is the president of the neighborhood branch, who has the main responsibility to coordinate all activities to ensure the successful functioning of the organization at the neighborhood level. This, besides the polling station administration, makes at least 33 activists functioning as the representative of the party at the neighborhood level. This number increases as in most of the neighborhoods; especially where the party's electoral support is high; other volunteers are included in the administration.

In addition, each of the three branches functions through an executive committee. The Committee is chaired by the neighborhood president and comprises of 6 vice presidents each responsible of the Organization, Electoral Affairs, Advertising and Media, Social Affairs, Municipal Affairs, Public Relations, Accounting and Secretary. In theory, although each of the vice presidencies has specific functions to fulfill, in practice the neighborhood president and his/her vice president responsible of the organization perform most of these functions. Other members mostly act as information providers.

The president is the main representative of the party and holds the most important post at the neighborhood level. His/her main responsibilities are preparing activities to introduce the party and its policies, to control the formation of the polling station administration and to assure their continuous functioning, realize the weekly meeting of the neighborhood administration, program the necessary activities to increase the number of the party members, determine problems and demands in the neighborhood and solve and report them to the district president. In practice, based on information provided by other members and the strategy of the party, he/she holds the main responsibility on formulating the targeting strategy of the party, deciding the content and places of the visits, realize the weekly meetings, house meetings, distribute the resources and control the conduct of the members.

5.6-   The Municipal Organization

Officially, the main organ responsible for the formulation and application of mobilization strategy is the district branch of the party, but in practice, the municipality, which mostly provides the necessary material resources, also plays a very important part in both processes. The ability of the Municipality to formulate strategies to distribute the resources is based on the formal design of its main decision organs. Yet, through these main decision organs, the municipality possesses many kind of resources that can be used for political purposes. This section discusses these two aspects in more detail.

5.2.1- Main Decision Making Organs of the Municipality

Material resources available to the incumbent party in Turkey are diverse and distributed at different levels of the state institutions. Appointment in job posts in the public sector, green card provision for health assistance, social assistance programs are among the resources mostly used by incumbents for political ends all around the world as well as in Turkey. The greater the control of the state over the economy, the larger is its resources available for distribution. Although district branches may have access to resources extracted in the higher levels of the state institutions through their connection with higher ranks in the party administration, resources distributed at the most local level are expected to be more effective since they are more easily and systematically accessed, coordinated and distributed. The resources available for distribution at district level are also diverse in nature, enclosing not only public but also more private resources from companies, charity organizations etc… In municipalities where the presidency is controlled by a co-partisan, the distribution of municipal resources can provide a great advantage for the party since the party and the municipality have mostly a common electoral base and common goals (Kemahlıoğlu & Özdemir, 2012). Each municipality has a budget in order to fulfill its main responsibilities, which is mainly transferred from the tax revenues of the central government. Given its large magnitude,

the use of these revenues for political purposes may affect the mobilization strategy and its success in terms of electoral outcomes.[28]

The ability of the municipality and the party organization to use these resources for political purposes is also based on the municipality's autonomy in deciding on the priority given to the distribution of each type of resources. According to Article 14 of the law amended in 2007, priority in providing these services is based on the financial situation of the municipality and the urgency of the service. It is under the function of the municipal mayor to decide the types of services to be provided through the strategic plan and under the responsibility of the Municipal Council to approve them. Within this respect, the main executive organ of the municipality is the mayor that shares this power with the vice presidents he/she selects. The mayor works through the strategic plan that it declares at the beginning of each year.

The main organ that decides and controls the provision of the municipal services is the Municipal Council which meets once a month (articles17- 25). Members of the Municipal Council are directly elected by voters through a closed list proposed by each party in the municipal elections. Each party is represented in the council according to the vote shares it receives from the municipal elections. The municipal council controls the municipal activities through different mechanisms. First, it has the responsibility to confirm the strategic plan and the budget at the beginning of each year. Second, it has also the right to control the activities of the mayor through the Auditing Commission that it elects among its members at the end of each year. Rights of question, demand for general meeting and interpellation (article 26) are other mechanisms through which the council can affect the mayor's policies. Therefore, the ability of the municipality to strategically distribute the resources is expected to be influenced by the composition of the Municipal Council. Higher is the electoral support and, as a result, the number of members representing the party, higher is the municipal mayor's margin of maneuver.

The Municipal Presidency and the Municipal Council are important actors in the formulation and implementation of large-scale policies, but most resources they can use for political purposes are small in scale. For example, although they have an important say in deciding on the share of different services in the budget, the construction of huge community projects or change in the construction plans; daily routine activities such as

---

[28] For more information of the revenues of the municipality consult, Mutluer and Öner 2009, Kemahlıoğlu and Özdemir, 2012.

the distribution of the social assistance, construction of roads, pavements, distribution of different kind of permits are carried by the lower degree employees. Mostly, these daily activities of the municipalities are carried through different functional directorates that are tied to the vice presidents and that consist of employers from different levels such as directorate presidents, chiefs, functionaries and workers. Important directorates that control the distribution of the goods are the directorates of Social and Cultural Affairs, Social Assistance, Infrastructure and Construction, Health Affairs and Cleaning Affairs. The municipal staffs working in these directorates are effective in shaping the way resources are distributed.

Yet, the literature suggests that another factor that may be effective in distributing the resources is the capability of the decision organs to retreat the resources and redistribute it whenever it is need. In Turkey, the procedure through which social assistance and job are distributed gives the municipalities a strong control power in the redistribution of the benefits. Although there are certain objective criteria to be met for applying to social assistance, these criteria are so strict that the voters can easily violate them. The last decision on whether the resident has right to these aids is under the responsibility of the field staff of the municipality who checks their economic conditions and regularly carries controls. The economic conditions of residents being equal, it is the decision of these personnel to decide who will benefit. Once the personnel decide the resident does not meet the conditions, the assistance is canceled. Unofficially the party activists are also responsible to control the economic conditions of the residents. In lots of occasions, activists reported the cancelation of some assistance because of their intervention. Furthermore, the distribution of some kind of irregular assistances such as the Ramadan packages is under the responsibility of neighborhood activists. In all the neighborhoods, presidents were personally entitled to decide who would benefit from the food assistance.

A similar situation is also valid for job post. Most of the municipal personnel work through contracted private companies. These personnel does not benefit from the rights of the functionaries. Engagement and discharges can be made on very subjective criteria. A considerable number of the field personnel of the municipalities are employed through these contracts. A similar situation was also valid for the activists of the party working in the municipality of Beyoğlu, Sancaktepe and Beykoz. The president of the department of general services of the municipality of Beykoz highlights

that approximately 25% of their budget is personnel expenses of contracted workers, except workers for garbage collection which is paid by another budget (Interview conducted on 20.03.2012, Beykoz). A large amount of jobs is provided through these contracts. Furthermore, the municipality employs lots of seasonal workers for periods of 6-12 months. Circulation on these kinds of jobs is very high; increasing the control of the party on the redistribution of these jobs.

5.2.2- Resources Available to the Municipalities

Municipalities are currently governed under the Law Number 5393, which was introduced in 2005. The resources available to them consist of different types of services that they are responsible to provide by law. In this respect, the municipality is defined as a public cooperation established to furnish the common needs of the residents under its area of jurisdiction. The law identifies a great variety of services that the municipality is responsible to supply (under articles 14-15). Some of these services are development of the urban infrastructure, promotion of the environment and the environmental health, of recreation places; of culture and art, sport, social assistance, professional and social skills, economy and trade in areas under their jurisdiction. Furthermore, it has also the duty to assist to the ministerial services in constructing schools, health center and provide them with basic equipments.

Therefore, the municipality can provide access to different types of goods. Budgetary decisions on the amount and type of these goods within each municipality are expected to be influenced by political considerations of both political parties and municipalities since they would probably be allocated with respect to the residents needs to increase their effect on electoral outcomes. The consecutive three groups of rows in table 5.1 identify the shares of different types of goods in the expected budget and their absolute amount per resident for the election year of 2011 in the districts of Sancaktepe and Beyoğlu. As it can be seen from the table they diverge both interms of the quantity and type of each goods.

The main resources that can particularistically be distributed by the municipality may be classified under two different types. The first one, identified by the literature, as

pork barrel goods that by nature cannot individually be retreated once distributed. On the other hand, private goods such as cultural activities, social assistance and jobs are individual in nature and can by definition be distributed.

The first type of individual goods that the municipalities provide are social assistance such as food or cloth provision, meal distribution, health screenings; cultural events such as trips, meetings, festivals or educational activities such as professional training, seminars, conferences etc and jobs. In fact, all municipalities in Istanbul provide social assistance to the poor families defined according to some specific criteria. These assistances, which mainly consist of food, cloth provision, are mostly distributed on a regular basis. Similarly, organization of cultural activities in terms of touristic trips, festivals, dinners is also carried on a regular basis.

In addition, although it is not directly one of its services, the municipalities also provide a considerable number of jobs since effectuation of these services require a large staff. These jobs diverge from full-time positions or contracted jobs to part-time or seasonal jobs. Given the fact that job provision is a very valuable individual good for a political party, although scarce in quantity, it is expected to be politically very effective (Kemahlıoğlu, 2005, 2012). Although the amount of official job posts for each municipality is publicly available, it comprises a small quantity of actual posts provided by them. Most of the posts were provided by Contracted Private companies. Unfortunately, their amount is not publicly available. As most of the interviewed high post municipal representative have stated, the cost of these staff are classified under the budget of goods and services which is publicly available.

Nevertheless, municipalities invest a great quantity of their resources to the second types of goods, namely club goods such as construction of recreation places such as parks, picnic places; basic infrastructural investments such a road, pavement, drainage construction, environmental services such as garbage disposal, environment cleaning and community projects for social and cultural services such as sport complexes, conference halls, guest houses, etc. The construction of community projects such as huge sport complexes, health centers, conference halls have become important services that the municipalities provide with the material assistance from the central government.

		Amount of Expenditure		Budget per resident	
		Beyoğlu	Sancaktepe	Beyoğlu	Sancaktepe
individual goods (TL)		3.561.000	8.018.000	14,37	29,79
İnvidual asistance (%)		2,40	5,18		
social assist. 2011(TL)		2.335.000	1.883.000	9,38	7,29
cultural events 2011 (TL)		1.219.000	1.285.000	4,90	4,98
education 2011 (TL)		7.000	4.850.000	0,03	18,78
job provision					
budget of goods and services (2010)		48.228.830	46.045.345	194	178
budget of goods and services (2010) (%)		48,87	41,78		
budget of goods and services (2011)		60.542.789	58.045.351	243	225
budget of goods and services (2011) (%)		40,72	37,49		
job post (2010)		462	359	0	0
investments (club goods) (TL)		29.627.603	37.127.500	119,54	137,93
Club Goods (%)		19,93	23,98		
recreation investment (2011)		5.747.360	8.800.000	23,09	34,08
expected infrastructural investment (2011)		7.362.750	13.835.000	29,58	53,57
expected environmental services (2011)		16.163.493	13.207.500	64,93	51,14
expected cultural and social services infrastructural investment (2011)		354.000	1.285.000	1,42	4,98
types of assistance (individual goods)					
assistance (food) (number of family for 2010)		2.978	9.462		
assistance (food) (number of family for march 2012)		4.500	7.500		
meal (number of person 2010)		738.000	270.000		
regular meal (number of family, per day 2010)		2.000	150		
clothing (number of family 2010)		2.978	3.380		
job provision (number of person 2010)			578		
check assistance (number of family 2010)			240		
coal (number of family 2010)*		2.834	1.407		
edu assist. (number of students)		250	5.000		
Health Scan			3.176		
Patient Transportation			3.405		
home furniture (number of family 2010)		83	82		
cloth washing (number of family 2010)		117			

Table 5.1: Allocation of the municipal budgets (2009-2012)
*carried under the collaboration with the State district office

When we compare the districts according to total individual assistance per resident, we see that Sancaktepe is higher than Beyoğlu. Nevertheless, this difference is due to higher investment of this district to educational activities. Many of the neighborhood presidents I have interviewed indicated that they entered the party in order to be informed on activities organized by the municipality. Thus, these goods seem to be a motivation resource for not only voters but also activists. When compared in terms of provision of social assistance, which targets socioeconomically poorer residents and is expected to be more important in effecting especially voters and low rank activists; Beyoğlu is higher, albeit closely followed by Sancaktepe. While this

assistance is based more on food assistance in Sancaktepe it is more based on meal assistance in Beyoğlu.

On the other hand, the public good services comprise an important share of the budget when compared with individual good services. Similarly, a considerable number of activists I have interviewed highlighted that they joined the party to contribute to the construction of schools, health centers etc. So, they should also have an effective on the motivation of both voters and the activists. This type of goods has the highest budget share in Sancaktepe when compared with Beyoğlu with 23.98% and 19.93%. Infrastructural investment per resident is also higher in Sancaktepe than Beyoğlu. Given the fact that this district is newly developing area when compared with Beyoğlu, this difference seems to be logical. Although variations in terms of type of goods distributed are present for each of the districts, they do not distinctly diverge from each other in terms of share of municipal resources for distribution.

5.7- Ability to Meet the Demands: Information Flow between Different Organs

This section defines the general mechanisms established in the party to assure the information flow from the voters or activists to different organs of the party and the municipality. The most important mechanisms used to regulate the communication flows within each and between different organs are the realization of regular meetings and the creation of intermediary posts.

Intra and inter level meetings of the party organization are mostly carried to ensure coordination and the flow of information within different organs of the party organization. While inter-level communication is carried to have a coherent strategy within each unit, the purpose of intra-level communication is to ensure the information flow from the highest to the lowest level of the organizational pyramid and vice versa. In addition, their regularity and frequency motivates the activists, bind them together and reinforce internal cohesion. These meetings also function as arenas for inner-party education since participating activists are routinely informed on the policies and activities of the government. There are different kinds of meetings in which information

144

circulates. The first kind of meeting is the one carried within each level of the organizational structure, while the second consists of inter-level meetings.

The information flow is mostly regulated through the first type of regular meetings, which is carried on a regular basis. What assures the information flow through these regular meeting are the created intermediary posts that bound each level to each other. Each lower level unit is represented in the upper level unit of decision-making organ, which ensures the two-way flow of information.

The owners of these posts have the responsibility to attend the meetings of each level they bind. The party regulation strictly necessitates attendance to these meetings so as to assure the circulation of information. According to the article, membership in any level executive committees ends in case of non-participation without excuses to 3 consecutive scheduled meetings or to a total of 6 scheduled meeting within a year (under article 50). In fact, attendance is taken in all of these meetings and reported to the higher administrative organs. These attendances can be supervised by these organs via a computer program where all provinces and districts are expected to enter all realized party activities, party meetings included, names of activists and number of voters attending to these activities. The format of these meetings, their frequency and characteristics of people attending to these meetings are important in understanding information flow on voters' types and access of the neighborhood organizations to the resources.

Although the legal institutional framework of the party strictly defines the functions of each unit and regulates their relations through formal institutions, it is the informal web of connections between different organs that makes the party more responsive. As stated by Levitsky (2003) for the Peronist party in Argentina, these informal webs of connections provide flexibility in increasing the effectiveness of its mobilization efforts by increasing the information flow between different units.

5.2.1- Information Flow within the Organization

At the lowest level of the organization are the meetings of the polling station administration, which is carried at least twice a month in order to assess previous and

future activities. These meetings provide ground to the gathering of the information extracted by each polling station member from his/her own area of jurisdiction. Each polling station is under the supervision of one of the members of the neighborhood board appointed by the neighborhood president (under article 87). Information flow between the polling station administrations to the neighborhood administration is carried through this member. Named as the polling station coordinator, his/her main responsibility is to circulate a two-way flow of information between the polling station and the neighborhood organization. The polling station president has the responsibility to regularly report the neighborhood member in charge on important issues concerning the polling station under its jurisdiction once a month. On the other hand, the polling station coordinator has the responsibility to transmit to the polling station administration party policies coming from the neighborhood or the district.

The neighborhood administrations of each branch; main, woman, youth meet once a week and each of its members who are polling station coordinators have the obligation to attend to these meetings. Furthermore, information flows between the main, woman and youth organizations at each level is ensured through the participation of a representative of women and youth organizations, mostly the president, to the weekly meeting of the main branch. Especially at the neighborhood level, variations has been observed where in some neighborhoods the main branch president participated in the meetings of the other branches or especially in neighborhoods where the neighborhood administrations had difficulties to function, all branches carried a common meeting.

In addition, each neighborhood is under the responsibility of a district level coordinator (under article 87). Although this coordinator is appointed by the district president from the executive board; under circumstances where the number of neighborhoods in the districts is high, this responsibility is also given to the members of the administrative board. Rotation is a commonly used procedure for this post, where people are mostly appointed for a period of 6 month. Such a strategy is designed so as to increase the coordination of the neighborhood branch with different activists in the districts (Interview carried on 08.04.2011, Beykoz). Although the Party Inner Organization Regulation does not specify how the coordinator would fulfill these duties, he/she usually attends all the neighborhood and district meetings. All the neighborhood meetings attended during the electoral campaigning period were headed by the neighborhood coordinators in charge of the neighborhoods.

As the polling station coordinator, the specific function of the neighborhood coordinator is to assure two-way information flow: to gather information on the neighborhood in order to transmit it to the district branch and to inform the neighborhood administration on major strategies and policies of the district branch. The general format of a neighborhood meeting chaired by the neighborhood coordinator is as follows: The neighborhood coordinator first asks justification for the absent members. Control on participation is so tight that, the coordinator calls the members in order to ask them to attend to the meeting. Then, the meeting begins. Usually the vice-president responsible of the organization notes all discussed issues and the names of the participants on 'the event report sheet' filled for all kind of activities to be transmitted to the district. Meanwhile, the coordinator informs the members on the agenda and asks them to transmit this agenda to the polling stations under their responsibility so as to be communicated to the members and the voters. In return, members of the neighborhood administration express major problems that need to be solved by the district coordinator or transmitted to the district. In the end of the meeting, all participants sign the event report, which is taken by the district coordinator to be transmitted to the district.

The executive and administrative boards are the main organs to which this information is translated through the neighborhood coordinators. Since each neighborhood is represented in the executive and administrative committees by the neighborhood coordinator, decisions in these boards are expected to reflect the interest of each neighborhood in the district. In return, this is expected to provide equal reach to the resources distributed by the party since information extracted by the neighborhoods are compiled in these organs and circulated to the responsible vice-presidencies. Yet, in practice as it will be revealed in detail, equality is mostly a function of the motivation of the district coordinator.

The frequency of the meetings of the two main district organs differs. While the administrative committee meets once a month to decide the major strategies in accordance with the provincial level directives and the reports of the neighborhood administrations, the executive committee meets once a week to plan the implementation of these strategies. Both meetings provide ground for the dissemination of information between different levels through the district coordinators. While the coordinators inform the administrative and executive board on important issues on the neighborhoods under their responsibility, they also get informed on the agenda of the party in order to

transmit it to the neighborhood organization. Since main decisions are taken in these two organs, in theory the coordinators assure the formulation of policies that best suits their interest. Although these meetings are closed to public, I have been able to participate in two kinds of monthly meetings at different levels and branches. The first one was the monthly meeting of the Istanbul main branch executive committee with the district presidents. The main participants of the meeting were the provincial president with its executive board, the municipal women, youth presidents and presidents of all districts. The second one was the weekly meeting of the woman executive branch of the district of Sancaktepe. The main participants in that meeting were the district woman branch president and the committee members who among them were the coordinators of the neighborhoods. In both of the meetings held during the electoral campaigning period, major issues discussed were the electoral messages, mobilization activities of the party and the municipality. The assessment of political agenda, the interpretation of the political messages of the leaders of the party, investments made by the municipality covered the content of these messages. Participants were given directions on the activities they have to perform while they also informed their superiors on problems they face. In both meetings, attendance was strictly controlled as in the neighborhood meetings.

Information flow from the neighborhood to the district is also assured through the realization of inter-level meetings. The first one is the monthly meeting of the executive board of the district with the neighborhood presidents of different units (under article 75). The other is the monthly meeting of the vice presidents of each functional Committee with the member of the neighborhood committee responsible of the same function. These meetings not only provide a ground for the neighborhood representatives to inform their superiors on important issues in the neighborhood, but also serve as an arena for the education of the presidents on the party policies concerning their domain.

5.2.2- Coordination with the Municipality

Studies suggest that the effectiveness of material inducement on electoral support and motivation for participation is based on the ability of the party to respond to the voters' preferences and demands. This necessitates intense coordination between different party organs and the municipality. Especially, in party structures where contacting voters and formulating the strategy are in the responsibility of different organs at different levels, as in the case of AKP, these mechanisms are vital in increasing effectiveness. Then, an important aspect is the mechanism through which communication takes place between the party organization and the municipality. The formulation and implementation of a joint strategy and transmission of information from one organ to the other affect the party's mobilization strategy and increases its effectiveness.

Legally, the party and municipal organ are separately functioning bodies. However, in practice, by providing resources to the party for electoral and organizational purposes, the municipality is an important institution in the mobilization strategy of AKP. The importance of the coordination with the municipality in formulating the mobilization strategy of the party is highlighted by representatives within different ranks of the party organization. According to the head of Electoral Affairs of the Istanbul province, the party formulates its mobilization strategy within each district under the intense cooperation of the party organization with the municipality. As he declares:

"After each election, we begin to formulate our strategy for the next elections. As the head of the elections affairs, we have already realized separate meetings with the presence of not only the district presidents of each branch but also our partisan district mayors in order to assess our main defects within each district and formulate our action plan so as to increase our votes for the next elections" (Interview carried with the president of the Elections Coordination Center of Istanbul, 23.03.2011).

Similarly, the vice president responsible of the organization of the district of Beyoğlu states that they work under close coordination with the municipality. By declaring that '*there can be no organization without a municipality and no municipality*

149

without an organization' (Interview conducted on 23.03.2011, Beyoğlu), he confirms the indispensability of this coordination.

Coordination between the party organization and the municipality takes place at different levels. The highest level of this coordination is between the municipal mayor and the party's district president. The Party Inner Organization Regulation assures this coordination through two mechanisms. The first one is the municipal mayor meetings (under article 73) held under the chair of the party's province president once a month with the participation of co-partisan municipal mayors, members of the provincial executive Committee and district presidents of co-partisan mayor of the party. Presentation of actual municipal services and discussion of the future ones are the main themes of these meetings. Informally, as indicated previously, each district's party presidents of the three branches and co-partisan mayors meet under the chairmanship of the Provincial Vice-president of Electoral Affairs in order to prepare the joint strategy of the party in each district. Although the regulation gives the duty to coordinate the relations between the party and the municipality to the district president, it does not clearly specify how he/she would carry this duty. Nevertheless, during the electoral campaigning period, in all the districts under investigation meetings between the municipal mayor and district presidents of each branch were realized at least once a week.

Legally, the party group in the municipal council is the platform where the routine coordination for a joint strategy between the party and the municipality is assured. The Group of Municipal Council consists of the mayor and co-partisan members of the Municipal Council (under article 96). According to article 97 of the Regulation, the district president is given the right to convoke a meeting to the members of the provincial and municipal council in order to define the local policies of the party, to overview the activities and ensure information. Furthermore, the group is expected to attend to the meetings of the district Executive and Administrative Committees. It is under the responsibility of the district vice-president of Municipal Affairs to ensure their regular participation to the meetings, which are realized respectively once a week and once a month.

Another arena where the municipal organs meet the party organization is the meetings of the Advisory Council that are realized once a month under the responsibility of the district president. Participants to these meetings are all high rank

party representatives residing in the district such as the district main, woman and youth branches Administrative Committees, municipal mayor, members of the Municipal Council, members of the provincial Council, members of the neighborhood administrations, previous municipal mayors and invited party members (under article 76-77). The aim of this council is to overview party activities, increase coordination between different organizational levels; analyze problems, and overview municipal and national services. Monthly reports of party and municipal activities are presented to the participants, so as get all party activists informed on the activities.

In addition, the district president has the right to form the Advisory Council for Municipal Affairs (under article 79) in which the activities of the municipality are discussed between party members from different organizational ranks including deputies, the municipal mayor, the members of the Municipal Council the district Administrative Committee, women and youth presidents to the neighborhood presidents. The meeting of this council provides a platform where information on municipal activities is transmitted to the activists from different ranks. They can also provide ground for information flows not only for policy coordination but also for the selective distribution of the services, which requires cooperation. I was in the district building when such kind of a meeting was held in the district of Küçükçekmece. While the meeting was continuing in the meeting hall, activists from different ranks were making personal conversations. Among them where a neighborhood activist was introducing a member he brought with him, to a municipal personnel and ask for a job post in the municipality (Visit made on 19.03.2011, Küçükçekmece). Party and Municipal coordination is also assured through the vice presidencies of the municipal affairs and social affairs, which are in constant contact with the Municipal organs.

Legally, the information flow between the municipality and the neighborhood is indirect and takes place through the district organization. Although the formal mechanisms that ensure the coordination between the party and the municipality are important in understanding access of the party organization in municipal resources, the organic link between these two decision-making bodies is also vital in increasing the party's responsiveness towards the diverse demands of the voters as well as the party members. Nevertheless, since the services available for distribution are provided on a daily basis, it is mostly through the informal network between the two sets of organs that resources are accessed and distributed. One informal procedure is the assignment of

151

each neighborhood under the responsibility of a member of the Municipal Council. Through these assignments, the neighborhood presidents and coordinators can directly contact the members of the municipal council to solve major problems in these neighborhoods concerning the municipality. This provides the opportunity to the activists to bypass the hierarchical procedure and increase the responsiveness of the party.

Although the municipal council is responsible of the general policies in the municipality, it is not directly responsible of the distribution of individual and public services. The presence of activists occupying the post that control the distribution is also vital in understanding the access of the party to the municipal resources. In fact, the importance of the closeness of the municipal personnel to the political party in increasing control over the resources can also be seen from the discourse of the activists. In fact, a considerable number of activists highlighted the importance of such an organic link with the municipal personnel and disadvantages of the presence of supporters of other parties within the personnel. A district representative in Sancaktepe working in the field team of the Women Coordination center states that each municipal personnel is the representative of the municipality. Their behavior is an important indication for the citizens on the general attitude of the municipality and the party in control of the municipality. She complained that some of her colleagues close to CHP purposefully maltreated some citizens so as to damage the image of the party, or others create difficulties in resolving the affairs of AKP supporters and activists. One district representative in Beykoz complained about the reluctance of the municipal personnel closer to CHP to cooperate with them. Another member of the women branch Administrative Committee of Beyoğlu declared that most of the activists in Sancaktepe were working at the municipality and this, according to her, created a great advantage for the district of Sancaktepe in mobilizing the voters since they more easily responded to the voters' demands (Electoral Campaigning activity19.05.2011, Beyoğlu).

A large number of the district activists work in different departments of the municipality under different posts. This creates an informal and constant coordination between the party and the district branch for meeting demands. The distribution of individual and public goods is mainly under the responsibility of the directorate of Social and Cultural Affairs, Social Assistance, Infrastructure and Construction. The Parks and Gardens, Security, Cleaning departments provide great quantities of jobs. In

all of the three districts the major posts in these departments are occupied by the party activists of the district. In Beykoz, the Women Branch District president is also the responsible of the White Desk. In Sancaktepe the functionaries and field personnel of the department of social assistance, supervisors of Security; Parks and Gardens are also activists from the party. In Beyoğlu most of the members of the woman branch administrative committee works as the coordinators of the Neighborhood Halls (*Semt Konakları*) or field personal responsible to control the condition of citizens applied for social assistance. Unfortunately, there is no available data to compare the magnitude of the link within each district, but the field research confirms that the district party activists can easily meet the demands of the voters through the party's informal network with the municipality in all the three districts.

The municipal staff residing in the neighborhood also gives great advantage to the neighborhood organization in meeting the voters' demands. These connections are widely used by party activists in order to solve problems under their unit of jurisdiction. In fact, as it will be highlighted in the next sections, in most of the occasions activists preferred to solve the problems through their personal connections, only when these connections were not useful, they put in operation the formal produce of the party. In one of the women branch neighborhood meetings, the neighborhood coordinator directly called the women district branch president working in the municipality to solve the problem of a citizen who attended the meeting with the intermediary of the responsible polling station coordinator. Such a connection has also been used by a neighborhood president during a visit realized to check the economic situation of a resident. The president working in the municipality directly contacted the municipal department of social affairs to get informed on the voter's economic situation and gave the necessary directives to send them food and coal assistance.

Even if these procedures are not always properly applied, especially at the neighborhood level, the mechanisms through which the party operates form a huge organizational network where all kinds of information is communicated between different organizational units via a large amount of representatives of the party who have direct links to the voters. Although the legal framework set by the party provides the minimum ground for cooperation, in practice, the extent of the network exceeds this legal framework. Given the fact that most members in the district, as well as in the neighborhood level live in the same social environment as fellows in the neighborhood,

at work, and in associations, the actual connections between different activists is even more complex. These connections are successfully used by party activists at different levels as a mean to bypass any lack of communication under circumstances where the legal system does not function properly. As a result, even if the polling station and neighborhood coordinators provide a minimum ground for these purposes, the presence of other activists occupying important posts at both levels increases the ability of the polling stations and neighborhoods to affect the higher decision-making process.

How information flows from the bottom to the top and vice versa through these mechanisms may better be explained by concrete examples. Suppose that the municipality schedules an event, opens a new recreation place, or is in need of personnel for some posts. The members of the Municipal Council give this information to the district presidents through the weekly Executive Committee meeting of the main branch. The presidents of the women and youth branches who attend the main branch meeting transmit this information to their executive. Neighborhood coordinators of each branch share this information with the neighborhood administration in the weekly neighborhood meeting. Then, polling station coordinators who are in charge to inform the members of the polling station administration inform the members under their responsibility. Similarly, suppose there is a drainage problem in one of the neighborhoods. This information is transmitted to the neighborhood administration and neighborhood coordinator during the meeting. The neighborhood coordinator transmits the problem to the member of the municipal council responsible from the neighborhood or someone he/she knows in the municipality who can solve the problem. At the same time, she transmits the problem to the district president and vice-president responsible of the municipal affairs in the district meeting or by phone if urgent. Then, this problem is transmitted to the municipality, or directly to the vice-president of the municipal mayor who informs the relevant municipal units so that they would provide a solution to the problem.

5.8- Rules of Intra-party Advancement in the Party

Although the functioning and organizational structure of the party provides a suitable ground for formulating an effective mobilization strategy, a well functioning and strong party organization that increases the ability of the party to motivate the activists to actively work and cooperate with each other is also necessary in order to consolidate and increase the party's support base. It has been argued in Chapter 2 that such a motivation is based on the probability of the all activists to attain, either directly or through a post in the party, the incentive they desire. Given the fact that these incentives are scarce in nature, this probability is strongly influenced by the internal structure of the party. This study suggests that the presence of a competitive intra-party rule of advancement is very conducive to motivating all activists, since it provides a high probability of attaining inducement. Yet, this mechanism is difficult to be attained in centralized party organizations where advancement is decided by the leaders and is mostly distributed on the basis of loyalty. The literature suggests such a mechanism can be attained in centralized party organizations when the leadership is safe enough and an objective mechanism to evaluate activists' performance is present. This section describes the formal rules set by the party to regulate advancement in order to understand the formal structure under which such motivation is provided. First the formal intra-party advancement rules of the party and the safety of the leader will be revealed. Second, major mechanisms available to the party to evaluate activists' performances will be illustrated.

5.3.1- Centralized Nature of the Party and Safety of the Leadership Cadres

The aim of this section is to define the formal internal organs responsible to distribute posts in the organizational structure of AKP. According to Kaufman (1974), Özbudun (1985), Sayarı (1975) an important dimension that differentiates centralized political parties from competitive ones is the control of the distribution process to the posts in the party by superior cadres. The process through which posts are distributed

within the district organization is therefore important in understanding the centralized nature of the party. On the other hand, the safety of the leader is based on the procedure through which he/she acquires this post. The leader can be defined as safe when his survival is independent from the preferences of the members situated in the lower level of the organizational structure. Within this respect, this section analyses two aspects of the organization: it demonstrates, first, the monopoly of the district president in defining the intraparty advancement rule through his/her power on appointment and second, how this monopoly contributes to the safety of the presidency post.

The organizational design of Turkish political parties is strictly regulated by the Turkish Law on Political Parties. As a result, all political parties have similar organizational patterns and AKP is not an exception. Legally, the party regulation indicates a competitive party organization, where the district president and the administrative committee come to office by the election of the congress consisting of the delegates of each neighborhood. The party holds regular congresses every three years where leaders at different levels of the organizational structure are elected by lower level leaders. However, in practice, the position of the president is safe since all the inferior posts are distributed through appointment and not election. This coincides to a system where the president is elected by the members whom he appoints himself. District president controls the appointment procedure at both district and neighborhood level. This same procedure is valid for all the three branches: main, women and youth.

At the district level, the control of the president is exercised through a considerable number of rights attached to his post. First, he/she proposes the list of the administrative committee for election and has the power to partially or totally change its members. Second, he appoints the executive committee with the approval of the members of the administrative committee he selects.

The control of the leaders on the posts at the neighborhood level is even more direct. None of the posts at the neighborhood level is acquired through elections since they are legally defined as auxiliary organs where selection procedure is not regulated under The Turkish Law of Political Parties. These posts are also decided by the cooperation of the neighborhood and district president. Normally, the neighborhood president is the responsible body that selects the neighborhood administration. However, the district leaders control the process indirectly since the neighborhood president is proposed by the vice president responsible for the organization and

approved by the district president. The neighborhood president selects the other members in the neighborhood administration, with the approval of the vice president responsible for the organization. Furthermore, he/she also appoints the presidents and members of the polling station administration. The neighborhood coordinator is directly appointed by the district president from the members of the executive or administrative board. These activists recruit new members who elect the neighborhood delegates responsible to select the president. The delegates mostly consist of activists of the neighborhood organization. In a sense the president is elected by the delegates who he has appointed. It is this procedure that makes the president safe.

As a result, AKP's Party Regulation creates a hierarchical structure, where the immense organizational network is under the tight control and supervision of the president at each level of the organization. Even though in theory the district president and its administrative committee is responsible to the congress who elects them, in practice, the monopoly of the president in distributing the posts creates an organization that has total submission to the president. As a result, the district president, in practice, is safe from the preferences of the members that elect him.

Nevertheless, the hierarchical structure of the party organization makes the district president responsible to the administrator situated in the higher level of the organizational structure, which for the district it is the members of the provincial organs. In this structure, the safety of the leader is tied to the decision of the higher authorities and change in the leadership cadre at the district level occurs mostly as the result of the decisions taken at the provincial level. The regular Congress of 2012 successfully illustrates how the system works in practice. Each district president has first asked the approval of the provincial president before declaring his/her candidacy. Then, the president decided on the members of the administrative board. Members in each neighborhood have elected the neighborhood delegates who have announced their candidacy after the approval of the district president. Then, as neighborhood delegates, they elected the district presidents who were the only candidates. An exception was the district of Ümraniye, where the co-partisan mayor supported the candidacy of his vice-president without the approval of the provincial president. The emerging crisis was resolved by the cancelation of the Congress and the direct appointment of the district president by the provincial organization. It is important to note that circulation is possible in such a system. Yet, it is not tied to the strength of the support coalition of the

members but to the perception of his/her superior. In fact, some of the presidents at different levels of the organizational structure were asked not to be a candidate. An important example was the change in provincial women branch president of Istanbul during the 2012 Congress. Activists from different levels declared that she was personally asked by Erdoğan not to put her candidacy and let her post to her new colleague nominated by the province.

This creates a very centralized system where the attitudes of the administrators at each of the organizational level of the party organization are heavily influenced by the attitudes of the administrators at the higher level. I have personally faced the difficulties arising from the centralized nature of the party as soon as I began contacting the district presidents in order to realize the field research. When I first began the interviews nearly all main and woman branch presidents asserted me that they would not be able to let me contact their activists or participate to their activities unless I have the approval of the provincial presidents of their own branch. In one of my interviews, the district president told me, "*I am sorry but I cannot let you interview my neighborhood activists. Their political opinion may not be the same as the party. I don't want any misunderstandings.*" (Interview conducted on 08.02.2011). It was only after I contacted the provincial main and women branches' presidents and got their approval that I could start the fieldwork. After the province president invited me to attend their monthly meeting with the district presidents, introduced me and asked them to assist me, the attitude of the same district president immediately changed. He apologized and told me,

> "*We can never be sure of the intention of the people we don't know. Lots of opposition supporters try to observe the activities of our party, that is why we have to be precocious as you have the approval of the party we will happily help you*" (Interview conducted on 22.03.2011).

In fact, I received great assistance in this district and was able to freely conduct my field research after this approval.

The centralized design of the inner party organization creates a district leadership that has total control on the appointment process of the inferior posts. On the other hand, the safety of the leadership is not tied to the preferences of the members at the lower level but to the administrator at the higher level of the organizational pyramid. As a result, the internal organizational structure gives power to the district leader in

deciding the procedure through which posts are distributed.   Formally, the safety of the leader gives him the power to change the intra-party rule of advancement whenever it is necessary. Yet, as this study argues, in practice realizing such a change is not only a function of the formal structure, but also of the accustomed informal rules of internal functioning mostly inherited from the founding phase of the organization.

5.3.2- Mechanisms to Evaluate Performance

Even if the leader has the power to set a competitive intra-party rule of advancement, its ability to implement it, is based on the presence of a mechanism that objectively measures performance. Thus, the organizational structure of the party requires the measurement of the performance of activists at a very micro level. So, perhaps the inability of the leaders to create a competitive intra-party advancement mechanism may be the lack of an objective mechanism to measure performance. Nevertheless, both the electoral results and use of technological tools provide this objective mechanism for the leaders.

One method through which leaders may obtain information on the activists' performance is identifying support from below through the electoral outcomes. In the Turkish electoral system, electoral results are calculated through the count of votes in each polling station consisting of 300 voters at most. For example, people residing in the same building or street mostly vote in the same polling station. The data for the results of each polling station is publicly available. Formally, the data does not indicate the geographical location of any of the polling stations. The only data available on the geographical location of the polling stations are the electoral lists that are made public during the elections to inform people. Albeit providing very detailed information on the addresses, province of registry of the voters, these lists are not publicly available. However, political parties have legal access to the electoral lists, which give them a very detailed picture of the electoral distribution in very narrow geographical units, one or two streets in cities, or an entire village. In fact, the interviews point out that such information is greatly used by AKP activists to formulate their mobilization strategy. The president of the Elections Coordination Center of Beykoz highlights, "*we formulate*

such a deep strategy… we have analyzed the results of the polling stations with each of the polling station presidents to see how we can increase our votes" (Interview conducted on 18.03.2011, Beykoz). The president of the newly formed district of Sancaktepe proclaims,

> "*We have difficulties in attaining the results of the polling stations from previous elections, this is a defect for our strategy we do not have detailed information on previous preferences and it makes it difficult to guess where we have to focus to increase our votes.*" (Interview carried on 22.03.2011, Sancaktepe).

A similar observation on the importance of the election results was also made by the Elections Coordination center of Beyoğlu, who was very proud of their analysis of the electoral results. (Interview carried on 19.04.2 011, Beyoğlu). The electoral lists do not only provide information on the geographical location of each polling station but also on the place of registry of each of its voters. Thus, political parties know the hometown origin of the voters and their electoral preferences in one polling station, which comprises 300 voters. Given the fact that hometown origin is one the most important social identification in the society, this information may be very valuable in identifying the existing and potential supporters for the party. In fact, this can genuinely be used by parties for identifying the groups that are closer to them or check the compliance of specific groups under each polling station. When these two data are unified district branches can very successfully estimate which activist has managed to attain greater support for the party.

The participation of the members in party activities is a second important mechanism where performance may be evaluated. In fact, the party also uses this mechanism to identify hard working activists from the free riders. This is made possible by using a computer program where attendance to activities as well as the number of contacted possible core, swing, opposition voters and recruited members are entered by the district administration. Through this program, which gives each organization the right to collect necessary information in their area of jurisdiction, party managers can observe the overall performance of each individual member or administrative unit. In return, leaders can genuinely use this information for punishment or reward. The identification of activists participating in the electoral campaigning activities was one of the most important responsibilities of the district Center of Electoral Coordination. All activists were tasked by the Center to participate in certain campaigning activities. In all

the activities of both women, main and youth branches attendance was reported to the district, which was transmitted it to the Istanbul Center of Electoral Coordination through this computer program. Attendance was also taken very seriously by the activists themselves. In lots of instances, activists complained about the non-participation of the tasked people and proclaim that this should be reported to the province organization. Lots of disputes emerged between them on this issue. The main complaint came from neighborhood activists who routinely worked for party. They blamed district level activists, who did not participate in routine activities of the organization, of participating to the activities of their neighborhood only for show during the electoral campaigning period. This computer program was widely used by the district activists to evaluate the activities in the neighborhoods. This computer may effectively be used to evaluate the personal performance of activists based on the amount of activities they perform, voters they reached, number of new membership they made.

This section has illustrated that the internal design of the party provides ground for a mobilization strategy that deeply penetrates into the society where functions of each units responsible of the mobilization are formally set. Furthermore, the structure also provides formal arenas for increasing cooperation and information flow between different decision-making organs. The party has a centralized institutional structure where the intraparty advancement mechanism is given under the control of the district president who has access to objective criteria to measure performance. So, the formal internal structure of the party allows the district president to set the intraparty rule of advancement whenever it is necessary.

CHAPTER 6

DEFINING THE MOBILIZATION STRATEGY AT THE DISTRICT LEVEL

The aim of this chapter is to identify the main characteristics of the mobilization strategy formulated by AKP to consolidate or increase its electoral support. This study suggests that regardless of their type (i.e. clientelistic, mass, catch-all, cartel, ethnic, or hegemonic) or functions (government, opposition, tribune, systemic, un-systemic etc.), all political parties have vote maximization as their major objective and they compete with each other in order to achieve this goal. So, what are the strategies and mechanisms used to achieve this end? It has been suggested in Chapter 2 that political parties use different resources in order to convince voters including those that are ideological or economic in nature. Which resource it will rely more on is based on the ideological composition of its supporters and the party's electoral objective. When the core supporters of a party are not ideologically different from other political parties, the use of economic tools for political means is a rational strategy for the party to perform its electoral objective. On the other hand, the literature on the tactical distribution of resources, as one of economic tools, focuses on the nature of the linkage through which political parties distribute resources. Differentiating between programmatic and clientelistic linkages, this study argues that political parties use both strategies. Scholars suggest that the latter is more effective than the former. It is the individualist and conditional nature of clientelistic linkage that makes it a safer strategy in shaping voters preferences. The study mainly focuses on the long-term clientelistic linkages that are developed in the course of repeated interaction. It suggests that the repeated nature of the clientelistic linkage affects who the party targets and how it assures compliance. Perceiving clientelistic linkage on an ad-hoc base, recent studies argue that political parties target either core or potential swing voters that would immediately affect the

162

amount in the support of the party (Anne Case, 2001, Denemark, 2000, Rocha-Menocal, 2001, Margit Tavits, 2009; Graham and Kane, 1998; Schady, 2000; Molinar and Weldon, 1994; Diaz-Cayero, 2008). On the other hand, mentioning the long-term nature of the clientelistic network some studies indicates the use of material incentive for mobilizing, not only core or potential swing supporters but also opposition voters (Thachil, 2011; Cammett &Issar, 2010, Balla, Lawrence, Maltzman, Sigelman, 2002). Under these conditions, the bargain is not a process of a short run interaction that has immediate consequences, but rather of long run where people's perceptions are changed over time. The party does not only target swing voters but also some opposition voters.

A long term clientelistic network also affects the nature of the mechanisms through which political parties control compliance. Scholars like Stokes (2005), or Brusco et al. (2004) stress the coercive nature of compliance where the party controls compliance through punishing the cheaters. On the other hand, some studies focus on assuring compliance through the formation of a system of common shared values and voluntary compliance (Auyero, 2001; Kischelt & Wilkinson, 2007).

The study assumes that a long-term clientelistic network where different types of voters are mobilized and compliance is assured clientelistically is a more effective strategy in consolidating or increasing the vote of the party. This chapter, therefore, builds upon identifying first, the content and type of linkages AKP uses to influence vote choice. It demonstrates the tendency of AKP to use both clientelistic and programmatic linkages to mobilize voters, albeit relying more on the former. The second aim is to identify the nature of this network focusing on the type of voters the political party targets and how it assures compliance. Within this respect, the network can be identified as a problem-solving network composing of different types of voters, where compliance is assured voluntarily by creating a system of common identification where ideological mobilization is also conducted. The first section shows that both ideological and material mobilization strategies are used by the party, and the second section focuses on defining the main characteristics of the network.

6.3- Content of the Mobilization Strategy to Persuade Voters

This section will mainly focus in identifying the content of the mobilization strategy used by the party in order to persuade voters. The study argues that political parties use both programmatic and clientelistic linkages to mobilize voters. As rational actors, political parties formulate strategies that have the most efficient outcome for them. Accordingly, the type of strategy AKP would use is based on its perception on the factors affecting voters' preferences. Actual studies on Turkish politics, analyzing programmatic accountability, have found the importance of both ideology, lift-right self placement and economy in shaping voters' political preferences. On the ideology dimension, center-peripheral positioning measured in terms of religiosity has been highlighted by a great number of empirical studies as decisive in explaining support for AKP (Ergüder 1981; Esmer 2001, 2002, Esmer &Sayarı 2002; Kalaycıoğlu 1994, 1999; Çarkoğlu, 1998, 2002, 2007a, 2007b, 2010a, 2011b; Çarkoğlu & Toprak, 2000; Çarkoğlu & Kalyacıoğlu, 2007, 2009; Çarkoğlu & Hinich, 2006). Recent studies (Başlevent, Kırmanoğu & Şenatalar, 2005; Çarkoğlu, 2008) conducted on AKP's electoral success have mentioned the growing importance of economic evaluations as a further determinant in explaining AKP's electoral success. On the other hand, the existence of patronage or clientelism as a tool used by political parties to gain votes has also been mentioned in the literature (Sayarı, 1977; Özbudun, 1981; Schuler, 1998; Sunar, 1990, Heper & Keyman, 1998, Güneş-Ayata, 1994; Özbudun, 2005; Ayşegül Komşuoğlu, 2009; Kemahlıoğlu, 2005, 2012; Sayarı, 2011).

Based on the literature, the content of the strategy will be evaluated under two different groups. This first one concerns the programmatic nature of the mobilization where deputy candidates and activists inform the voters on the policies of the party. These have been grouped according to the dimensions that are defined as decisive in shaping voters' preferences. The first one is the center-periphery dimension where the democratization process in state society relations and religious affairs comprise important policy dimensions. The second one is the economic dimension where information on the policies of the party on issues such as economic development, state services, social justice, municipal investments are covered. The clientelistic dimension covers all kind of material and immaterial inducements, demanded by the voters or

distributed by the party during these activities. These comprise of different types of public or individual goods. They have been identified as clientelistic as they are conducted through individual linkages.

The content analysis is based on the messages given in the party activities during the electoral campaigning period. These messages have been extracted from the participant observations of 26 days realized during the electoral campaigning activity between 20 April and 11 June 2011 in the districts of Sancaktepe, Beyoğlu and Beykoz. The importance of these electoral campaigning activities is the presence of 1 or 2 deputy candidates from the electoral region under investigation. During these activities, I have been able to observe the discourses of 32 different deputy candidates. These discourses are expected to reflect the party's official stances since these people are trained on the policies of the party before they are sent in the field. In fact, as it will be illustrated, they all have similar stances on major issues, although they also focused on different kinds of policies. Two types of activities provided the opportunity to collect the necessary data for the purpose of the study. The first kind of activities were the door-to-door canvassing and household visits where the deputy candidates listened to, tried to find solutions to the voters' problem and answered their questions. The second types of activities were the small meetings held in the contact offices and houses of the party members where the deputy candidates find the opportunity to introduce party policies.

The observations made on the perceptions of the activists, attitudes of the voters and activities carried by neighborhood organizations confirm that a service based mobilization strategy is very effective in gaining voters' support. In fact, the strategy the party uses can be identified as service based mobilization especially in gaining the support of the potential swing voters. Nevertheless, programmatic mobilization is also used during the process of contacting where voters are informed on the party's policies. In all the districts under investigation, the party uses both ideological appeals and distribution of material resources in order to persuade voters. Yet, although the party uses its communication channels to also strengthen the positive image of the party through informing people on party policies, mostly local issues and problems dominate the agenda. As a result, the party's main strategy in consolidating and increasing its

electoral is based on mobilization through clientelistic incentives mostly in the form of municipal resources.

6.1.1- Programmatic Mobilization

While the distribution of material incentives is the main dimension of mobilization, programmatic mobilization, where the party informs people on the government policies and municipal services, is also used by the party. In fact, according to the party activists, by contacting the voters, they can change their perceptions. A district branch member emphasizes the importance of contact in changing voters' perception by expressing:

> "*When you contact people everything changes. People do not understand the policies of the government or the municipality. They have a prejudice towards them but when they are persuaded that they benefit from these policies, their attitudes change. Think that you blow out a full glass of water and you re-fill in, it creates problems when you blow it out but when you re-fill it people understand your goodwill.*" (Interview carried on 03.05.2011, Beyoğlu).

According to a another district member responsible of the district of Paşabahçe in Beykoz;

> "*People tend to be very reactionary, but this is changing because people see what the party realizes and we do our best to inform everyone on the services of the government and the municipality. We tell them it is great advantage to have AKP in the government, in the municipalities of Istanbul and in Beykoz, and then we ask them to support AKP to take benefit from this advantage in terms of services.*" (Interview carried on 09.04.2011, Beykoz)

The representatives from different ranks consistently mention that they aim to be in touch with the voters not only for helping them to attain their basic needs but also to inform them on the party policy positions and services of the municipality. Most of these services are defined as local ones, which mostly consist of municipal services facilitating the daily lives of the citizens. In lots of occasions, the party activists highlighted that people mostly tend to vote on the basis of material interests, which are mostly local ones. The women branch president of Beyoğlu highlights that this is why

they mostly inform voters on the activities of the government and the municipality. (Interview carried on 05.04.2011, Beyoğlu). A similar observation is made by a district member from Sancaktepe when he highlights the changing behavior of voters after immigration, *"although before migrating to large cities people vote traditionally, once they migrate to large cities they vote according to the services provided to them. Provision of services is vital in this sense."* (Interview carried on 12.04.2011, Sancaktepe). A district member in Beykoz suggests,

> *"The low educational profile of the voters is evident; they do not understand foreign policy or national politics. Their main concern is how much the party serves, and solves the problems in their neighborhoods. You have to know local issues such as the opening of a building, activity of the municipality very well when you contact voters."* (Interview carried on 09.04.2011, Beykoz).

During the electoral campaign, the party representatives widely informed people on the services of the municipalities where huge park-barrel project and social services were continuously highlighted. The discourse of the deputy candidates during the small meetings and door-to-door visits prior to the 2011 general elections suggests that the economic dimension dominates the agenda. In all the small meetings, it was the first dimension that the deputy candidates informed voters on. The policies of the government on economy, social services and municipal investment were the main issues discussed in the meetings. The party activists and deputy candidates highlighted that the elections were general ones and that the voters should decide on whom to vote based on the national performance. They interpreted the policies of the government especially on the social services in the domain of health, education, rights of social insurance of women, handicaps, children etc… The empowerment of services provided by the hospitals, attaining medical assistance, the unconditional right of all children under 18 to benefit from health care was among the main issues in the domain of health. In the realm of education, the increasing share of education in the budget, the opening of new schools, the ameliorated conditions in teaching were highlighted. An important message of nearly all of the deputy candidates in this domain was the necessity to encourage the youth to continue their education or learn a profession. The parents were urged to strictly control the educational path of their children. The economic performance of the government in fighting against inflation and unemployment and in the economic growth attained during the incumbency of AKP were also among the important messages.

167

Furthermore, the candidate deputies informed people on the community projects realized by the government and the municipality. They mostly highlighted that AKP was the only party that had the ability to solve these problems. The social assistance provided by the government to different segments of the society especially in the domain of social insurance was also an important message. Nevertheless, voters, especially women were encouraged to find a job and work. The policy of the government on the issue may be better explained by the discourse of a deputy candidate who also summarized the messages of other deputy candidates:

> "*Force your children to take education. Under these circumstances, you have no excuses, the books are free of charge, and the government provides a pension. If they seem not to continue to their education, send them to a vocational high school so that they can have a profession. There are huge demands for middle rank positions. They should not underestimate the jobs or the payments… I also worked as an intern after my education on law. I returned home at 21.00 in the night but my mother always told me that I should work… Of course, the government has provided you many social assistances but you cannot afford your life with these. Especially women have to find a job and work. The government provides opportunities of education and internship through The Job Creating Agency (İşkur)*"
> (Electoral Campaign on 30.04.2011, Sancaktepe)

The second dimension of the programmatic content was the center-periphery cleavage based on the general rights provided by the government, and the importance of the making of the new constitution. Religion was used through symbols, mostly realized through the discourses of the activists. All were expressed as policies that benefit the whole society regardless of the political orientation of different groups, strengthening the non-discriminatory image of the party. The importance of the new constitution was expressed by focusing on the future of the children and giving the power to the party to make the necessary policy changes as the single governing party. The charismatic characteristics of the leaders blended with a nationalist tone was also a widely touched issue especially in the foreign policy domain, by emphasizing that these would be the politicians who would give the place Turkey deserve in international relations as a respected, strong country.

When the tradition of the party and its widely debated position towards religious issues and its place in politics is taken into consideration, it is rather surprising that these issues did not directly dominate the agenda. The major focus was the party's position as the representative of the people towards the authoritarian bureaucratic state

where religious rights were one of its facades. Nevertheless, the position of the party on the issue was stressed only through gestures and discourses of activists and these were mostly used to voters that are known to be closer to the party on ideological terms. In lots of occasions, activists used expressions that signal their position on the religiosity dimension. Some of these expressions commonly used during the electoral campaigning activities were: "*With the permission of God*" (Allahın izniyle), "*Thank God*" (Allaha şükür), "*Good deed*" (sevap) "*we came first to have your prayer than your vote*" etc... Another widely used gesture was to pray during condolence or special visits for ills, handicaps. Such behaviors were commonly used by activists, especially in households known to be more religious. Nevertheless, more concrete political messages on the issue of headscarf, or religious schools did not cover the agenda. As a matter of fact, the major focus was materialist issues, which provided at the same time a means for the dissemination of ideological messages.

6.1.2- Clientelistic Mobilization

Besides informing people on the policies of the government, a commonly used mobilization tool is the distribution of different kinds of incentives, majority of which comes from municipal resources. As mentioned before, Kitchelt and Wilkinson (2007) suggest that what makes the distributed incentives clientelistic is not the type of the incentive but its conditionality. The mean through which both individual and club goods are distributed is important in defining the linkages used. One of the major activities of the party organization is to distribute the different types of incentives for electoral purposes. The distributed incentives cover very different types of goods ranging from individual and club ones such as community projects, jobs, social assistances or immaterial goods such as visits, dinners, information and assistances of know-how on the procedures of application for benefits provided by state institutions and municipalities.

The inducement of club goods has constantly been used as a strategy by the party to gain support and by the voters to bargain and seems to have been effective in changing voters' preferences. In most of the activities where the party activists met the

citizens, after the voters were informed on broader policies of the government, voters mostly expressed the municipal investments they desire in their districts or neighborhoods. Especially demands for infrastructural investment have been expressed in all the neighborhoods under investigation. Construction machines were working in all the neighborhoods during the electoral campaigning periods. The ceremonies for the opening or construction of new parks, different kinds of buildings ranging from huge sport complexes, conference halls to smaller social assistance buildings were routine activities of the electoral campaign.

After a daily activity in one of the neighborhoods of Sancaktepe the women branch president informs her main branch associate on the negative effect of the hospital project in the neighborhood that could not still been constructed. She proclaims, "*People ask about the hospital and tell they won't vote for us unless they see the realization of the promised services*" she added, "*We should resolve this problem and begin the construction if we want to increase our votes in the neighborhood*" (Interview carried on 24.04.2011, Sancaktepe). In a neighborhood meeting of one of the neighborhood in Sancaktepe the neighborhood president successfully informs the activists on the ability of the party to meet the demands of the contacted voters in gaining electoral support. He proclaimed;

> "*We have to solve the problems of people, notify them to higher authorities, control whether they have been done and inform people. If we do not do that, we will face the results at the ballot box. We should inform the authorities so that we can tell it to their face when they visit the neighborhood if they don't solve the problems*" (Electoral Campaigning activity, 13.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

Beyoğlu district president highlighted that the municipality has made the opening of a "*Semt Konağı*" in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet and they will see whether it will have an effect on their vote shares in the neighborhood (Interview carried on 24.05.2011, Beyoğlu). The use of community services of the municipality can also be traced from voters' attitudes. In lots of occasions, they used their votes in order to receive municipal services. A similar situation of a smaller scale has been observed in the neighborhood of Veysel Karani where people informed the activists they would not support them unless their problem of draining is resolved or the pavements of the streets are repaired. In fact, both problems have been resolved during the electoral campaign by the municipality.

While this assistance consists of informing people on how to benefit on the social, economic or health services provided by both the municipalities and the central government, allocating economic aid is the most important part. How and where to apply for a wheelchair for the handicaps, ambulance services for the ill citizens, other application procedures for state services such as retirement, education, assistance programs, application for a green card to benefit from free health services, care services for elders, education assistance for mentally disabled etc are among major assistances the activists provide. A district member highlights;

> *"helping people on state and municipal services is very important since people don't know their rights, where and how to apply in order to benefit from them and when you help them on these issues they are grateful even when they could not benefit from the service. What is important is trying to help people."* (Interview carried on 18.05.2011, Beykoz).

When demands for economic assistance are taken into consideration, the activists played the role of brokers that defend the individual's right if the demands have been carried under their knowledge. It is interesting that most of the activists stated that the main cause they participated to the party was to help people in need. This shows that connection to the party provides an advantage in benefitting from these assistance programs.

The provision of social aid assistance, employment or taking a construction certificate are the most widely clientelistically distributed individual municipal resources. One of the district members of Beykoz highlights that,

> *"The most commonly raised issues during the activities are social assistance and employment. We direct them to the municipality, other state institutions or private companies. Of course some of them live in very poor conditions we collect contributions from members of the party organization to help them. Separately we direct them to other charity organizations"* (Interview carried on 09.04.2011, Beykoz).

The neighborhood president of one of the neighborhoods in Sancaktepe makes similar statements, albeit more clearly expressing the nature of the clientelistic exchange, *"the main problem in the neighborhood is unemployment. I direct the one who demands a job to our main branch neighborhood president, he works at the municipality and easily solves these issues"* (Interview carried on 10.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

The major content of both door-to-door visits and small meeting are demands of goods of individual or public type. Especially, in the meetings after the deputy candidate informed voters on the policies of the parties, participants began to express their demands and problems and asked for solutions. In fact, an important function of the activists is the provision of these kinds of incentives to the voters, which is not only specific to the electoral campaigning period.

The most important individual type of incentive demanded and distributed is social and economic assistance to the citizens in need. In one of the neighborhoods, with the intermediary of the neighborhood representative, a woman informs the district member on her situation; *"my social assistance that I benefited from a charity organization with the help of your activists has been cancelled; my husband could not find any job. I am in a very difficult situation"*. The district members told her to come to the municipality where she works and she would look what she can do (Interview carried on 30.04.2011, Sancaktepe). In another instance, activists informed by the neighborhood president tried to find permanent shelter for a male citizen who was sent away from his house by his wife and children and found refugee in the one of the mosques of the neighborhood. They decided to contact the municipality (Electoral Campaigning activity on 12.05.2011, İnönü). Especially, the vice presidents of social affairs were commonly contacted with the intermediary of other activists to find solutions to the problems of voters. While I was waiting in the district building in Beyoğlu, the vice president of social affairs was arranging a job talk for a young man who came with a neighborhood activist (visit of the district center on 23.03.2011, Beyoğlu). In another occasion, upon the call of a member of the organization, the same vice president was trying to help a citizen who suffered from osteoporosis. He sent him to a doctor in a state hospital with his reference (Interview carried on 03.04.2011, Beyoğlu).

As it can be seen from the previous examples, municipal services are not the only type of goods that activists provide. Assistance from the prefecture, private charity organizations mostly of religious bases, hometown associations, or businessmen where party activists have organic links through the party are widely used sources of material resources, albeit they remain smaller in magnitude. Almost all activists highlight that benefit from municipal and state assistance are tied to specific criteria and strictly

controlled. So, private resources are especially used to help people that do not fulfill the legal criteria to attain benefits. One activist says;

> *"The criteria to benefit from municipal or state assistance are clear, if you have an estate you are rejected, but buildings do not feed you. You can have a house but still no food to eat. Under such a situation we try to find private contributions."* (Electoral campaigning activity, 13.05.2011, Beykoz)

The women branch neighborhood president of Hacıahmet informed that they have found funds to cloth children, furnish houses or provide food packages from businessmen last year. During the electoral campaign, many residents contacted the neighborhood presidents in order to attain economic assistance. The vice president of social affairs of the women branch of Sancaktepe expresses that they try to find help from all kind of channels. She adds, *"I am working at a charity organization and I have lots of time provided assistance to the voters in need that I identify through this organization"* (Conversation carried on 14.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

In all the districts I have contacted, the district organization centers were full of people who tried to meet the district president to solve their problems with different state institutions or find a job. Most of these people came to the center accompanied by an activist who made the appointment. The change in the atmosphere of these centers from the day to the night was very interesting. While during the day, activities and mobility was in its minimum, especially after 18.00 o'clock one could observe a sudden increase in the number of people who mostly consist of voters trying to find someone to address their problems, mostly accompanied by a party neighborhood activist.

In most of the district branches, there are human resources departments that collect the CVs of people applying the party for a job. The district president of Sancaktepe highlighted that they perform visits to the factories and businessmen in the district so as to be able to find employment for people. He adds, *"When they contact us for any kind of position the human resource department sends them CVs"*. I have witnessed such kind of processes during my visits to the district center. In one occasion in the district of Beykoz activists were informed to collect the CVs of people for jobs opening in the transportation department of the municipality. *"We collect the CVs and send them to the municipal department in charge of hiring the person. Although we give reference, it is their decision to hire them. In a way we act as a broker,"* says the vice president responsible of the organization (Interview carried on 18.03.2011, Beykoz). A

similar process took place in the district of Sancaktepe, where the secretary department collected CVs for job posts for a private company. All activists were informed on the presence of such job posts and many called to get informed on the nature of the job and to give the names of people applying through their connection. The vice president first was uncomfortable with my presence, but then he informed me that a private company would employ cleaners and they were collecting CVs for this position. He added that they act as a broker between private firms and citizens on the issue of employment. (visit on 24.04.2011, Sancaktepe) Although the activists highlighted that the person to be employed was decided by the company itself and they had no influence in the process, it seems quite clear that CVs sent with their references would have an advantage compared to the other ones. In fact, the supervisor of the cleaning affairs of the municipality, a high rank activist of the party, clearly indicated during his talk with another party activist how party connections were important in the selection procedure;

> "*I have heard that your department is looking for cleaners, we have some friends who want to apply even if it is a provisional post*" said the activist. The responsible answered, "*People who enter to our department work for a long period of time, nearly 10-15 years.*", then he adds, "*of course reference is very important in the decision process, acquaintance is a necessity, but afterwards, everything is up to your performance*" (Visit on 08.05.11, Sancaktepe)

A widely used mechanism to materially persuade voters is to inform and invite them to events and trips organized by the party or mostly by the municipality. In all the districts, voters were invited to dinners, touristic trips, and picnics. Although a large number was directly held by the party, events organized by the municipality were also used as means to influence the voters. The attitudes of voters participating in these kinds of activities are an indication on their effectiveness in consolidating support or persuade potential swing voters by creating a sense of solidarity. In lots of occasions people asked activists to attend present or future activities. Given the fact that most of the voters in the district under study are deprived of the economic means to eat a dinner in a reputable restaurant in the district, see touristic places in or outside Istanbul, or afford to go to a picnic on their own where all kinds of food are serviced, such kind of activities were very popular among the voters.

Activists highlight that other forms of inducement of immaterial nature are also effective in changing the perceptions of voters. Among these are the special visits

carried to opinion leaders in the district or certain voters in the neighborhood. Although these visits are used to get informed on the complaints of the citizens, their effect on voters is rather psychological. As one activist proclaims;

> *"People like to be considered as important. This is the case especially for poor people that no one cares. When you go to their houses, they get very proud and they try their best to please you. I have once gone to a house for an evening meal during Ramadan. This was an uninformed visit. The household was eating dinner; we also sat on the table. I cannot tell you the poor condition of the food at the table, probably collected from the trashes of the bazaar. However, we sat and ate with them. They were so happy. We changed their perception towards us"* (Electoral Campaigning activity on 03.05.2011, Beyoğlu).

During such kind of visits, it was visible that people were very happy to be contacted and listened. In most of occasions, they highlighted that even if the party could not find any solution to their problems, their presence and goodwill in listening to their problems was sufficient to gain their hearts. Nevertheless, activists worked very hard to immediately find a solution to their problems. Visits of elders, disabled, sick people, and funerals were important activities organized during the electoral campaign. All of these examples indicate the use of both programmatic and clientelistic linkage by party activists to gain support.

6.4-   Nature of the Clientelistic Linkage Developed by the Party

The study argues that although material content comprises an important part in defining the mobilization strategy, the nature of the clientelistic network through which the party mobilizes the voters and persuades them is more important in understanding its influence on the types of voters. Within this respect, this section aims at defining the major characteristics of the clientelistic network developed by AKP. first, it demonstrates that the party perceives the mobilization of voters as a long term process where different types of voters, including opposition, are targeted through both materialist and ideological inducement. Second it tries to explain the logic behind the mobilization of opposition voters. Lastly, the study displays the voluntary nature of the

linkage through emphasizing the immaterial and persuasive character of assuring compliance.

6.2.4- Long Term Mobilization of Different Types of Voters

The study suggests that the clientelistic network can be identified as a network where different types of goods and different degree of programmatic doctrination are distributed to different types of voters through a repeated course of interaction. As highlighted in Chapter 2, although some scholars suggest that political parties will target only core or potential swing voters (Stokes, 2005; Kitschelt and Wilkinson, 2007), there is also evidence that political parties distribute resources also to opposition voters. Although, the party's main objective is incorporating, core and potential swing supporters into the clientelistic network through the distribution of incentives, opposition voters are also targeted. A neighborhood activist highlights, *"of course priority is given to our supporters but we still do not discriminate. We also help people not supporting our party."* (Interview carried on 11.05.2011, Sancaktepe). During another electoral activity, the vice president of the mayor informed activists that they were in the search for seasonal workers in the department of Parks and Gardens. He highlights, *"we can find no one for the posts not only from our guys but from no one else. Please inform all people you know for the post"* (Electoral campaigning activity on 12.05.2011, Sancaktepe). In line with these observations, the network may be identified as consisting of different concentrated circles composed from different types of voters connected to each other with looser to tighter ties. Each circle has different responsibilities and access to the goods corresponding to these responsibilities where opposition voters are also contacted. Everyone contacted by the network can benefit from inducement depending on type and the extent of his/her services for the party. This system creates a pyramid where at the bottom are opposition voters and at the top are party activists from different organizational levels. Each level has access to different types of resources where the least valuable ones are distributed to the lowest level and most scarce ones to the few ones at the top.

Furthermore, in all the processes where the activists meet the voters, compliance is secured through a gradual persuasion accompanied with positive inducement and ideological mobilization. The same procedure applies to all types of voters, only the length of time of the persuasion process differs. The process of persuasion begins with the contact of one of the party representative with the voter for solving his/her problem, mostly during the routine activities of the neighborhood organization such as special visits, door-to-door visits, or other kind of social events taking place into the neighborhood.

The activists behave differently according to the type of the voter who he/she contacts. If the voter is the loyal supporter of an opposition party, the activists mostly do not mobilize him/her programmatically but give him/her assistance of know-how including giving the name of the institution to apply, the general procedure of the application and names of people, mostly other party activists, who can help him/her.

This helps him/her to develop an intimate relation with the voter through positive connotation and gratitude. In many occasions, I have witnessed such kinds of events where activists paid visits to the supporters of rival parties or help them to apply for assistance. When the voter is closer to the party, mostly, he/she is invited to an activity of the party to personally inform higher rank activists on his/her problem. These kinds of activities are mostly home talks or neighborhood meetings where ideological mobilization is systematically carried out. In these activities, people are first informed on the policies of the party and the municipality. Then, the voter is asked whether he/she wants to be a member of the party. The activists persuade the voters by insisting that there is no requirement for membership, but there are great advantages. Even when the voter replies negatively, the activists try to solve his/her problem. If he/she replies positively she/he becomes a party member.

The way the process works may better be illustrated with a concrete example. In a neighborhood meeting in Beykoz a woman who was selling handmade furniture attended the meeting by the intermediation of the neighborhood board member. After she showed her furniture, she asked for a place to sell them or if possible to find her a regular job. The neighborhood coordinator proposed her to join the party so as she can sell these in the party meetings and signaled her that she should join actively participate in the party work to find a regular job by an example she gave. She said, "*participate with us, there is nothing you have to do, you can come to the meetings and sell these*

there. People in our party like these kinds of things. We has a friend like you who needed a job, she joined the party, attended the regular meetings, meet everyone. At last, she found a good job through her connections during the activities." (Interview conducted on 13.03.2011, Beykoz). After the woman rejected the offer, the neighborhood coordinator called the white desk of the municipality and asked for such a place. Then, after she gave the name of the person responsible to arrange such place, told her to go through her reference, she reminded her that she is always welcomed in the party if she changes her mind. This example does not only reveal that party activists provide assistance not only to their core supporters, but also that certain kind of assistance are conditional.

Membership is the way where party supporters are identified and incorporated into the network. This incorporation is provided through the distribution of several benefits to the members. These are the priority to acquire information circulating with the party organization. All members in a district have same access to some of this information through the computer program where all members' names and contact information are accumulated. Then, through this program all kind of information are sent as a message to the mobile phones of the members. This information mostly consists of general activities of the party and the municipality, job posts where employees are searched etc. During the electoral campaigning period all party and municipal activities organized in Istanbul, in the specific district and neighborhood were sent to the members via their cellular phones. Furthermore, the system is also used to inform people on job posts. In the district of Beykoz members were informed about job postings the municipality opened for drivers. Information on open job posts in Sancaktepe was also transmitted to the members through the system. Through this system, the members gain priority in attending the numerous activities carried by the party and the municipality, in applying for an assistance or job post. One activist recommended me to add my phone number to the system if I wanted to be informed on the time and location of the activities organized in the neighborhood.

People close to the party mostly accept becoming a member. Several activists highlighted that they became member of the party simply because they were asked to, or they wanted to be informed on the activities of the municipality and the party. When I asked one of the activist in a neighborhood of Sancaktepe why she joined party, she remarked; "*The municipality and the party organize several events, but unfortunately*

we cannot participate in them since we are not informed about them. I joined the party to get this information and share with my entourage." (Interview conducted on 10.05.2011, Sancaktepe) On the other hand, in most of these activities people are informed on programmatic issues such as the policies of the government and their purpose. The public performance of the activists in meeting voters' demands increases their reputation, which motivates people to join the network. In fact, a great number of activists highlighted that people wanted to join the network to be able to attain what the party distributes.

Although membership acts as a way to control support to the party and have access to higher types of resources, it is the strategy of the activists after membership that consolidates voters' compliance with the party. Members are contacted in every occasion to participate in the activities of the party in the neighborhood or the districts, are asked to organize a house meeting in their house where they invite their neighbors. Then, if they actively participate in these activities, they are offered to enter the administration in order to help people in their entourage. Dinners, touristic trips, picnics, sometimes job posts are routinely carried activities that serve as incentives to low level activists. However, their most important function is the regularity and intensity of the contact with the members, which increases the solidarity among the members and reinforces attachment to the party. Interpretation of the policies of the party in these activities serves as a venue to shape voters' perception on party policies since they are regularly exposed to the same discourse. Krassa (1988) highlights it as the neighborhood effect and highlights it influence in changing the perception of voters in the long run. Given the fact that members are induced to introduce these policies in different occasions, they also have an indirect effect on other voters' perception. In fact, it is an important tool of indirect mobilization used by party activists. As a result, the member becomes an activist of the party where in each step he/she is not only provided with incentives but also informed on the ideology of the party through the regular activities.

Both interviews and participant observations confirms the studies expectations that the most scarce resources are distributed to the party activists at more important positions and act not only as an important motivation mechanism for these activists but also a way to control the resources for the party. Although, some of the neighborhood presidents have access to some jobs in the municipality, important ones are given to the

members of the district organizations. In fact, the campaigning activities provide an important ground for the activists to develop the required connections to get a job in the municipality, mostly through the recommendation of higher level activists.

The field research confirms that the party network may be identified as consisting of different concentrated circles composed is composed of different types of voters tied to each other with looser to tighter ties. On the other hand, each circle has different responsibilities and access to the goods corresponding to these responsibilities.

6.2.5- Explaining Why the Party Targets Opposition Voters

The previous chapter has revealed that the party also target opposition voters and provides them some basic incentives, albeit its focus is core and swing voters. The aim of this section is to explain why opposition voters are also targeted by the party. According to the literature such a strategy may happen for two main reasons, the long-term perception of the mobilization strategy (Auyero, 2001, Thachil, 2011; Cammett &Issar, 2010) and strengthening of the non-discriminative image of the party (Balla, Lawrence, Maltzman, Sigelman, 2002). In fact, both the discourse of the activists and their behavior signify that both changing voters' perceptions in the long run and blame avoidance explain the strategy of the party in distributing some of the resources to opposition voters.

The distribution of the less valuable resources also to the opposition voters seems to be a function of both the long-term mobilization perception of the party and its attempt to avoid blame. The relationship between distribution of material incentive and electoral support is mostly perceived as a long-term process, which does not is not expected to provide immediate results. Activists of different ranks express their awareness of the long-term function of such a strategy. Although distance of the voter to the partisan network is the first dimension for developing a clientelistic linkage, the decision of the activists on which voters he/she will distribute -core, swing, opposition is another dimension. According to most of the activists, mobilization should not only be evaluated as a strategy that is effective in consolidating the votes for the party in the

short-run but also change the negative perceptions of opposed voters of the party in the long-run.

The discourse of the president of Istanbul Center of Electoral Coordination that provides help to voters summarizes the general perception of the party on the targeting of opposition voters,

> *"I cannot persuade a supporter of an opposition party to immediately vote for our party, but with my non-discriminatory image he/she will first tolerate my presence, and then have sympathy, sooner or later he/she or his/her children will vote for me"* (Interview carried on 23.03.2012, Istanbul).

After a visit in a voter's house supporting the opposition, the main branch president of one of the neighborhood in Sancaktepe highlights; *"These people are voting for CHP, if I help them, I will diminish their resistance against AKP and gain their sympathy. Today they will support the party but in the long run their attitude may change."* (Interview carried on 10.05.2011, Sancaktepe) Similarly, a neighborhood activist in Beykoz proclaims;

> *"We have Koran days in the neighborhood of course we also inform people on the policies of party, earlier our neighbors from CHP talked among them in such occasions, yesterday they just listened without saying a word, I hope in the future they will also share our views."* (Interview carried on 13.03.2011, Beykoz)

This is a good example on the activists' perception that repeated mobilization changes the perceptions of the voters. Similar views are also expressed by higher rank activists;

> *"Ideologically opposed voters endorse the services we provide; furthermore, as we don't try to change people's preferences they do not react to us. We only inform them on who we are, we try to destroy their prejudice towards us. We try to show them that we only want to help people. It is a very important step in persuading people."* (Interview carried on 01.04.2011, Beykoz)

Providing assistance to opposition voters is also a function of the party attempt to avoid blame. In fact, all interviewed activists tried to convince the voters that they were indifferent towards different types of voters. Within this respect, the general discourse of the party is dominated by non-discrimination among different types of voters connected to the network. The party denotes itself as the representative of all the members of the society and the provision of some of the incentives to opposition voters

strengthens this discourse. In every occasion activists highlight that they help people regardless of their political orientations. A district member in Beykoz highlights;

> *"Our purpose is to serve people, when I say serve it is not in the meaning of vote buying but real service. Our party opposes the provision of services to people who do not need it but when someone needs help he/she will get it who ever he/she is."* (Interview carried 01.04.2011, Beykoz)

A similar expression is also used by the president of the center of Electoral Coordination. He insists, *"We try to make politics without personal interest. Our objective is to help people. Politics is the art to find a solution to the problem. Most of the problems we solve are local ones."* (Interview carried on 19.05.11, Beyoğlu) The women branch resident of Beykoz expresses, *"We do not do not help people to gain vote, but to help them. The decision on who to vote is personal, we work to find solution to problems and when we find solutions we become influential."* (Interview carried on 09.04.2011, Beykoz)

An important observation is the activists' insistence that their rejection of delivering services is only based on support for the party. The activists believe that such an act damages the party's non-discrimination image. Yet, as highlighted non-discrimination is mostly applied for know-how assistance or provision of the municipality assistance. The party strengthens its image of non-discrimination and decreases the possible blames of discrimination by allocating the incentives of social services to only the ones who are in need they are more openly distributed[29] and large in quantity. Although officially, the control of the economic conditions of residents who apply for any kind of assistance is the responsibility of field employees of the municipality, party activists are influential in all the process of application, continuation or cancelations. The president of one of the neighborhoods in Beyoğlu expresses;

> *"I am very careful to help only people that are in need. I told my relatives that I would personally help them, but not report them to the district if they need something. I have prepared the list of the people to whom the Ramadan packages of the municipality will be distributed and I have scratched the name of all the people who do not need it. Whether he/she will vote for me is not my concern. If he/she really needs it, I provide it."* (Interview carried on 14.05.2011, Beyoğlu)

---

[29] Assistance of the municipality is distributed by the field personel of the municipality who delivers the benefits through the municipal car. When the personel visits an household, neighbors most of the time see the car and understand that the household benefit from assistance.

Many activists give examples of incidents where they have been influential in the cancelation of the services provided to their own supporters because they have determined that beneficiaries have done fake declarations about their economic situations. A district member in Beykoz states,

> *"Members of a family have their coalhouse with old stuffs and applied for municipal assistance although they have 3 floor building. One neighbor of this family has complained that we help them but they have a house on their own. I investigated it and found it to be true. I contacted the municipality and canceled their benefit. It is because of these events that people says the party only helps its supporters. We should not tolerate such kind of events."* (Interview carried on 09.04.2011, Beykoz)

A similar reaction was made in conversation with a neighborhood activist and a coordinator during a neighborhood meeting: "*People are saying that citizens with good economic conditions also benefit from help,*" says the activist. "*It is not possible, the municipality is working very carefully on this matter,*" answers one coordinator. The other coordinator adds, "*Who are these citizens? Ask the people that informed you to identify these citizens so that we can go and check them.*" The other coordinator warns, "*A person may sit in a beautiful building but still pay rent.*" The activist objected, "*These people have a car. Last time they got a Ramadan package from us but this time I have not written their name on the list of food package assistance*". Then, the activist explains that the major problem in fighting against fake applications was that most of people were working without insurance and although their economic conditions are good, on paper, they have no resources. According to them, that is why they got assistance (Meeting on 13.05.2011, Sancaktepe). One week later when I asked the neighborhood coordinator whether they have controlled the economic situation of these residents, she answered me that they did. According to her, they were really benefiting from the assistance with fake declaration, so they informed the municipality.

Activists also complain about the attitudes of the voters who openly bargain their vote in exchange for goods even if they do not meet the criteria only because they support the party. The vice president of Sancaktepe highlights:

> *"People are coming for help, I look at their situation, inform them on the procedure to apply, give the name of people they can contact. They tell me that they know the legal procedure and ask for another way to benefit from these assistances. I think they want me to go and apply for them or help them immediately, without any procedure. Perhaps they get used to such kind of help, but it is not possible to do something like that, they should be*

able to prove their economic conditions." (Interview carried on 12.04.2011, Sancaktepe)

The women branch district president working in the assistance department of the municipality says,

"*Activists are used to give help to everyone who wants. They call me and say we need assistance to the following address. I tell them, it does not function this way. You have to send this person to the municipality, we do the controls and we give them assistance if they need, we have to follow a certain procedure to minimize discrimination.*" (Interview carried on 01.04.2011,Beykoz)

Another neighborhood activist gives an example of how people try to use their connections to solve their problems through the party connection;

"*One of my resident from my hometown origin came with the reference of my uncle. He could not find work for two years. He asked me if I could help him. I told him that I could only give his CV. I will not call someone from the district to find him a job. Our people want everything to be ready for them. Working for nothing is always better than doing nothing. The municipality has made an announcement for a three month job. No one has applied to it...*" (Interview carried on 14.05.2011, Beyoğlu)

The non-discrimination discourse is also connected to the religious dimension where discriminating between people who need help is a sin. One activist says, "*Our president highlights that oppressed people have no language or religion, we try to implement this vision while we decide who to help.*" (Interview carried on 07.05.2011, Beyoğlu) Another activist argues, "*It is very difficult to determine the families where food assistance will be distributed in the month of Ramadan. If we distribute these food assistances to people who do not really need them, how we will deal with the sin we committed.*" (Interview on 06.06.2011, Beyoğlu)

Although the party constructs an image of a party sensitive to all voters, especially the lower level activists' discourse reveals the conditional relationship between the provision of social assistance and electoral support. Such a discourse is expected to be more accurate, since they are less educated about the party's policies. In one of the neighborhood meetings in the district of Sancaktepe, a discussion between activists broke out on whether voters benefiting from help should vote for the party or not. One activist says, "*If they benefit from help they should vote for AKP. The municipality is also from AKP.*" The other proclaims, "*No, these are different things. Do we help*

people to have their vote? No, then people do not have the necessity to vote for the party." The main branch district president intervenes, "*people do not have to support our party because we help them, but they should if they want the services to continue for a long time. It is the most rational strategy for them.*" (interview conducted on 10.05.2011, Sancaktepe). After another meeting with the voters, a district member highlights,

> "*people who are not voting for the party should not benefit from these social assistance. If I were them, I would not accept assistance from a party that I don't support. I really do not understand how they can do this.*" The other opposes her, "*these are the services of the municipality, everyone can benefit*". (Interview conducted on 30.04.2011, Sancaktepe).

Nevertheless, a great number of neighborhood activists highlighted that the district representatives always warn them not to discriminate among different types of voters for the provision of social assistance and they were very careful to comply with this warning even if they sometimes did not approve it. During our discussion, a neighborhood coordinator states,

> "*There are lots of people who say they support our party, but I think some of them are lying. For example, there is a family whose members tell they support our party, we insisted to make them members but we have never been able to. We even found a job for their sons. At last, three members of their family became our member. While we were passing from their house there was a CHP flag. The women tried to rapidly put it down; she said that it was the kids who hang it. But how can a CHP flag be hanged in the house of an AKP supporter? I told these events to the district president he told me that it was not important. He added that the party's image was to help everyone. He warned me that we should not discriminate between people. I am doing what he told me.*" (Interview conducted on 06.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

The discourse of the activists on mobilizing opposition voters indicates that both the long-term perception of the party in persuading voters and attempt to avoid blame are effective. Yet, this study suggests that the effectiveness of long term mobilization is based on the ability of the activists to develop a linkage through persuasion and immaterial connotations. The next section evaluates the nature of the mechanisms of compliance used by the party activists.

6.2.6- Assuring Compliance through Persuasion

As identified in the previous section, it is not only what the network provides but also how it is provided that determines the consolidating effect of the clientelistic network on voters' electoral preferences. The field research indicates that clientelistic linkage developed by the party is based on voluntary compliance rather than threat where solidarity between the voters and the party is enhanced by positively connoting the party's image on the eyes of the voters. This increases sympathy to the party among opposition voters while increasing party identification among swing or core voters who are ideologically close to the party.

In the overall process, the party representatives project themselves and are mostly perceived by voters as people dedicating their times in helping people in need. How they behave to the voters may better be understood by a few examples witnessed during the field research. It was in the White Desk center of the municipality of Beykoz where the district woman branch president worked as the main official. A woman was waiting with her child in her arms to talk with her. She came, hugged her, and kissed her child. There was the affection of a mother in her face while she was gently palming her hair. Then, she asked, *"How is your kid doing?"*, the young women answered;

> *"She is ill, we came here to see the doctor,"*. *"I understand, she has to be fed well, don't worry I will send you a package of food from the municipality. Please call me if you need anything"*. The young women thanked her with a sincere smile, *"I don't know what I would have done if I did not know you."* (Visit to the municipality on 09.04.2011, Beykoz)

In a similar occasion in Beykoz, the same representative gave a visit to the house of a woman in one of the neighborhoods where the party carried its electoral campaign by the mediation of a party activist residing in the neighborhood. The woman was ill, no one worked in the family, and they were in very poor living conditions as the activists informed the president. The president asked her, *"How are you 'teyze'?"* (an expression used in Turkey for elder people who are close to you which means aunt). *"I am fine my dear daughter"*, *"Do you need anything* Ashamed by her situation the women says *"no"* with a tearful tone. Understanding the situation the president says, *"I see I will come as soon as possible to chat with you and share your problems, is there anything that you*

186

want me to do until then?", *"no my daughter, God bless you"*. After leaving the house, the president turns to me and says;

> *"You see, people have many problems among them is poverty, and they are ashamed of asking something from you. The best we can do is to come, talk with them as friends, listen to their problems and find a solution. It is not only helping them that counts but acting as if they are our friends."* (Electoral campaigning activity on 18.05.2011, Beykoz)

In all the events taking place, where activists visited voters, similar gestures were performed towards the citizens. In many occasions, non-material incentives such as visits, or know-how assistance were very important in increasing the image of the activist as a person sensitive to the voters, even under circumstances where the voters were very furious. Actually, some voters openly proclaimed that they voted for the party before requesting any help. Through their gestures and tones, they menaced the activists that they could not get support unless they listen and find a solution to their problem. Even under these circumstances, activists were very careful not to lose their temper and to behave kindly, albeit they were very uncomfortable with the voters' direct attempts to bargain their votes.

> One voter in the neighborhood of Veysel Karani furiously blamed the activists;

> *"I have always supported your party. I have an ill sister at home and no one from your party has come and asked me if I need something. I want party activists to visit me, see my situation. If no one comes then you will not be able to have my support."* (Electoral campaigning activity on 14.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

The activists apologized to the voter and asked her to come to the meeting the same afternoon to inform them on her condition. Two days later, when the deputy candidate went to a visit, her pleasure could be seen from her eyes. She informed the candidate on her problem, and the candidate asked the activists to help her. While we were leaving, the voter expressed her gratitude to the activist for their sensitivity. Probably another vote was gained for the party.

In another occasion during the electoral campaigning activity in Sancaktepe, an old woman supporting the party highlights, *"you know this girl…"* showing the neighborhood coordinator with her hand, *"She was with me in my most difficult times. She came and visited me as much as she could; she helped me. How can I not vote for her party? If I do not support her, what would God say?"* During one of the electoral

campaigning activities in a neighborhood of Sancaktepe, the discourse between the woman branch neighborhood coordinator and a female voter who contacts her to benefit for assistance also reveals how the activist are perceived by the voters. When the woman approached the convoys, before even the activists talked about her problem, the neighborhood coordinator addresses her;

> "*Do not worry, I have not forgotten your request. I will figure out how I can help you, I try to find assistance from private organizations. But it will take a little time.*" The voter answers, "*I know you won't forget me, you have always found a solution to my problems when I contacted you. And I am very grateful to you for that reason. Thank you very much.*" (Electoral Campaigning activity, 26.05.2011, Sancaktepe)

It is also important to note that activists do either perceive assisting voters in need as a materialist exchange for gaining votes. Furthermore, this perception is not only evident in their conversations with me but also among each other, where activists mostly highlight only the importance of helping people, and not its positive effect on electoral outcomes. In many occasions, activists highlight their happiness for helping someone in need. One activist proclaims, "*Helping people is a religiously good deed, it brings you salvation, there is nothing more comfortable than helping someone in need.*" (Interview on 07.05.2011, Beyoğlu). A conversation between two activists about a female resident who has lost her husband and who has to take care of 7 children illustrates the importance given to the non-material characteristic of the activity. While we were passing near the house, one activist addresses the neighborhood coordinator;

> "*You remember, I have mentioned you the situation of a women with 7 children, she is living here. We have to do something; she really needs help. I've gone to visit her and I almost cried after I left.*"

The neighborhood coordinator answers;

> "*I know this woman. I provided her food assistance and cloth for her children. Nevertheless, we have to find a permanent solution for the sake of her children. They are too young and they cannot even drink milk. Perhaps we can collect money so as to help her provisionally.*" (Electoral campaigning activity, 26.05.2011, Sancaktepe)

The activists in a neighborhood in Beyoğlu complained from the humiliating demands of the district branch who asked them to take photos of the families they help to put them on the web page of the party. One of the activists said;

"The most valuable help is the one given discreetly. We informed the district organization that we would not do something like that. Can you think how humiliating it is for these people, everyone will know that their economic situation is not good? I personally cannot tolerate such an act for the sake of the advertisement of the party" (Interview conducted on, 07.05.2011, Beyoğlu)

The strategies of the party activists to make voters participate to the activities of the party also indicated the persuasive strategy of the party. During the electoral campaigning period, members were frequently asked to participate in meetings held in Istanbul. Most of the time, they tried to persuade voters and activists by using emotional discourses. *"this party has served us, we should show our gratitude"*, *"it is the most important time for our party, if we don't help it now, when will we do it"*, *"We should talk in every place and demand vote for the party so that they serve better to us"* were commonly used expressions.

Although creating voluntary compliance through persuasion is an effective way in consolidating support and increasing reach for the party, its success is based on the amount of interaction among the voters and the party activists. In return, the amount of interaction is based on the length and intensity of the relationship developed between each other. On the other hand, the development of such a relationship requires great efforts for the activists of the party. This is why AKP is expected to develop certain mechanisms to decrease the cost of such s strategy. The next chapter explains how the party uses the local organizations in order to decrease the cost of contacting, identifying and persuading voters of both non-Kurdish and Kurdish origin.

CHAPTER 7

THE NEIGHBORHOOD ORGANIZATION AND THE EFFECTIVE MOBILIZATION OF NON-KURDISH AND KURDISH VOTERS

The previous chapter has illustrated three important points concerning the mobilization strategy of AKP. First, it has been demonstrated that the party uses both clientelistic and programmatic mobilization, albeit the former is the major focus. Second, it has also been signified that the party functions through a network where activists mobilize different types of voters through different types of goods. Third, it has been illustrated that the party assured compliance through voluntary means, which also enhances the effectiveness of programmatic mobilization. Recall from Chapter 2 that the study suggests that this kind of a clientelistic network necessitates mechanisms where the party directly contacts the voter, on a repeated course of interaction.

This study suggests that the neighborhood organization provides a suitable mechanism for the party to mobilize swing voters through this kind of a clientelistic network. Within this respect, apart from the number of activists, two characteristics of the neighborhood organization contribute to the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy. The first one concerns the repeated course of the interaction. The amount of activities of the neighborhood organization decreases the cost of mobilization by increasing trust and assures values, that promotes voluntary compliance through increasing attachment to the party. The second one is the characteristics of the activists. Mobilization is more effective when conducted by people known by the voters. When activists are intensively working for the party for a long period of time and they are members of the social network of the targeted society the effectiveness of the mobilization efforts is expected to be higher.

Yet, recall from Chapter 2 that the clientelistic mobilization of ethnic groups is even more effective when carried through known co-ethnics members of the social networks. Such an argument has four different logics. In an environment of limited information, it signals the members of an ethnic group that their interest will be represented (Chandra, 2004). Second, the ethnic social networks serve for the party as an avenue to decrease the cost to identify voters and assure compliance (Kitschelt & Wilkinson, 2007). Third, in the absence of intercommunity relations and presence of opposition voters among the group, it prevents the reluctance of activists from an ethnic group to identify all members as opportunist. Fourth, when the ethnic group has potential for violence, the presence of known co-ethnics members of the same ethnic social network is vital in incorporating them in the clientelistic network, since violence prevent both activists and voters to publicly declare their political preferences.

Based on these arguments, this chapter analyses the strategy of AKP in increasing and consolidating its support among swing voters by incorporating them into the partisan network for voters of non-Kurdish and Kurdish origin. Within this respect, the first section evaluates the strategy of the party to increase the scope and effectiveness of its clientelistic network for non-Kurdish voters. The second section highlights the main difference of the party's strategy in mobilizing voters of Kurdish origin.

7.2- Mobilization of Non-Kurdish Voters

This study suggests that the neighborhood organizations are important for the party's mobilization strategy since it is through their routine activities that AKP assures voluntary compliance and increases the number of identified voters. The neighborhood organization fulfills these functions through the activities they perform and the characteristics of the activists working in the organization. Within this respect, this section illustrates how each of these factors increases the effectiveness of the clientelistic network by lowering the cost of identifying different types of voters, incorporating them into the network and building trust in order to assure voluntary compliance.

191

7.1.1- Activities of the Neighborhood Organizations and Repeated Interaction

An important dimension of AKP's mobilization strategy is to be in constant contact with the society. The district and the neighborhood branches are important in fulfilling this function. As expressed by most of the AKP representatives, the party's mobilization strategy at the district level is based on regular and intense contacting of the voters by the party activists. The main branch president of Sancaktepe highlights, "*our major aim is to make politics in touch with the society* (Interview conducted on 08.02.2011, Sancaktepe). Within this respect, the local branches, especially neighborhood organizations activities have one basic function for the political party: These activities serve as mechanisms that provide a permanent linkage between the party and the voters. This strategy, which reinforces AKP's nationwide image as "*the party representing the people and serving their interest*", is carried through the routine activities of the neighborhood organizations. It is these activities that increase the repeated course of interaction and the scope of the network.

The neighborhood activities serve as channels through which party activists regularly contact the voters, get informed on their preferences enabling the party to formulate responsive strategies. Furthermore, they help to identify different types of voters for specific targeting, conduct compliance, consolidate the party's votes, and increase solidarity among party activists, members and supporters. They also serve as means to change the perception of the voters on the party. As a result, through the activities of the neighborhood organizations the party fortifies its image as a party close to the citizens that works hard and continuously for this purpose. There is great variety in the activities the neighborhood organizations perform and their frequency, but the major aim is to repeatedly contact as much voters as possible to increase and consolidate the partisan network.

The main activity of the neighborhood branch is the home talks carried by the neighborhood organization. The weekly meeting of the neighborhood administration, to which not only the administration but also all citizens can participate, is among an important type of home talk carried by the party. Although these meetings provide a regular base for such an activity other home talks are also realized by the party activists.

192

The home talks meetings mostly take the form of informal talks where the neighborhood coordinator or neighborhood president informs citizens on the party's policies and notes different demands and problems, all mostly being local issues. The location of these meeting change greatly; they are mostly realized in a members' house but any kind of occasional meeting in the neighborhood such as *"Mevlüt"* or Koran readings, women's tea day is preferable if possible. Mostly the householder or other party members are asked to invite his/her neighbors, friends etc. to increase participation and contact as many members as possible. For main and youth branch neighborhood organizations coffee houses are the most suitable places. These meetings are especially carried in areas frequented by lots of people. While increasing the number of the people informed on the party's policies, these meeting also serve as mechanisms that reinforce the perception that the party is working hard. Indeed, lost of activists mentioned that they purposively made the meetings in crowded places to perform this end. Others highlighted that they preferred to realize home talks in the houses of respected residents of the neighborhood.

Other forms of activities consist of participating in all social activities taking place in the neighborhood such as marriages, funerals, Koran readings, *Mevlüt*s and visits of newborns, sick or aged residents, as the representative of the party. These visits are performed with some gifts such as cloths for baby, candy, tea or coffee. Nevertheless, the members of the neighborhood organization use all aspects of the social sphere to contact people. These social spaces diverge from family visits to café houses etc… One activist highlights "*we make politics everywhere, we talk everywhere we find someone to talk; houses, coffee houses, streets….*" (Interview conducted on 08.05.11, Sancaktepe). While strengthening the bonds between activists as the representative of AKP and the citizens, the activities contribute to a positive perception on the party's sensitivity towards the members and the society, and its overall performance. In fact, the effect of such activities on the voters' perceptions seems to be very positive.

Another important activity of the neighborhood organization is realizing voter surveys (*Seçmen Taraması*). This consists of door-to-door visits to get informed on voters' electoral preferences, demands, problems etc….Albeit activists do not directly ask people on their political preferences, the reaction of the voters mostly give important clue on their orientations when they learn that the activists are coming from AKP. Major Questions asked are on the problems they face concerning the municipality

or state institutions. Then brochures on the party's policies are distributed to the voters. While these activities increase the party's sensitivity towards the voters in the eyes of the latter, they also provide important information on the voters. Not only participating in but also inviting people for all social events organized by the municipality or the party district branch within the neighborhood or the district such as mass meetings, concerts, breakfasts, dinners, trips or picnics for the official members is another responsibility of the neighborhood activists.

7.1.2- Characteristics of the Activists

The formal organizational structure of AKP provides the necessary framework for a mobilization strategy deeply penetrated into the society, which is in constant contact with the voters. Nevertheless, it is not only the repeated course of the contact that increases persuasion and identification of different voters but also the party's ability to realize this contact on a common ground of identification. This common ground decreases the length of the interaction necessary to build a relationship based on trust and solidarity. One activist states; *"When you are in the field, you should behave as if you are one of them. If not, they will not be persuaded that you understand them, care about them or even find a solution to their problem."* (Electoral campaigning activity on 04.06.2011, Sancaktepe)

Although similarities such as hometown origin, profession, education, economic situation are also taken into consideration, AKP's recruitment strategy is mainly based on geographical representation. In the organization, the equal identification of voters is provided through geographical representation. Formally, equal reach is assured in the Party Inner Organization regulation through the obligation it sets on the members of the polling station administration to reside in the polling station under their jurisdiction. The same criterion is also applied for the polling station coordinator who should reside in one of the polling stations under his/her jurisdiction. At the neighborhood level, this coincides to the formation of a neighborhood administration where members residing in different polling stations of the neighborhood are purposefully incorporated. As a result, nearly all streets in the neighborhood are represented in the neighborhood

administration through the polling station coordinators. This strategy defined by the activists as *"street representation"* (since a group of polling stations coincides to a street in the neighborhood) is given great importance as declared by a considerable number of activists during the field research. All, the district presidents and vice-presidents responsible of the organization highlight that their main criteria for recruitment is geographical and that the party increases its network street by street through incorporating an activist residing in that street.

Within each organizational level, the district and neighborhood presidents pay attention to have activists residing in the geographical unit under their jurisdiction. As a matter of fact, the representative character of the activists is under the strict control of the district president and the vice president responsible of the organization. In all activities, party representatives contacting the society were very careful to go with the activists known by the neighborhood. Besides facilitating communication and affecting voters' perception, this gives them the opportunity to be informed on the general attitude of the electorate, all events taking place and set regular channels of communication within the whole of the geographical unit under his/her responsibility. This decreases the cost of contacting, identifying and creating a relationship based on trust with the person contacted.

In fact, the characteristics of the person who initiates the contact (i.e. party volunteer versus someone in individual's social network) may affect voter's decision (Çarkoğlu, 2010, p.10). As one of the members of the district organization highlights, *"We can change the perspective of people only when we find a common ground of identification with them"* (Interview conducted on 09.04.11). The declaration of the party representatives and the main criteria upon which activists are selected confirm the presence of such a strategy in the party. Furthermore, especially where the party activists develop a multifaceted and permanent linkage with the voters, the characteristics of the activist and whom he/she represents serve as a first step in developing intimate relations with the voters.

Even more importantly, the characteristics of the activists who contact the citizens affect the voter's perception towards the sincerity of the messages given to him/her. For the voters, representation provides a mechanism where they identify with the party since it helps them gather information on whose interest the party is representing and decrease the cost of building trust between the party and the voter. In lots of occasions when the

activists contacted the voter for the first time, they immediately tried to find a common ground before informing them on the party policies. Place of settlement, hometown origin are typically asked questions by the activists to create a positive interaction. The conversation between the municipal member and the owner of a shop during the electoral campaigning activity provides a good example on changing perception of voters. The owner seemed not very uncomfortable with the situation when we entered the shop. Activists asked him whether he has any complaints. He quickly answered that he has not and began to make its routine activities. It was only after the member of the municipal council asked him his hometown origin and informs him that they were from the same town that the owner began to talk sincerely. We stayed in the shop for approximately 5 minutes (Electoral campaigning activity, 21.02.2011, Sancaktepe).

Activists highlight that the presence of people from their own street, neighborhood or district within the organizational structure increases the voter's identification with the party. The use of representational characteristics by the voters as a base to understand whose interest the party targets is especially more influential in political settings characterized by the lack of information on peoples' identities. Under these circumstances, the representative characteristics of the party activists provide a first clue for the voters.

A woman branch district president highlighted that she purposefully visited people with the party activists that the voters know because it was only then that people tend to trust her and expressed themselves more sincerely. She says;

> *"If I knock the door as a stranger and ask them whether they have a problem or complaint, they would probably say nothing. But when I go there with someone they know, they will ask me to get inside and tell me their most intimate problems."* (Interview conducted on 06.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

In fact, I have been able to witness the possible effect of such a strategy on voters' behavior. In most of the households I have entered, it was only after I and other strangers were introduced by the known activists that people began to talk on their views or problems.

The importance of being *"the guy of our street"*[30] can also be traced in the performance of the activities of the party. In all activities taking place in the

---

[30] An expression used by most of the activists to define someone living in their street or neighborhood.

neighborhood, such as home talks, special visits etc the district branch is very careful to perform them under the presence of the neighborhood activists known by the voter or district representatives residing in the neighborhood.

Recall that the lack of information on voters' types and needs is a major problem that political parties try to overcome. In fact, it is not always easy to identify the type of the voters that you first meet. One activist proclaims;

"I *try to guess voters' preferences of people that I know by asking them how they are. If he/she tells me that he/she is happy, He/she probably supports AKP, in contrast, if he/she tells me that she is not well he/she probably supports another party. We express that we support AKP discreetly through our gestures, we show ourselves happy, pleased with our lives, and we smile to everyone."* (Interview conducted on 10.05.11, Sancaktepe).

Within this respect, representation provides easy reach to the voters since activists perform their activities in their own social environment and as a result, can more easily communicate with people, identify them and participate in daily lives of the citizens as the representatives of the party. It decreases the cost of identifying the voters' types and needs. All neighborhood presidents highlighted that they get informed on the voters' preferences, problems by the intermediary of the members of the administration residing in the same street.

Furthermore, all activists proclaim that they know people in their street, their problems, and electoral preferences. In lots of occasions where higher rank party representative attended the meeting, these activists informed them on the problems or party orientations of the participants. After a home talk carried in one of the neighborhood of Sancaktepe, the neighborhood activists informs the district activist on a woman who wanted help;

"*This woman is from CHP. Her husband was working at the school but he left. She comes to every home talk to discreetly criticize the policies of the government. She tells that she could not benefit from the assistance of the municipality but it is a lie, I know she benefits*". (Electoral campaigning activities on 30.04.2011, Sancaktepe).

During the electoral campaigning activities in one of the neighborhoods in Beyoğlu, a district member residing in the neighborhood tells me, "*You see these teenagers right there. I know them; we are residing in the same street. They are from the youth branch of BDP. They wait there in order to intimate us and observe*

participation in our activities," (Electoral campaigning activities on 03.05.2011, Beyoğlu).

A neighborhood president from Sancaktepe highlighted how it is difficult for them to perform activities in the polarized parts of the neighborhood with activists unknown by the residents:

> *"It is very difficult to perform any activities in these streets if they don't know you. Last time, two of our activists went to one of these streets and they were interrogated by some residents on their intention to come there, fortunately they have been able to return without any problem but they could not distribute the brochures."* (Interview conducted on 10.05.2011, Sancaktepe)

A provincial responsible of the district of Beykoz strictly criticized the composition of the neighborhood organization, which was not established on the street criteria. She said;

> *"This is not right; there is a common criterion to form an organization. If you know how to do it, then, it is very simple to form it. The organization should know the neighborhood and the neighborhood should know the organization. In order to do that you should have representatives from each street so that you can regularly be informed on people".* (Interview conducted on 31.05.2011, Beykoz).

Representation is also effective in shaping the relations of the party with activists and supporters of other parties. One neighborhood president says;

> *"We do have problems with CHP or BDP activists during the electoral campaign but when the elections are over, all is forgotten since we are neighbors and share the same social environment, we have daily, face to face relations with most of them"* (Interview conducted on 06.06.2011, Beyoğlu).

Similarly, another activist proclaims;

> *"I live in the same building with the neighborhood president of BDP, we talk with each other. How much can she behave brutally? After the elections we will still be residing in the same building"* (Interview conducted on 03.05.2011, Beyoğlu)

Since the functioning of the party requires an intense devotion of time and effort of the activists in party affairs on voluntary grounds, recruiting people that have time, are active, respected, dominant (mostly local elites) in their society, have good relations with the residents as a whole are further characteristics that the party pays attention. The

individual characteristics of the presidents and other representatives are vital in carrying on and increasing the party's organizational strength at both district and neighborhood level, since their main function is to form the branch organizations and provide the coordination of their activities and relations between members. Replacement of the neighborhood president is a very widely exerted procedure when the organization in the neighborhood is not functioning as desired. In neighborhoods where the neighborhood president is active and successfully forms its administration on representation principles the party is successful in reaching diverse voters on a regular base.

This section has illustrated the role of the neighborhood organizations in increasing the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy both in increasing the scope of the interaction and its voluntary nature by using existing channel of interaction. It has illustrated that not only the number of activists but also the intensity of the neighborhood activities and their geo-graphical representativeness decrease the cost of identification and persuasion. Nevertheless, it is important to note that such a strategy is carried under areas where citizens of Turkish origin reside. In fact, areas where citizens of Kurdish origin reside, the party's ability to reach, indentify and persuade the voters of Kurdish origin by the existing organization is more difficult. As a result, the party formulates a different strategy for their mobilization. The next section is a detailed evaluation of the major difficulties witnessed by the party in mobilizing citizens of Kurdish origin through street representation and identification of the strategy used by the party to overcome these difficulties.

7.3- Mobilization of Kurdish Voters

The previous chapter has illustrated that mobilization of non-Kurdish voters was mostly materialist albeit containing ideological aspects as well. In contrast to cultural theories on the rise in ethnic consciousness (Deutsch 1954; Gellner 1964; Lipset and Rokkan 1967, Horowitz, 2000), rationalist approaches relate the rise in ethnic consciousness to the competition of different ethnic groups for material resources. Within this respect, if ethnic consciousness is a function of material distribution, the content of the mobilization strategy of AKP for voters of Kurdish origin is not expected

to greatly diverge from voters of non-Kurdish origin. As a result as a specific form of mobilization through particularistic distribution, clientelistic linkage is also expected to be effective in consolidating or increasing support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin. The first section briefly focuses on the content of the mobilization when the party contacts Kurdish voters.

Yet, the study suggests that the violent nature of the Kurdish movement, high ethnic consciousness, the weak and conflictual nature of the inter-community relations, presence of different types of voters among citizens of Kurdish origin makes their incorporation into the clientelistic network through street representation very difficult and ineffective, since it increases the costs of identifying different types of voters. Based on the discourse of the activists, the second section illustrates how potential of violence among voters of Kurdish origin, weak intercommunity relations and prejudice of non-Kurdish activists on the opportunism of voters of Kurdish origin makes the identification of different types of voters more difficult. The last section reveals that the party prefers to mobilize voters of Kurdish origin through known co-ethnic that are members of the ethnic social network.

7.2.1- Content of the Mobilization Strategy

The previous section has showed the use of both ideological and material content by AKP to mobilize voters. This chapter builds upon understanding whether the mobilization strategy of the party diverges when voters of Kurdish origin are concerned. It suggests that although activists also use ideological discourse when voters of Kurdish origin are contacted, the material content dominates the agenda. In fact, both activities during the electoral campaigning period and expressions of the party members support this suggestion. Nevertheless, party members highlight that they mainly focus on the mobilization through material incentive since it is perceived to be a more effective strategy for them. This section defines the perception of the activists on the content effective in persuading Kurdish voters and illustrates the use of both types of content to mobilize Kurdish voter.

Clientelistic Mobilization

Material mobilization is expressed as the main strategy the party uses in order to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin, albeit ideological discourses are also used. The explanation of the main branch president of Sancaktepe clearly illustrates how the party perceives the mobilization of voters of Kurdish origin. When I ask him how they try to mobilize them, he answers: *"We have not much to tell them ideologically; at most we can say that we are not racists, that's all. We inform them about our services, we try to persuade them by serving them"* (Interview conducted on 22.03.2011, Sancaktepe). A similar perception is also visible for the main branch district president of Beyoğlu;

> *"The services provided by the municipality are an important dimension of our mobilization strategy. The neighborhoods where citizens of Kurdish origin are large in quantity are neighborhoods that benefit to most from social assistance program. Furthermore, the municipality opens Neighborhood Houses(*Semt Konakları*) where citizens can benefit from shelter, daily food, showers, washing machines etc"* (Interview conducted on 09.12.2010, Beyoğlu).

The main branch president of a neighborhood in Beyoğlu, highly populated by Kurdish citizens, expresses his view on the effect of social assistance on voters' preferences, *"They all change when you provide them assistance. I think social assistance is very effective, since they know that they should support the party if they want the benefits to continue."* (Interview conducted on 03.04.2011, Beyoğlu). The same president valued so much the effect of assistance that he showed me a questionnaire that he gave to voters on every occasions where questions on the socio-economic condition of the voter, his/her problem and demands are asked. Activists highlight that they also use immaterial inducement such as visits or assistance for application and that this is effective in changing the perceptions among voters of Kurdish origin.

The use of material incentive in order to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin is also a strategy expressed by interviewed activists of BDP, albeit exaggerated, perceived to be very instrumental and used as a source of criticism. One of the Beyoğlu district members highlighted;

> *"Vote buying is very common for gaining support. Among the resources distributed are jobs in return for membership, the provision of meal*

etc…Even cash money. The white desk of the municipality distributes checks in return for vote. They focus on uneducated poor people. Religion is also an important aspect, since most of the 'Kurds' are religious, AKP members contact them in mosques and Mescits ".

The activists indicated discriminative policy against citizens of Kurdish origin. The same member claims, *"There was a 'Kurd' from Van in the former Municipal Council, he got in a dispute with the mayor proclaiming why there is no job for people from Kurdish origin"* (Interview conducted on 09.12.2010, Beyoğlu). Similar observations on the use of material incentive have also been highlighted by the presidents of BDP in the districts of Zeytinburnu, Küçükçekmece, Sancaktepe as a mean to criticize the party's policies.

Another example of such a use was given by the president of BDP in the district of Küçükçekmece. He illuminated with pride;

> *"A woman helped one of our female supporters who had to migrate here due to violence in the 'Kurdish Region' and lost her husband in the 'war. After thanking her, she asked the women who she was. When she learned that she was the district president of the woman branch of AKP, she gave back her the food package and said that it was because of the policy of her party that she was in this desperate situation."* (Interview conducted on 25.01.2011, Küçükçekmece)

When an old resident who seemed to be from Kurdish origin reacted to a group of teenagers supporting BDP that harassed the AKP activists during the electoral campaigning activities, one of the teenagers shouted to him, *"Uncle they deceive you with macaronis, and you support them. Be ashamed of yourself"* (electoral campaigning activity on 21.05.2011, İnönü).

Ideological Mobilization:

Although during the electoral campaigning activities, the focus was given to the services of the municipality, the Kurdish question was also an issue touched upon. Within this respect, the deputy candidates were very careful to express a moderate position on the issue, claiming that AKP was supporting Kurdish rights. The Kurdish

problem was incorporated in the making of the constitution, which was defined as an important step to end violence.

There was not direct reference to the solution of the Kurdish problem unless it was mentioned by the citizens. Yet, the problem was addressed under the broader center/periphery cleavage. The issue was integrated to the making of the new constitution that would enhance social and individual rights of the citizens vis-à-vis the state. Major rights given by the government such as right of education in mother tongue, opening of the Kurdish TV and its attempts for the democratic opening was among important issues covered but no future policy was announced. One of the candidate deputies expressed,

> *"There was a huge problem in the Southeast region of Turkey. Up until now, the problem was seen as one of security. We delegated the issue to the military and police forces, we put ban, and we told them that they could not talk in Kurdish. The dying Kurdish children are also ours. As AKP, we initiated a project of unity to solve this problem. We have to inform people on these policies in pure calmness and with patience. Our policies have no beent yet perfect up until now but they will be. This is why we expect your votes"* (Electoral Campaign on 12.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

In a barbershop during the electoral campaigning activity in the neighborhood of Veysel Karani when an opinion leader of the neighborhood, defined as a BDP supporter by the activists, asks about the Kurdish problem, the deputy candidate was very careful to have a moderate answer. When he asks, "*what the prime minister says is not very consistent. In one occasion, he declares that there is a Kurdish problem in Turkey, in another one, he says there is no Kurdish problem, but Kurds have problems. What would you say about that?*" A little bit disturbed from the question the deputy candidate answers; "*It is a misunderstanding. Many steps have been taken but all of them return from the Constitutional Court because of the present constitution. A new constitution will be made and many problems will be solved. A TV has been opened, people can learn Kurdish*". When the Kurdish opinion leader expresses that he wants to make science in his own language, the deputy candidate expresses, "*It is also happening, it will happen*" (Electoral campaigning activity on 14.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

During his talk in the contact office of a neighborhood a deputy candidate defines the policy of the party on the Kurdish issue under two dimensions: the minority rights and economic distribution when he asserts;

"Dark powers are trying to provoke people. Don't be instruments in their hands. There are people from different origins among us, Turks, Kurds, Bosnians, Lazs....we all have sub-identities but we are all equal and we want a Turkey which is equal to everyone. We want every people, Turks, Kurds, Bosnians, Lazs without discrimination. We do the same investments in the West as in the East. There are no more villages without electricity in the East. Do you want all of these to continue? Then, you have to support us." (Electoral campaigining activity, 14. 5.2011, Sancaktepe)

The campaigners were very careful to separate the Kurdish citizens from PKK and BDP. BDP was indirectly criticized for increasing violence and was declared illegitimate. This tendency was also very apparent in activists' attitudes towards the activists of BDP. During the campaigns although visits to contact offices of CHP were performed, they consciously changed their way in places were BDP opened its contact office. During the visits of the neighborhood, one deputy proclaimed to a voter from Kurdish origin asking about the violence in their neighborhood. She said; *"This is why we are working very hard, so as to prevent the election of a women to the parliament who has clapped the face of a police officer"*[31] (Electoral Campaign on 12.05.2012, Sancaktepe). Nevertheless, the party also contacted voters known to be BDP supporters during the electoral campaigning activities. One incident in a neighborhood where the party could publicly function shows how activists were careful not to discriminate Kurdish voters. Although they had decided to finish the door-to-door visits, they continued when they realized that they arrived in the part of the neighborhood where Kurdish voters were in majority.

Religion was not a directly used discourse in the mobilization strategy. However, a discussion between a AKP and BDP activist both from Kurdish origin after a dispute during the electoral campaigning activities, successfully reveals the perception of each party on the issue and how they mobilize voters of Kurdish origin. The activist making the discussion informs me; *"He asked me, as a Kurd, how I could work for this party. I told him you are a Sunni and the district president of BDP is an Alevi, how can you work for her?"* (Interview conducted on 22.05.2011, Sancaktepe). As a matter of fact, BDP activists I have interviewed argued that the party used the religious places such as

---

[31] The woman that the deputy candidate indicated is the BDP independent candidate from the same electoral district Sebahat Tuncel. Approximately one week before the campaigning activities Tuncel appeared in the press while she was slapping a police officer in a protest where the police violently intervened with tear bombs and brutal use of force to the protestors.

mosques, *Mescits* where voters of Kurdish origin frequently go to contact and mobilize them.

Both discourses of the AKP activists and electoral campaigning activities indicate that the party uses both ideological and material content to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin as non-Kurdish potential swing voters. Nevertheless, this study suggests that the ability of the party to clientelistically mobilize them is based on the mechanisms through which the party incorporates them into its partisan network. When mobilization of Kurdish voters is concerned, the characteristics of the activists that initiate the contact are even more important for their mobilization through clientelistic linkage. The next section is a more detailed evaluation of the main differences of clientelistically mobilizing voters of Kurdish origin as opposed to their non-Kurdish counterparts.

7.2.2- Ingroup and Intergroup Relations and Mobilization

The previous section has identified the importance of neighborhood organizations in the formation of a service-based network functioning through different concentrating circles that positively affects voters' perceptions on the party. Within this respect, the cornerstone of the function of the network has been identified as to consolidate and increase the party's support through the incorporation of swing voters ideologically close to the party into the network. Yet, the success of the party to incorporate these voters into the partisan network and gain their support is based on the identification of different types of voters. The previous section has illustrated that in non-Kurdish settings, the party performs this through the activities of the members of the neighborhood organization selected from the same neighborhood. Identification is increased through extending the organization in each of the streets of the neighborhood.

Potential for violence, the presence of different types of voters among citizens of Kurdish origin and the weakness of inter-community relations make difficult to identify citizens of Kurdish origin through non-Kurdish activists. As a result, the street representation strategy that the party uses to increase identification is not an effective strategy for voters of Kurdish origin. This section illustrates how each of these factors

205

makes the identification of voters of Kurdish origin through non-Kurdish activists a difficult task.

Risk of Violence and Fear

The characteristic of the opposition voters is an important factor decreasing the effectiveness of the strategy. This is due to the violent character of the Kurdish ethnic movement that differentiates it from other opposition groups the party faces. Although the non-Kurdish opposition voters, namely the ones who vote for CHP, react to the activists of the party, this reaction is mostly through the discourse. During the electoral campaigning activities, many supporters of CHP have been contacted. These voters expressed their reaction through criticizing the government policy especially on the retirement, economy and privatization. Sometimes they refused to shake the hands of the candidate deputy, but in no circumstances, threatening behaviors have been carried. In one occasion, one citizen yielded to the activists in the street, *'don't come close to me if you are from AKP....off course I will vote for Kılıçdaroğlu'*. When Kurdish voters are concerned the reaction has the possibility to go even further, including resorting to violence. Furthermore, not only opposition voters but also potential swing voters may use violence as well. Thus, identification of the opposition voters is especially decisive for the mobilization of Kurdish voters.

In fact, such violence was widely used by BDP supporters to intimidate the activists and is proven to be successful. It increases fear among the non-Kurdish activists and force them to work discreetly. The use of violence by Kurdish voters of the opposition has widely been reported by AKP activists and observed during the electoral campaigning period. As it will be exemplified in detail in the next section, harassment, harming the contact offices with Molotov cocktails, throwing stones have widely been carried. During a woman branch weekly district meeting neighborhood activists complained that they could not freely work in the neighborhood, that BDP supporters harassed them. One activist, proclaimed, *"They are threatening us, we cannot work publicly, please do something"*. (Meeting conducted on 04.05.2011). After we have returned from an electoral campaigning activity, activists were talking about an attack realized to the election bus of the party. Terrified, a woman activist from the district branch tells the incident;

"We were waiting at the red traffic lights. Suddenly, someone threw a large stone to the front glass of the bus. The glass broke, I was at the front, and both pieces of the glass and the stone came to my back. I could not understand what happened, I was very afraid. We left the activities and directly came here" (Electoral campaining activity, 20.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

In another occasion in Beyoğlu, a district activist informed me that their election bus was attacked in the region of *Şark Sofrası* known as place where there are lots of BDP and PKK supporters. *"The driver left the bus and escaped. He would have been very badly beaten if he had not escaped. We have decided to suspend our activities"* (Electoral Campaining activity, 02.06.2011, Beyoğlu). Such a violent act that I have been able to observe, happened during the door-to-door visits in the neighborhood of İnönü. A few teenagers supporting BDP began to harass one of the youth branch activists. The incident began after a group of teenagers comes together slowly as they followed the party convoy. After attaining a considerable amount of people, they began to shout, tear apart the brochures distributed by the party. One said, *"We chase you from here, but you come again. How brazen you are. People are dying in the mountain who will take their responsibility? You are running after a few votes"*, (electoral campaigning activity on 21.05.2011, İnönü) As they were approaching the convoy, the male activists told the female to enter immediately to the bus, then the car left as they also entered in. The bus immediately went to the district coordination center from the back streets of the neighborhood. The activities in the neighborhood have been cancelled.

A woman branch neighborhood activist illustrates;

"We had lots of problems during the 2002 general elections; they told me that I would regret if I continued to work for the party. I tried to help a voter who had no ID number at the polling station. The males walked on me, I became so little among them. Our friends come (indicating the male activists of AKP), take me from there and dropped me home. When I see the ones who attacked me in the street I still fear sometimes" (Interview conducted on 26.05.2011, Veysel Karani).

Similarly, the women branch president of the same neighborhood explains that she decided to wear a chador after she stayed in a dispute between the BDP and AKP supporters and got hit. She says, *"Now no one can know who I am, I prefer to work discreetly"*

The violent character of the Kurdish citizens and perception of the activists do affect the party's policy. When they do not identify the Kurdish voters, non-Kurdish activists do not expose themselves as party representatives and prefer to work discreetly. Even under circumstances where they provide help to these voters, they do not express their connections with AKP. In the absence of identification, activists behave the same way to voter supporting and opposing the party. This in return makes it difficult to incorporate supporters to the network. In the entire neighborhoods under investigation, activists proclaimed that they did not expose themselves to voters they could not identify in door-to-door visits conducted during the electoral campaigning period or when they provide assistance to the ones in help. In fact, during the voter scans (*seçmen taraması*) none of the activists of non-Kurdish activists unknown by the voters of Kurdish origin did not inform them they were working for AKP, they mostly behaved as if they were coming from the municipality.

The neighborhood president of Çukur says; *"Of course we work discreetly, we don't want our car to be burned in the middle of the night. We have not even opened a contact office. If we did they would probably burn it."* (Interview conducted on 03.04.2011, Çukur). A similar discourse on the fear of the possible pressure of BDP supporters on Kurdish activists is highlighted by the woman branch district president of Beyoğlu when she talks about the newly formed neighborhood administration of Çukur, which is heavily populated by Kurdish residents. *"They are so afraid of violence that they perform their meeting not in the neighborhood but in the district center of the party"* (Interview conducted on 05.04.2011 Beyoğlu). As a result, the activists of non-Kurdish origin only expose themselves to voters they can identify.

The potential violence inherent in contacting a voter of Kurdish origin, the reluctance of activists of non-Kurdish origin to expose themselves due to fear of violence greatly damages the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy of the party. First, by damaging the strategy of the party of non-discrimination towards different types of voters, it prevents the normalization of the relations between the opposition groups that would decrease violence. Furthermore, as it will be revealed in the next section, it makes mobilization by strangers very costly since neither of the sides gathers information on each other's political orientations, decreasing the potential to identify possible supporters.

Identification, Discrimination and Prejudice

The presence of opposition voters and the weakness of inter-group relations among Kurdish and non-Kurdish voters makes it more difficult to mobilize them with existing non-Kurdish activists. First, group pressure decreases the desire of voters of Kurdish origin to publicly demonstrate their political preferences. Second, the nature of inter-group relations makes the identification of different types of voters difficult through the routine strategy of the party. Third, under circumstances of weak inter-community relations, the presence of opposition voters among citizens of Kurdish origin increases the prejudice of the activists that voters of Kurdish origin are opportunist, making them reluctant to mobilize them.

In geographical units with non-Kurdish voters, existing activists have several tools through which they can identify voters when they contact them for the first time. One of the first tools to differentiate between voters is acquired during the first stage of the contact. This identification does not require any pre-given relationship between the activist and the voter. In Turkey, non-Kurdish voters' physical appearance is an important indicator in differentiating actual or potential supporters from ideologically opposition voters. One example may be the main differences in physical appearance of CHP supporters from AKP supporters that are identifiable at first sight. Wearing a scarf or having a modernized outlook, the socio-economic status of the voter are clear signs of identification for the party activists. In fact, during the electoral campaigning period such signs have widely been used by activists to differentiate between CHP and other parties' supporters. In one occasion such a categorization has been carried by the deputy candidate in order to understand my political preferences. After observing my physical appearance and behavior he declared me, *"You are a CHP supporter, but after this campaigning activity I will persuade you to vote for AKP"* (Electoral Campaigning Activity on 19.05.2011, Beyoğlu). Although it is more difficult to identify SP or MHP supporters such a situation does not create any problem for the party since they are both perceived as potential swing voters and have been targeted by the party during the 2002 general elections. Other tools to indentify different types of voters are the place of origin of the voter and his/her discourse and gestures after the activists identify him/her

self as an AKP activist. In contrast, although voters from Kurdish origin can easily be identified by physical appearance, his/her political orientations cannot. When Kurdish voters are concerned, mostly both opposition voters and supporters have the same physical appearance; their hometown origin mostly does not help them to differentiate since as it has been revealed in the third chapter AKP and BDP have supporters in all the Kurdish populated provinces. Even more important, the Kurdish voters do not expose themselves through their discourses or behaviors. May be a way to differentiate between swing from strong opposition Kurdish voters may be their religious practices. In fact, Interviewed BDP activists indicate the use of neighborhood mosques by AKP activists to reach swing Kurdish voters. Nevertheless, such a strategy is not expected to as effective since a large number of core BDP supporters are also religious. Furthermore, as it will be revealed in detail citizens of Kurdish origin do not expose their ideological or political preferences in public places.

In all the neighborhoods under investigation, the activists proclaimed that they could not understand whether the voters supported their party or not when they contacted them. A non-Kurdish activist in the neighborhood of Veysel Karani says, "*Some citizens of Kurdish origin do not vote for us, but it is impossible to determine them. They say they support our party, or sometimes that they are against it but we don't know if it is true*" (Interview conducted on 11.05.2011, Veysel Karani). In fact during the electoral campaigning activities most of the voters of Kurdish origin, expressed that they have not yet decided whom they will vote for. The neighborhood president expresses in another occasion her disturbance of not being able to identify the electoral preferences of voters of Kurdish origin. She says, "*The supporters of CHP mentions it very easily but we don't know them* (mentioning the citizens of Kurdish origin), *it is more dangerous.*" (Electoral Campaigning Activity, 21.05.2011).

The in-group pressure makes it difficult to identify different types of voters through the strategy of street representation. Within this respect, most the activists highlight that there is great pressure to Kurdish voters from their community. As a result, even core supporters do not want to expose themselves publicly. This is why they mostly behave as if they are against the party although they give support. In all the neighborhoods under investigation activists highlight that even their known supporters do not participate in the same manner as other supporters in the activities of the party. An activist from the neighborhood of Veysel Karani says, "*We have friends among*

210

them (talking about Kurdish voters)*, they behave very differently when they see us in the contact office. I think they behave like that because they have to do it*" (Interview on 11.05.2011, Veysel Karani). In the neighborhood of İnönü, the women branch president says;

> "*We have never been able to enter in the household of any voters of Kurdish origin or effectuate any home talks in the house of our members of Kurdish origin. Activists from Kurdish origin only have invited people they know are more moderate in their ideological orientations and closer to AKP. They try to be cautious because they fear from potential reactions in their community*" (Interview conducted on 10.05.2011, İnönü).

In all the neighborhoods activists highlighted that their supporters of Kurdish origin were not able to vote in the referendum because BDP boycotted it. The president of the neighborhood of Hacıahmet expresses;

> "*The BDP activists declared that citizens of Kurdish origin would not go voting. They were waiting near the school to indentify citizens of Kurdish origin that went voting. Many people returned from school because of fear. Even our members could not go; we told that them nothing is more important than their security.* " (Interview conducted on 07.05.2011, Hacıahmet).

He gives another example on the effect of group pressure on the Kurdish voters,

> "*We were sending my brother to his military service; we have friends from them* (indicating the Kurdish citizens in the neighborhood)*. They also came to his ceremony. We had Turkish flags in our hands; they were intimated and stepped aside. It was only after we get out from the neighborhood that they participated to the celebrations. They told me that they could do nothing in the neighborhood due to their fear of being harassed*" (Interview conducted on 07.05.2011, Hacıahmet).

Apart from the reluctance of voters of Kurdish origin to expose their political preferences, the nature of the inter-community relations between them also decrease the effectiveness of street representation. What differentiates swing voters of Kurdish origin from their non-Kurdish counterpart is the absence of common inter-group networks of socialization conducive to the development of personal relations. Although, AKP activists share common social networks where they routinely interact with potential swing voters of MHP and SP since they mostly come from the same demographic background, such places of interaction are lower among non-Kurdish and Kurdish residents. Furthermore, the inexistence of inter-community between non-Kurdish and Kurdish residents in the neighborhood complicates mobilization through

street representation since their barely share information with one another. The inability of the main branch neighborhood president of the Hacıahmet to identify his own neighbor is a good example on how street representation is not effective for the mobilization of voters of Kurdish origin;

> "*For years I thought he was supporting AKP. But one day we talked on the terrorist attacks of PKK to the soldiers of the Turkish army. He told me that they were right to do this attack. You know I was shocked to hear that. He is my neighbor for years, I see him every day but I do not know his political views. Yet, I realized that I haven't either told him that I was the neighborhood president of AKP.*" (Interview conducted on 06.06.2011, Beyoğlu).

During the field research, a general discrimination towards the citizens of Kurdish origin was dominating the discourse of non-Kurdish activists. During my interviews one activist expresses, "*They would do everything to acquire money even if he/she does not need it. They even see a piece of bread as a profit*" (Electoral campaigning activity, 04.06.2011, Veysel Karani). Another one proclaimed, "*Their supporters newly came to our neighborhood, they have changed its environment. They are the ones who use violence*" (Interview conducted on 10.05,2011, İnönü). Another activist in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet recommended me not to go the side of the neighborhood resided by Kurdish citizens alone due to security reasons. "*We don't know what they will do*" she asserted me. Most of them complained that they do not know how to live together, that they consciously throw their trash from their windows on the street or that they damage the parks or store on purpose. These citizens were mostly not interpreted as equal members of the neighborhood society but as new comers that have to be educated to get civilized and learn the basic rules of living together in a city. The District responsible of the Center of Electoral Coordination asserts, "*Kurds sabotages the municipal services. The municipality has made a park, everything has been damaged, they throw garbage, uproot the grass*" (Interview conducted on 19.04.2011, Beyoğlu). Similar discourse was used by a district activist residing in Hacıahmet while we were passing from the part of the neighborhoods where citizens of Kurdish origin was in majority, " *you see, they don't even veer off the road, kids, adults everyone is on the street. They destroy everything, the parks, the investments....*" (Interview conducted on 07.05.2011, Hacıahmet). Another non-Kurdish activist asserts during the neighborhood meeting, "they *are all revengeful, they are all cheaters. They got help*

from the state, and then they attack it" (Interview conducted on 07.05.2011, Hacıahmet). The presence of prejudice towards citizens of Kurdish origin can also be observed from the complaints of Kurdish activists in the party organization. During the same meeting, a Kurdish activist contests, "*We are also from them* (indicating citizens of Kurdish origin), *but we do not do these. This is related to your family education. Of course you are prone to violence when you are not educated*". (Interview conducted on 07.05.2011, Hacıahmet).   One of the activists of Kurdish origin working in the municipally as field personnel responsible of distributing aid packages, expresses;

> " *I have not been personally exposed to discrimination but witnessed a lot of instances where attitudinal discrimination towards citizens of Kurdish origin was expressed during my duty at work. During our distribution of packages, they say that they would take everything to give them since they are Kurdish. In fact, I got upset as a Kurdish citizen. I understand that they get radicalized when confronted with discrimination, but when you give your hand for help, they absolutely answer you positively*" (Interview conducted on 03.05.2011, Beyoğlu).

The inability to identify different types of voters and discrimination creates prejudice among activists against the voters of Kurdish origin where the activists blame them to be opportunist. A district activist living in the neighborhood of İnönü highlights;

> " *I think we have prejudice, we think they will not vote for us. For example, there are some ballot boxes where we expect BDP to have all the votes. However, when we opened the ballot box to count the votes we have seen that many votes were for AKP. Unfortunately, we cannot determine these people*" (Interview conducted on 21.05.2011, İnönü).

In fact, such a perception of non-Kurdish activists on the Kurdish ethnic group as a whole exists where citizens of Kurdish origin are mostly perceived to be PKK supporters. This situation acts as an obstacle to the effective functioning of the party's strategy. Discrimination and prejudice to Kurdish demands are commonly expressed in the discourses of these activists towards the Kurds and their electoral preferences.

According to a large number of them, citizens of Kurdish origin do not vote for AKP even if they receive help. One activist declares, "*They want to enter the party only to provide benefit to their environment, not because they support the party*" (Electoral campaigning activity, 30.04.2011, Sancaktepe). Another insists, "*They are the ones who benefits from the social services of the municipality, but they do not support the party*"

(Electoral campaigning activity, 23.05.2011, Beyoğlu). Another activist questions the loyalty of an activist of Kurdish origin in their neighborhood. She proclaims;

> "*I am disappointed by the hypocrisy of these people. They tell us that they support our party but I don't believe them. For example, there are residents whose son is working at the municipality, their daughter is in our administration but I don't believe they support us. I know that their father support BDP, what is the possibility for them to vote for us?*" (Interview conducted on 26.05.2011, Sancaktepe)

These perceptions are rather interesting, since the electoral results indicate that in all the districts and neighborhoods under investigation where these activists function, a considerable number of citizens of Kurdish origin supported AKP in 2011 general elections. However, this situation was not perceived by the activists. Even more importantly, although there were many voters of Turkish origin whose members of the family supported other parties, such as SP, MHP or even CHP in the party, their loyalty was not questioned. Prejudice toward the citizens of Kurdish origin could also be observed when another member tried to guess whether one of the party member of Kurdish origin was opportunist or not;

> "*Last time I went to the wedding of a neighbor from Batman (*A Kurdish populated province*), they only played Kurdish songs, they danced by making their sign with their hands. Furthermore, the father of the household asked me why we have only one official language, can't we talk in Kurdish.*" (Interview conducted on 04.05.2011)

It is interesting that the activist reconcile the demands to use the Kurdish language as a sign of support for BDP, especially given the fact that it was during AKP's incumbency that major rights on the use of the mother tongue were given.

7.2.3- **Strategy of the Party: Incorporation of Co-ethnics**

In the presence of violence, effective mobilization necessitates the incorporation of activists that are personally close to these voters and easily enter their households. The functioning of the party through either non-Kurdish activists known by voters of Kurdish origin or Kurdish activist, increases the effectiveness of the mobilization by first, decreasing both the reaction of the opposed voter of Kurdish origin and the fear of

the activists. Second, the development or presence of personal relations increases the effectiveness of mobilization, as it decreases the cost of identifying of different types of voters, discrimination and as a result, the prejudice of the activists on the opportunism of voters of Kurdish origin. In fact, the discourse and experiences of these activists indicates decrease in prejudice, increase in ability to prevent violence, increase in identifying different types of voters among residents of Kurdish origin.

Risk of Violence and Fear:

The Activists' experiences and declarations confirm that the reaction of voters of Kurdish origin and fear of the activists change according to the characteristics of the activists who perform the contact. As a result, the party can function more publicly, increasing the positive image of the party in the eyes of both swing and opposition voters of Kurdish origin. When voters of Kurdish origin are contacted by people they know personally, the degree of violence of both opposition and swing voters decreases. One activist proclaims, "*As we know them they do not attack us, for example my friend is from Siirt supporting BDP, he sees me when I distributed the brochures, he did not react when I also gave him one. They also behave according to their entourage*" (Interview conducted on11.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

Similarly, one representative of the neighborhood of Veysel Karani highlights,

> "*The reaction of the voters greatly changes according to the general characteristics of the person who contacts them. The organization split into groups to distribute the brochures of the party to every door in the neighborhood. Our group had no problem ...voters gave great reaction to the other members that they do not know, when we went there their reaction immediately changed. Who you are and how you behave to them are very important in shaping their reactions towards you and the party. I have been a merchant in the neighborhood for 18 years, everyone knows me, supporters of other parties are my friends, why would they dispute with me.*" (Interview conducted on 04 June 2011, Sancaktepe)

Similarly, the neighborhood coordinator of Hacıahmet expresses;

> "*They send me a message where they asked me to leave the party. They tell that they do not attack our activists because they like me. If I were not in the party, they would not let the activists of the party to work in the neighborhood*" (Interview conducted in 07.05.2011, Hacıahmet).

Furthermore, although in all the neighborhoods under investigation, the possible reaction of the Kurdish voters to the party is a great concern for non-Kurdish activists, the attitude of the activists to the violent character of the Kurdish opposition also diverges according to the closeness of the activists to these groups and their experience with them. As a result, these activists are not afraid to expose themselves and perform their activities publicly. The diverging perception of two activists working in the same neighborhood reveals a good example on how the perception on the violent activities changes according to the activists' closeness to voters of Kurdish origin. After the contact office of AKP in the neighborhood of Veysel Karani has been attacked, the president of the women branch who has no relation with the residents of Kurdish origin of the neighborhood has annulled the meeting on the ground that it was dangerous. Another activist having friends from Kurdish origin defines this attack as something unimportant. "*These kinds of attacks are very normal. They are the activities of some teenagers that should not be taken very seriously. BDP supporters are mostly violent when they are in a convoy. Otherwise when they are alone they do nothing*" (Interview conducted on 11.05.2011). The perception of activists close to the citizens of Kurdish origin on violence could easily be observed from the discourse of youth branch president of Kurdish origin from the same neighborhood: "*They say they will burn, damage everywhere but all is just a flash in the pan, no one does anything*" (Electoral campaigning activity on 10.06.2011, Veysel Karani).

The neighborhood coordinator of the neighborhood of Yenişehir populated by Kurdish voters expresses, "*When I was first appointed to this job I was very afraid. However, as I contacted and helped them, I saw their reaction change. When you began to know them you see that they are good people*" (Interview conducted on 24.05.2011, Beyoğlu). Another neighborhoods president from the women branch highlights;

> "*I was first hesitant but now I am not afraid of them. I went to the contact office of BDP. I talked with them and told them that I was from AKP. Everyone who hears this from the party says I am insane. Why should I be? I drank their tea and got out. No one has done anything to me.*" (Interview conducted on 06.06.2011, Yenişehir)

Both the fear of the activists and the reaction of the BDP supporters decrease when activists are from reputable and strong families in the neighborhood. When I asked one of a newly incorporated woman branch neighborhood activists whether she was not afraid to function publicly, she answers, "*They can do nothing to me, my family*

is very large, if they try to do something they know they will have trouble" (Interview conducted on 21.05.2011, İnönü). Similarly, another activist from Kurdish origin immigrated from the same village as the district president of BDP informs me that he asked the president to warn her party's supporter not to harass AKP activists. He adds, "*She knows that her relatives will have problem back in our villages if she underestimates my demand. My family is very powerful there, they will not let them breath*" (Electoral campaigning activity, 21.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

Identification, discrimination and prejudice

Given the fact that it is difficult to identify different types of voters of Kurdish origin through first contact, all the activists highlight the importance of their ability to enter the households of Kurdish voters. Since this provided them the necessary information to identify them and privacy for the voters to expose their attitudes. The incorporation of activists close to the Kurdish voters positively affects the mobilization strategy since it provides the channels of communication necessary to develop personal relations. This in turn, not only increases the ability to acquire necessary information to identify different types of voters but also decreases discrimination and prejudice among non-Kurdish activists.

The women district branch of Beyoğlu expresses that the new neighborhood president in Hacıahmet was an old resident, living in the Kurdish concentrated part of the neighborhood. She says, "*She knows everyone and enters in every households, it's a great advantage for us*" (Interview conducted on 05.04.2011, Beyoğlu). Similarly, non-Kurdish activists highlighted lots of events where nor the activists neither the voters knew each other's political preferences, but get informed when they get in a close personal relationship". An activist mentions,

> "*I went to the house of friend from Kurdish origin to see her. When I enter the house, her husband prepared to leave. When I asked the reason, he told me that I was supporting CHP and this was the reason. When I told him that I was supporting AKP, he decided to stay by expressing that they also vote for AKP* ", then she adds "*It is strange, I thought they were supporting BDP*" (Interview conducted on 10.05.2011, İnönü).

One interesting observation is the party's reliance on the woman branches to increase the personal relations with the voters of Kurdish citizens. The activists state

217

two cause of such a strategy. First, they state that the women were less ideological in their perception, less prone to violence, so the activists could expose themselves. Second, the women can more easily enter in the household of these voters, since the houses are the major places of socialization for women. As a result, they can more easily develop personal relations and indentify their problems and preferences. The woman branch president expresses their advantage in reaching female voters. According to her, "*women expresses their bad experiences, talk with us; but we are not able to reach male voters. They share nothing with us*" (Interview conducted on 23.05.2011, Hacıahmet) In fact, the neighborhood where the party activists have difficulty in reaching the Kurdish voters, the main and women branch work together and the latter provides great assistance to the former. The main reasoning of such an expectation is the fact that socialization process between female and male voters are different from each other.

When activists close to the Kurdish voters are interviewed the discriminative, reactionary discourse also disappears, and violence is perceived as the result of the social discrimination process. The main branch president of the neighborhood of İnönü highlights, "*I think they witness discrimination when they migrate to the city, this is why they get attached to their Kurdish identity*". When another activist says, "*we do not discriminate them but they do*" the president objects, "*It is not true you also discriminate them*" (Interview conducted on 10.05.2011, Inönü). A similar approach is also present in the discourse of the district president of Sancaktepe who is also from Kurdish origin who related the demands of citizens of Kurdish origin to the oppressive policies of the state. He asserts that;

> "*The ones who witnessed oppression from the states gain ethnic consciousness… The Fascist policies of the state towards Kurds that repressed their identities are the main cause of their violent character. The ones who experiences suppression form the state became supporters of PKK, while the ones who experienced suppression from PKK became more conservative. On the other hand, migration to the city changed also their perceptions where they re-find their ethnic identities when they are faced with negative socio-economic experiences*" (Interview conducted on 22.03.2011, Sancaktepe).

Other activists of Kurdish origin relate the potential for violence to the circumstances they face by asserting;

"I find their violence normal, it is the only thing they have seen up until know. They have witnessed the use of force from both the state and the PKK. You do what you see. Only when we change our behavior and show that there are other ways to expresses your problems they will change their attitudes" (Interview conducted on 03.05.2011, Beyoğlu).

The negative effect of the state policies in the violent reaction of Kurdish voters could also be observed from the discourse of another activist of Kurdish origin. After the attack of a group of teenagers from BDP to the activists of AKP, the activist asserts;

"The main cause of violence is the non-integration of these citizens into the system. If you take into consideration the teenagers that harassed us. I personally know them they are unemployed and hang around in the coffee house where they are consistently exposed to the mobilization of the PKK supporters. They would not react like that If they had a work to go" (Electoral campaigning activity, 21.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

Another activist of Kurdish origin also related the same harassment to the policies of the government, albeit indirectly, when she highlights that the brother of one of these teenagers has been killed in the mountains one year ago. According to her, *"after having experienced such an event, it is normal that this teenagers resort to violence"* (Electoral campaigning activity, 21.05.2011, Sancaktepe)

The perception of the Kurdish activists or non-Kurdish activists close to Kurdish voters on the political preferences of these voters also diverges. All of them warned me that it was a mistake to evaluate all Kurdish voters as supporters of BDP. According to them a great number of these voters were conservative and voted for AKP. Furthermore, they insisted that party's non-discriminatory policies contributed to the changing political preferences of some of these voters on the behalf of AKP. A district member of Sancaktepe working for a long time in the party expresses;

"Before we had very much difficulty in working in the field. Even women were very reactive. They have lots of time stoned us. Now it is changing, people see that they are not discriminated and attain services. Women tended to vote for the party that their husband supported, now they are voting for AKP despite their husbands."(Interview conducted on 14.05.2011, Veysel Karani)

A member of neighborhood women branch of Kurdish origin in Beyoğlu says;

"We have changed their votes with our affection. I have a neighbor who supported BDP. He had an autistic son. Her husband told her that he would register him to school, but did not do it. I told her that I would do it. She prayed me not to do it, that her husband would be very furious. I will talk

with her husband I said. That night I went to talk with him and I persuaded him. I have also helped her to benefit from handicapped assistance. Now she supports our party" (Interview conducted in 07.05.2011, Hacıahmet).

Most of the activists highlighted that they were especially effective in changing the perception of female voters of Kurdish origin who began to support the party regardless of the political affiliations of their husbands when they realized that the activists discriminate them while they help people.

Perceptions on the preferences of the voters were also evident among some activists of non-Kurdish origin that had close relation with voters of Kurdish origin. One them proclaims;

> "*I understand that people do not want to show their support to us, they fear marginalization from their own community. During our door-to-door visits, a woman discreetly waved her hands from the window while we were passing. In fact, a considerable number of them have switched their votes for AKP, but they can not express it publicly*" (Electoral Campaigning activity, Sancaktepe, 26.05.2011).

As a result, the major strategy of the party is to incorporate activists of Kurdish origin into the network. This enables the party to differentiate between voters, since their relationship is closer and more easily personalize their relations. The ability of activists of Kurdish to personalize relations within their group comes from the fact that they mostly are relatives, immigrating from similar villages or know each other from the common social networks such as coffee houses, hometown or cultural associations. In fact, studies on the citizens of Kurdish origin indicated that mostly the main cause to their decision where to migrate is the presence of relatives in the region (Çelik, 2002). This is why one can observe concentration of citizens of the same hometown origin in specific part of the districts. When I asked a citizen of Kurdish origin why he has immigrated in the neighborhood, he told me, "*I had relatives here, I thought they would help me to find a job here that's why I came*" (Interview conducted on 23.05.2011, Hacıahmet). The use of these connections by activists of Kurdish origin to increase support for the party is confirmed by the answer of one of them when I ask him how he makes new members. He says, "*First, I go to relatives I know, then I open the voters list and look at the surnames of people who are the same with mine, since they are probably my relatives. Then I go to visit them, talk with them and ask them to support the party*" (Interview conducted on 17.03.2011, Küçükçekmece) This make easier for them to find

a common ground and enter their households. In fact, the district presidents and vice presidents in both of the districts expressed that their main strategy was to increase their support among citizens of Kurdish origin to incorporate them within the party's organizational structure. The president of Sancaktepe adds, "*We identify people that are respected, influential and liked by them and try to incorporate them within the party*" (Interview conducted on 22.03.2011, Sancaktepe). Similarly, the district president of Beyoğlu identifies the corner stone of their strategy for gaining the votes of citizens of Kurdish origin;

> "*We try to guarantee their representation of these people in the district, we especially are very careful when we select the representatives of the neighborhoods where these citizens are large in quantity. We especially try to find opinion leaders among them*" (Interview conducted on 03.02.2011, Beyoğlu).

In fact, not only the intensity of the activities of the organization but also the appointment of activists of Kurdish origin in neighborhood with residents of Kurdish origin is a commonly used strategy of the party to overcome both violence and gain the sympathy of these voters. It was not a coincidence that activists participating in the electoral campaigning activities in the neighborhoods of İnönü, Veysel Karani in the district of Sancaktepe and the neighborhood of Örnektepe in Beyoğlu were either known people in the neighborhood or activists from Kurdish origin. In fact, these activists purposefully indicated their origin through expressing their hometown or speaking in Kurdish. This advantage enabled the party activists to function publicly in some of these neighborhoods. In the absence of such activists, the party could not operate publicly, as in the case of the neighborhood of Hacıahmet where the district could contact citizens of Kurdish origin only indirectly through the activities of the municipality.

This section has illustrated that the neighborhood organizations were important in increasing and consolidating support for the party by identifying and incorporating different types of voters into the clientelistic network. It revealed that the incorporation of new members of non-Kurdish origin into the network and compliance of the voters is assured through the activities of the neighborhood organizations and the criteria of street representation within the organization. It also illustrated that incorporation of voters of Kurdish origin into the clientelistic network requires the presence of activists of Kurdish origin who are members of the existing social networks of the residents of

Kurdish origin. Based on these findings, the next chapter will investigate, through neighborhood level analysis, how the amount of activities of the neighborhood organizations and the time incorporation of activists of Kurdish origin affect the effectiveness of clientelistic mobilization.

CHAPTER 8

DIVERGENCE IN THE EFFECTIVENESS OF THE MOBILIZATION STRATEGIES

The previous chapters have identified the use of both programmatic and clientelistic linkages by AKP to mobilize voters. One of the main arguments of the study is that clientelistic linkage is a safer strategy in persuading voters as opposed to programmatic linkage since it consolidates support in the long run. It has also been suggested that its effectiveness derives from the ability to party to individually mobilize different types of voters with different types of goods through their identification and its ability to ensure voluntary compliance through a repeated course of interaction. Furthermore, the role of neighborhood organizations in the implementation of the strategy has also been illustrated. It has been argued that the party increases the effectiveness of its strategy through the routine activities of the neighborhood organizations and the representation of each street in the organization. The previous chapter has also illustrated the major difficulties in mobilizing voters of Kurdish origin through non-Kurdish activists. It has mentioned the difficulty in identifying potential supporters of Kurdish voters via non-Kurdish activists. It has been suggested that high ethnic consciousness, the violent nature of Kurdish problem, weakness of intercommunity relations between Kurdish and non-Kurdish voters act as an obstacle for the party to identify different types of voters of Kurdish origin. It has been suggested that the party try to overcome these difficulties by incorporating activists of Kurdish origin into the network.

The study suggests that diverging support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin is the function of two variables: the number of activists of Kurdish origin who are members of the existing ethnic social networks, their time of incorporation and the amount of activities of the neighborhood organization. While the presence of Kurdish

activists increase the capacity of indentifying different types of voters, the time of entry and intensity of the neighborhood organization assure voluntary compliance and loyalty to the party through repeated interaction. The aim of this chapter is to test the validity of the effectiveness of clientelistic linkage in stabilizing support among programmatically potential swing voters through comparing different geographical units in terms of these variables and electoral outcomes across elections. In geographical units where the neighborhood organizations regularly perform their activities and incorporates activists of Kurdish origin, the party's identification ability and specific targeting is expected to be higher. Furthermore, activists are expected to be more successful in consolidating solidarity among the voters and assuring compliance when the contact is performed repeatedly. Within this respect, not only the length of the contact realized by Kurdish activists, but also its intensity is expected to increase its repetitiveness. Thus, time of entry of the activists and the amount of the activities they perform is expected to affect the repetitiveness of the contact.

The analysis will be conducted in the district of Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe that differs in term of AKP's electoral support among citizens of Kurdish origin across recent elections. Since, the support for the party among voters of Kurdish origin is expected to be less sensitive to positional changes in the programmatic dimension when voters are clientelistically mobilized, diverging electoral results between 2009 and 2011 in different geographical units will be used as a proxy to measure the effectiveness of mobilization through the clientelistic network.

Given the fact that incorporation of new voters into the network is conducted through the neighborhood organization, analysis will be conducted at the neighborhood level. For such a suggestion to be valid, variation in the electoral support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin should be observed. It has been illustrated in Chapter 3 that nearly all the voters of Kurdish origin vote to either AKP or pro-Kurdish parties. Thus, the vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties have been used as a proxy to measure support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin. So, in the first section, the electoral characteristics of each district are illustrated with a special focus on divergence in the vote shifts of pro-Kurdish parties across elections is the neighborhoods of each district under investigation.

The next section is a brief evaluation of the district in terms of alternative explanations given in the literature for the increasing support of ethnic parties. It will

demonstrate that these alternative explanations are not valid for the cases under investigation. Among them, the first one is the difference in degree of ethnic consciousness among the residents of the two districts. This explanation derives from the expectation that citizens from Kurdish origin with stronger ethnic consciousness will be more prone to switch their votes when AKP changes its position on the Kurdish issue. Another alternative explanation derives from the use of the votes share of pro-Kurdish parties as a proxy in measuring the changing electoral support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin. Within this respect, such a shift may simply result from the changing demographic composition of the district as a result of migration. Under such a condition, this shift cannot be evaluated as an opposite shift of AKP support among citizens of Kurdish origin. The last section explains the relationship between on one had the intensity of the amount of activities of the neighborhood organization and presence of activists of Kurdish origin and on the other then nature of the mobilization activities of the activists at different levels.

8.1- Effectiveness of the Mobilization: Different Electoral Characteristics within each District

This section depicts a more detailed picture of the divergence in the effectiveness of the mobilization of AKP by using as an indicator the support for the party among citizens of Kurdish origin in the each of the neighborhoods within the selected districts. A major difficulty in identifying the voting behavior of citizens of Kurdish origin derives from the fact that these citizens to not constitute the entire population of the districts. Similarly, AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties are not the main competitors. Although, support for pro-Kurdish parties among citizens of Kurdish origin can be analyzed by the party's vote shares, vote shifts from one party to the other is more difficult to be observed since it is impossible to discern support for AKP or other parties among citizens Kurdish origin or other voters within each district. This section mainly focuses on the change in the vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties to understand the changing nature of the competition between the two parties in the neighborhoods. Such a strategy seems logical since previous chapters have successfully showed that AKP and the pro-Kurdish parties take nearly the entire of the votes of citizens of Kurdish origin

225

in the Kurdish populated Province while other parties performs very poorly in the Kurdish populated region. As a result, change in the support for pro-Kurdish parties is be interpreted as a contrasting change in AKP's support among citizens of Kurdish origin. One objection to such an assumption, may derive from the possible fact that change in the vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties may not result from change in AKP support among citizens of Kurdish origin but change in the demographic composition in given districts and neighborhoods from one election to the other. Nevertheless, it will be demonstrated in the next section that such kind of a situation is not present. As it will be evaluated in detail, the data supports our expectation on the neighborhood level divergence in electoral preferences of Kurdish voters in Sancaktepe and Beyoğlu.

8.1.1- Beyoğlu

The district may be divided into 3 sub-regions which have very different electoral patterns.   Table 8.1 illustrated the electoral pattern in the neighborhoods of Beyoğlu from 1999 to 2011 general elections. In the first region, which consists of the neighborhoods like Cihangir, Gümüşsuyu, Kılıç Alipaşa, Ömer Avni, Pürteleş Hasan Efendi, CHP is the strongest party obtaining approximately over 60% of the votes. The remaining votes are divided between AKP as the second party with 15-20% of the votes and MHP as the third party with approximately 5% of the votes in 2011 general elections .

The second sub-Region consists of neighborhoods such as Kaptanpaşa, Piyalepaşa, Sütlüce, Fetihtepe, Kulaksız where AKP's vote shares range between 45-60% and constitute the electoral base of the party. In these neighborhoods CHP is the second party attaining 20-25% of the votes and MHP is the third party having 5-10% of the votes. BDP has a relatively lower vote shares ranging from 1 to 6%, while SP has a relatively higher support ranging from 2 to 3 %.when compared with other neighborhoods. The third sub-region consists of neighborhoods such as Çukur, Bülbül, Tomtom, Bülbül, Hacıahmet, Yenişehir, Kalyoncukulluk, Örnektepe where AKP votes range between 30-40% and CHP has gained between 20% and 35% of the votes. BDP is relatively strong with its vote shares ranging from 8% to 51%.

In these neighborhoods where BDP is relatively strong there exist two different patterns, in terms of the vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties from 2007 to 2011 general elections. In the neighborhoods of Bostan, Bülbül, Hacıahmet, Kalyoncu Kulluk, these parties have constantly increased their votes. This increase is also valid for 2007 general elections. Given the fact that at both national and regional level support for pro-Kurdish parties in 2007 has decreased when compared with 2002 such an outcome is interesting. This may be due to the characteristics of the migration flows in the region. Yet, there is no available data to confirm this suggestion. On the other hand, in the neighborhoods of Çukur, Yenişehir, Örnektepe support for these parties remained constant from 2009 to 2011 general elections. This electoral trend is also interesting given the ideological positioning of AKP in 2009 and 2011 general elections. When AKP vote shares is concerned , we can observe that in all of these neighborhoods the party has managed to increase its votes from 2007 to 2011 general elections, except for the municipal elections of 2009. District level data indicates that this increase is accompanied by a parallel decrease in other potential swing parties' votes such as SP, DP and MHP. Nevertheless, change in AKP's electoral support is far below the average in these neighborhoods when compared with other neighborhoods not populated by citizens of Kurdish origin. Among these neighborhoods, Örnektepe is the one where increase in AKP's general support is relatively higher than the others.

8.1.2- Sancaktepe

The district has been formed in 2008 by the unification of 3 sub-districts (*belde*), namely Samandıra (from Kartal), Sarıgazi (from Ümraniye), Yenidoğan (from Ümraniye). The district can be divided in two sub-regions in terms of electoral characteristics that are different from each other. The first, region consists of the neighborhoods from Sarıgazi such as Inönü, Atatürk, Merkez, Emek, Kemal Türkler, Meclis where CHP is the first party closely followed by AKP. Each of the parties has respectively attained 43% and 40% of the vote shares in 2011 general elections. Having 7.79 % of the votes BDP is in front of MHP that has gained 5% of the votes in this sub-region.

Shifts in the Vote shares of AKP and pro-Kurdish in the neighborhoods of BEYOĞLU (1999-2011)											
Neighborhood	eligible votes	AKP %					Pro-Kurdish Parties %				
	2011	2011	2009	2007	2002	1999*	2011	2009	2007	2002	1999
Arap Cami	58	57,89	44,74	48,15	41,18	54,76	0,00	0,00	0,00	0,00	2,38
Asmalı Mescit	494	24,20	24,82	31,18	22,76	11,06	12,10	8,76	3,49	11,92	7,37
Bedrettin	684	56,66	41,29	56,44	43,25	26,98	3,00	2,46	2,77	1,79	1,32
Bereketzade	331	35,80	29,49	39,56	39,34	30,00	5,35	6,84	1,65	5,15	4,67
Bostan	1888	33,95	34,39	41,89	26,10	11,73	28,63	23,70	17,76	12,52	6,83
Bülbül	3524	33,20	28,95	35,30	31,43	16,74	36,90	33,38	24,35	22,10	15,31
Camiikebir	1915	58,28	43,70	53,88	44,45	29,07	1,40	1,47	0,61	1,95	3,01
Cihangir	3047	20,03	18,16	20,65	17,30	9,60	10,14	2,33	0,67	6,79	2,63
Emekyemez	111	46,25	34,43	28,40	34,15	47,73	2,50	0,00	1,23	2,44	2,27
Evliya Çelebi	261	44,72	40,00	44,67	40,78	25,87	4,52	5,85	2,46	7,84	5,02
Fetihtepe	12480	55,14	37,07	50,56	43,19	26,50	5,29	4,51	3,38	3,82	2,63
Firuzağa	3782	40,33	34,68	41,08	33,19	26,01	6,66	2,71	2,67	5,25	4,32
Gümüşsuyu	1651	14,68	14,75	16,54	15,15	7,49	12,22	3,87	1,06	6,32	2,97
Hacıahmet	10305	29,96	26,35	31,52	27,19	16,28	32,54	25,86	20,20	15,48	9,82
Hacımimi	1159	53,78	53,19	56,42	38,72	30,66	3,60	2,99	1,53	6,98	6,39
Halıcıoğlu	9805	56,82	43,68	55,54	49,07	27,51	1,39	1,83	0,79	2,86	2,17
Hüseyinağa	299	36,84	32,90	53,00	32,17	19,44	9,36	5,16	5,99	9,69	8,02
Kadı Mehmet	7693	63,63	48,02	60,87	52,85	32,82	0,95	0,82	0,56	1,20	1,12
Kalyoncu Kulluk	2844	37,15	32,99	38,04	30,15	17,45	25,52	22,06	18,74	16,77	12,61
Kamer Hatun	804	46,17	40,14	48,73	37,69	24,83	11,50	7,78	3,62	9,42	6,34
Kaptanpaşa	13955	64,07	47,05	59,84	50,21	31,67	3,51	3,12	2,81	6,04	4,78
Katip Çelebi	751	25,94	22,01	28,39	21,06	10,40	12,59	8,20	6,03	7,87	4,35
K. K. Paşa	130	40,00	30,34	33,93	21,98	17,19	8,42	4,49	0,89	4,40	4,69
Keçeci Piri	10778	63,52	45,00	56,93	48,14	28,38	1,35	1,04	0,83	2,08	1,60
Kocatepe	1855	38,99	30,54	34,68	25,47	15,49	12,16	9,00	6,08	7,92	4,10
Kulaksız	6933	65,63	46,21	59,51	52,46	31,11	1,22	1,24	0,60	1,66	1,39
Kuloğlu	1295	27,98	27,36	34,56	29,86	18,70	9,39	1,57	0,39	3,21	3,25
Küçük Piyale	6449	58,12	43,40	54,99	45,70	26,78	1,88	1,35	1,25	2,89	2,33
Kılıçali Paşa	2279	19,45	19,98	20,50	14,63	9,56	9,07	2,48	0,53	5,14	2,73
Müeyyedzade	479	47,44	50,15	64,14	53,55	39,61	6,82	2,72	0,25	1,47	1,47
Piri Paşa	10109	61,51	43,98	58,23	50,44	26,79	1,26	2,36	0,82	2,25	1,44
Piyalepaşa	18228	51,01	32,05	48,19	42,12	28,99	6,05	5,81	3,55	4,48	3,33
P. Hasan Efendi	1631	16,09	15,69	16,45	13,50	7,47	10,99	3,14	0,48	5,73	1,79
S. Mehmet Efendi	3642	47,41	41,23	49,81	37,98	24,44	11,10	8,46	5,54	6,84	4,39
Sütlüce	8651	65,10	50,94	63,55	50,88	39,87	3,30	2,70	2,26	5,45	3,67
Tomtom	2182	61,33	47,59	55,74	46,31	32,21	6,24	5,94	5,46	8,97	6,55
Yahya Kahya	2813	55,58	42,75	54,08	45,77	27,92	1,85	1,37	0,81	2,59	1,84
Yenişehir	4551	38,95	35,70	38,09	30,24	13,97	16,47	14,57	8,38	5,06	4,06
Çatma Mescit	1973	49,88	39,16	47,01	39,07	25,54	3,83	3,27	1,79	2,91	1,76
Çukur	2628	24,00	18,79	23,68	18,01	12,22	51,53	53,79	45,27	41,05	23,60
Ömer Avni	1719	15,37	12,27	15,33	11,37	6,45	7,18	1,50	0,16	3,79	1,23
Örnektepe	8173	43,25	32,82	37,41	31,07	21,79	8,51	8,71	8,09	11,32	10,05
İstiklal	4436	46,29	40,28	44,98	29,34	15,22	4,52	3,90	1,73	3,95	2,99
Şahkulu	879	41,89	36,88	47,59	40,38	36,21	8,71	4,65	1,24	9,43	5,52
Şehit Muhtar	1497	35,01	28,08	33,74	16,67	12,10	24,85	26,25	20,02	27,82	20,68

Table 8.1: Shifts in the vote shares of AKP and pro-Kurdish in the neighborhoods of Beyoğlu (1999-2011)
*AKP has been founded in 2001. The vote shares of FP has been used for 1999 general elections for reference.

The second sub-region consists of neighborhoods of the sub-regions from Samandıra and Yenidoğan where AKP, attaining approximately 60% of the votes, is electorally stronger. Although the second party is CHP, with 20% there is a considerable gap between the vote shares of the two parties. BDP is the third party slightly in front of MHP whose electoral support is 7.5% and 7 % respectively.

Shifts in the vote shares of AKP and pro-Kurdish parties in the neighborhoods of SANCAKTEPE (1999-2011)											
Neighborhood	eligible votes	AKP** %					Pro-Kurdish parties %				
	2011	2011	2009	2007	2002	1999**	2011	2009	2007	2002	1999
samandıra (B)*	**54429**	**59,78**	**43,26**	**60,82**	**48,57**	**27,46**	**7,67**	**10,71**	**6,91**	**14,39**	**13,40**
Abdurrahmangazi	9347	56,07	42,32	58,78			7,27	10,51	4,97		
Akpınar	8759	58,31	41,03	58,83			11,87	15,98	9,88		
Eyüpsultan	5704	60,01	40,12	56,75			3,54	4,65	2,71		
Fatih	7622	62,24	45,68	60,90			0,66	3,58	2,59		
Osmangazi	14265	63,56	43,94	62,72			7,74	10,03	6,31		
Veysel karani	8732	56,77	45,42	55,91			12,58	17,02	11,86		
Sarıgazi (B)*	**57898**	**39,53**	**34,84**	**39,29**	**33,85**	**23,67**	**7,79**	**8,32**	**8,85**	**12,64**	**8,31**
Emek	8202	51,52	45,74	51,88			9,79	10,17	8,19		
İnönü	9788	30,30	26,76	29,73			4,37	5,26	8,34		
Atatürk	11913	34,99	30,39				12,25	11,92			
kemal Türkler	7892	45,83	40,49	44,92			9,98	11,46	11,49		
Meclis	11120	41,15	36,77	39,45			3,91	4,13	6,20		
Merkez	8983	37,13	32,03	37,53			6,68	7,98	9,86		
Yenidoğan (B)*	**32897**	**60,66**	**42,73**	**57,77**	**47,06**	**34,62**	**6,44**	**7,14**	**4,42**	**9,03**	**7,62**
Yenidoğan	6136	49,56	42,98	68,84			2,80	2,93	5,04		
Merve	7327	59,25	37,67	49,37			4,22	4,02	3,51		
Mevlana	5884	58,84	36,60	54,46			10,37	11,39	7,74		
Hilal	2840	66,75	50,16	55,59			10,42	12,34	1,95		
Safa	4335	66,90	46,03	64,43			6,87	7,96	4,47		
Yunusemre	6375	67,65	50,84	66,54			6,95	7,29	3,86		

Table 8.2: Shifts in the vote shares of AKP and pro-Kurdish parties in the neighborhoods of Sancaktepe (1999-2011)
*these are the electoral outcomes of each sub-region for the indicated elections
**AKP has been founded in 2001. The vote shares of FP has been used for 1999 general elections for reference.

The electoral trend in vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties from 2007 to 2011 general elections in Sancaktepe is different from Beyoğlu. As it can be seen from Table 8.2, there are also two diverging trends in the support for these parties from 2007 to 2011 among the neighborhoods populated by citizens of Kurdish origin, but the direction of this trend is different. In the neighborhoods located in the sub-region of Sarıgazi; Emek, İnönü, Atatürk, Kemal Türkler, Meclis and Merkez, their vote shares are relatively constant, slightly decreasing across the years. On the other hand, in the neighborhoods constituting Samandıra, especially Akpınar and Veysel Karani, their support increased from 2007 to 2009, and then decreased from 2009 to 2011 general

elections. the outcome from 2009 to 2011 are interesting especially given the fact that programmatically AKP's positioned itself on the opposite end of the Kurdish dimension in 2011 elections. Furthermore, in all of the neighborhoods, including the ones where the party's electoral support is relatively low, AKP has managed to increase it vote shares from 2007 to 2011 general elections. Nevertheless, its vote shares increased relatively more in the neighborhoods of the sub-regions of Samandıra and Yenidoğan, compared with Sarıgazi.

Among these neighborhoods Örnektepe, and Hacıahmet in Beyoğlu, İnönü and Veysel Karani in Sancaktepe have been selected for deeper evaluation due to their divergence in electoral support for pro-Kurdish parties across elections.[32] Table 8.3 and Graph 8.1 illustrate the shifts in support for these parties across the elections. One can observe different electoral patterns among the neighborhoods. One similar, pattern except from Hacıahmet, is the decrease in their electoral support from 2002 to 2007. The close position of AKP on the Kurdish issue has probably an important effect on this outcome. Nevertheless, the electoral patterns after 2007 clearly diverge from each other. The support for these parties from to 2007 to 2011 has constantly increased in Hacıahmet, an outcome in accordance with AKP's changing position on the Kurdish issue. In contrast, their support remained constant in the neighborhoods of Örnektepe and İnönü despite reaction among the citizens of Kurdish origin towards the policy of AKP on the Kurdish issue in 2009 and 2011. The most interesting case is in Veyselkarani where support for pro-Kurdish parties increased in 2009 municipal elections and decreased in 2011 general elections; a situation difficult to explain by the ideological positioning of AKP.

The study will investigate the effect of strong neighborhood organization and incorporation of the citizens of Kurdish origin within the network of the party in explaining these diverging electoral outcomes. But first, the validity of alternative explanations expressed by the AKP activists themselves will be tested in the next section.

---

[32] Hacıahmet, örnektepe, Veysel Karani and İnönü are similar in terms of population size that may independently affect the extent in which AKP reaches citizens of Kurdish origin.

Vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties across elections % (2002-2011)					
	% of Kurd.	2002	2007	2009	2011
Örnektepe	25,00	11,32	8,09	8,71	8,51
Hacıahmet	40,00	15,48	20,20	25,86	32,54
İnönü**	25,00	12,64	8,34	9,54	9,03
Veysel Karani*	35,00	14,39	11,86	17,02	12,58

Table 8.3: Neighborhood vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties across elections (2007-2011)
*2002 data for this neighborhood is not available, the votes shares of the region of Sarıgazi which the neighborhood was part of and has similar electoral patterns has been used. In 2009 the neighborhood of Atatürk has been formed from the neighborhoods of Kemal Türkler, İnönü. The vote share for İnönü has been recalculated by taking the average vote of pro-Kurdish parties in these neighborhoods
** 2002 data for this neighborhood is not available, the votes shares of the region of Samandıra which the neighborhood was part of and has similar electoral patterns has been used.
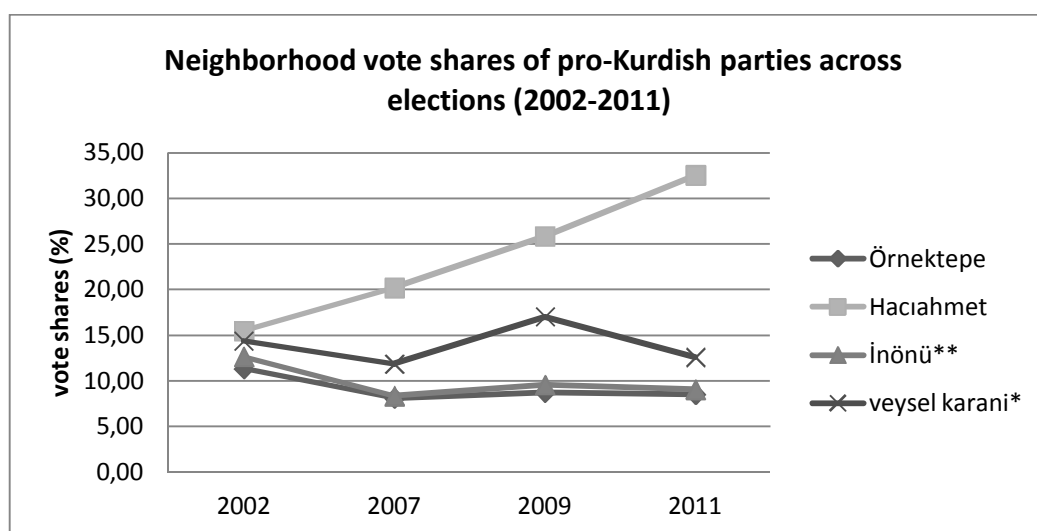
Graph 8.1: Neighborhood vote shares for pro-Kurdish parties across elections (2007-2011)

8.2-   Alternative Explanations for the Divergence in Electoral Support for AKP among Citizens of Kurdish Origin

This study argues that an important factor that affects difference in the effectiveness of the mobilization efforts in Beyoğlu compared to Sancaktepe is based on the interaction of two factors: strong neighborhood organization measured in terms of the amount of activities of the neighborhood organization and the amount and time of ethnic representation in the party's ranks. For such a purpose, the selected districts have been chosen so as to control for the effect of other possible affecting variables such as estimated percentage of Kurdish origin and electoral competition in terms of AKP vote

231

shares. Nevertheless, divergence in electoral outcomes may still have different alternative explanations. Among such factors may be characteristics specific to each districts and exogenous to the party's strategy. In fact, factors such as increase in Kurdish population, high ethnic consciousness are factors commonly expressed by the party activists in explaining diverging electoral outcome. After, briefly evaluating the districts in terms of socio-demographic indicators, this section elaborates district and neighborhood level differences in each of these factors.

8.2.1- Socio-demographic Composition of the Voters

This section is brief evaluation of the general socio-economic and demographic characteristics of the districts in terms of the demographic composition of the population, socio-economic conditions of the non-Kurdish and Kurdish citizens residing in each of the district. Although the main comparison is conducted between Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe,

Based on the 2011 Census Beyoğlu has a population of 247.852[33], which 181.151[34] of them were registered voters in the 2011 general elections. The District is composed of citizens that have migrated from very different regions of Turkey.[35] The largest population is from Istanbul origin with a population of 38.398 for the year of 2011. Immigrants from provinces of the Black Sea region such as Giresun, Kastamonu and Rize with populations of 29.129, 11.343 and 11.484 constitute the non-Kurdish majority, whereas migrants from the province of Sivas in Central Anatolia and Erzincan from Eastern Anatolia with populations of 19.715 and 9.059 are also large in quantity. With its estimated population of 39.120, which corresponds to nearly 15% of the total population, the residents from Kurdish origin constitute an important community in the districts. This population consists of immigrants largely from the Kurdish speaking province of Mardin with a population of 13.272 and to a smaller extent other provinces

---

[33]http://report.tuik.gov.tr/reports/rwservlet?adnksdb2=&ENVID=adnksdb2Env&report=turkiye_ilce_koy_sehir.RDF&p_il1=34&p_kod=1&p_yil=2010&p_dil=1&desformat=htmlthe (Accessed 27 June2011)
[34] http://www.ysk.gov.tr/ysk/docs/2011MilletvekiliSecimi/SecmenSandik2011.htm (Accessed 27 June2011)
[35] For more detailed information on the demographic composition of the district for the years of 2011, 2010, 2009 and 2007 consult Appendix C.

such as Batman, Siirt, Diyarbakır, Bingöl, Ağrı with respectively 4.215, 3.052, 2.364, 2753 and 2926 immigrants.

The district is composed of 3 sub-regions with different socioeconomic characteristics. The first sub-region consists of neighborhoods such as Gümüşsuyu, Cihangir which are prestigious residency places and have high socio-economic conditions with residents constituting the elite population of Istanbul. The second sub-region consists of neighborhoods where AKP is strong and socio-economic conditions and illiteracy rate is considerable in the middle. The resident of these neighborhoods are old immigrants that have immigrated to Istanbul for economic reasons from different regions of Turkey, mostly Black Sea and Central Anatolia. In some of these neighborhoods low numbers of Kurdish population are settled. The third sub-region consists of neighborhoods such as Çukur, Bülbül, Tomtom, Bülbül, Hacıahmet, Yenişehir, Kalyoncukulluk that constitute the region known as Dolapdere, and Örnektepe that have remarkably low socio-economic conditions and form the periphery of Beyoğlu. High illiteracy rate, poverty and unemployment accompanied with low infrastructural investment are the basic characteristics of these neighborhoods whose socio-economic situation has gradually decreased as a result of migration flows. The demographic characteristics of these neighborhoods have drastically changed after 1990 due to the settlement of large numbers of citizens of Kurdish origin that have immigrated to Istanbul from cities like Mardin, Batman and Diyarbakır.

The district's illiteracy rate is 7% according to the 2009 Census, which is higher than the average of Istanbul. The Kurdish population constitutes the community with the lowest illiteracy rate and socioeconomic status. Although, there is an amount of early immigrants of Kurdish origin, most of the Kurdish population has immigrated after 1990 due to security concerns in their home region. Most of the citizens of Kurdish origin living in the district, have very bad living and working conditions with no employment or social insurance and are very poorly paid. The main activities of these citizens that are unqualified due to poor education is making and selling moles, which is an activity carried by the family as whole and has a very difficult production process or working in unregistered textile production. Unemployment is a major problem due to the lack of demand for unqualified labor force in the district where the main economic activities are on the sectors of tourism and services that necessitate an educated, qualified labor force. In sectarian terms, nearly all of the residents from Kurdish origin

belong to the *Shafi* Sect of Sunni Islam, while a considerably small quantity consists of *Alevis*. Within this respect, the Kurdish speaking population is ideologically close to AKP.

Based on the 2011 Census Sancaktepe has a population of 269.180[36] which 169.839[37] were registered voters in the 2011 general elections. As Beyoğlu, the District is composed of citizens that have migrated from very different regions of Turkey.[38] Immigrants from provinces of the Black Sea region such as Ordu, Tokat, Kastamonu, Ardahan with populations of 22.293, 22.140, 11.225 and 9949 constitute the non-Kurdish majority, whereas migrants from the province of Sivas in Central Anatolia and Erzurum, Erzincan from Eastern Anatolia with populations of 20.067, 13289 and 10.246 are also large in quantity. The district has an estimated Kurdish population of 43.429, which corresponds to nearly 16 % of the total population. With this percentage, the Kurdish population constitutes an equally important community as in Beyoğlu. When the composition of the Kurdish population is analyzed we see major immigration flows from the Kurdish speaking provinces of Kars, Bingöl, Tunceli, Van, Ağrı and Siirt. With a population of 18.142 Kars constitutes an important majority, where as Bingöl with 10.198, Ağrı with 7.180, Tunceli with 4.003, Van with 4.098, and Siirt with 3.527 have also considerably important communities.

In Socio-economic terms, the sub-district and their neighborhoods slightly diverge from each other. Nevertheless, the demographic compositions of the neighborhoods are different from each other. In the neighborhoods of Sarıgazi, the main residents are divided between immigrants from the Black Sea regions and East and South East Anatolia. The peculiarity of these neighborhoods, which have large numbers of citizens of Kurdish origin, is the considerable number of *Alevi* citizens. While in the sub-region of Sarıgazi citizens of Kurdish origin are dispersed almost in all neighborhoods, in the Samandıra they are especially strong in the neighborhoods of Veysel Karani and Akpınar. Neighborhood such as Eyüpsultan, Fatih, Osmangazi,Yendoğan, Merve and Safa are heavily concentrated with immigrants from Black sea region.

---

[36]http://report.tuik.gov.tr/reports/rwservlet?adnksdb2=&ENVID=adnksdb2Env&report=turkiye_ilce_koy _sehir.RDF&p_il1=34&p_kod=1&p_yil=2010&p_dil=1&desformat=html (Accessed 27 June2011)
[37] http://www.ysk.gov.tr/ysk/docs/2011MilletvekiliSecimi/SecmenSandik2011.htm(Accessed 27 June2011)
[38] For more detailed information on the demographic composition of the district for the years of 2011, 2010 and 2009 consult apendix 5.

In terms of illiteracy rate, the socio-economic conditions and immigration experience of the residents of Kurdish origin in the district have a similar profile with Beyoğlu. While the district's illiteracy rate is 8% according to the 2009 Census, residents of Kurdish origin constitute the community with the lowest illiteracy rate and socioeconomic status. Although, there is an amount of early immigrants of Kurdish origin with better socio-economic conditions, most of the Kurdish population has immigrated after 1990. Even if, the district is a newly developing area where huge factories from different sectors provide employment opportunities for the residents, as indicated by the district president of AKP, the low educational profile of the residents of Kurdish origin and their unqualified labor make to find a job very difficult (Interview conducted on 22.03.2011, Beyoğlu). As a result, they are mainly employed is in low profile jobs in textile, construction sectors. In sectarian terms, a high amount of the residents from Kurdish origin belong to the *Shafi* Sect of Sunni Islam, while a small quantity mostly from Tunceli belong to the *Alevi Sect that are ideologically close to CHP*.

8.2.2- Changing Socio-demographic Composition

As illustrated in the previous section Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe are very similar in terms of the socio-demographic composition. Furthermore, both districts have considerable number of citizens having a low educational profile and facing unemployment problems. This makes them sensitive to both ideological and material mobilization. Nevertheless, one possible explanation in the change of the electoral support for BDP across elections in the districts and neighborhoods may simply be due to change in their demographic composition as a result of migration. Under such a circumstance, change in BDP votes cannot be related to the success or failure of AKP's mobilization strategy on citizen of Kurdish origin.

Unfortunately, no data is available on the characteristics of immigration flows at district or neighborhood level. One of the possible ways to measure demographic change in the percentage of Kurdish origin is to compare the change in population size and the estimated number of Kurdish citizens within each district across the periods the

elections take place.[39] Nevertheless, such data is not available at the neighborhood level, but as it will be explained in detail, district level changes may also be effective in understanding possible changes in the demographic composition of the neighborhoods.

Even if this number covers both immigration flows and newborns, they have only been evaluated as immigration flows since the rate of the newborns is considerably low for both Kurdish and non-Kurdish citizens when compared with these numbers and can only explain a considerably low percentage of this change on its own. Furthermore, it should be noted that there is no data to control neither for the change in the number of eligible voters nor the share of citizens of Kurdish origin among them, which may have caused such an increase in support for pro-Kurdish. Nevertheless, this fact does not create any problem in using support for pro-Kurdish parties as measure of AKP support among voters of Kurdish origin. The electoral preferences of young voters are also expected to be shaped by the same factors as their older counterparts within each district since their face similar experiences. Then, the mobilization strategy of AKP is expected to affect them similarly.

	Beyoğlu					Sancaktepe				
	2011	2009	2007	2011-2009	2009-2007	2011	2009	2007	2011-2009	2009-2007
Total polulation	247852	245420	248195	2432	-2775	269180	243113		26067	
Est. Kur Pop.	39119	38174	37288	945	885	43429	38565		4864	
% Est. Kurd.	15,78	15,55	15,02	0,23	0,53	16,13	15,86		0,27	
pro-Kurdish parties' vote number	12124	8796	5650	3328	3146	10817	10674	6383	143	4291
% pro-Kurdish parties	8,24	6,70	4,95	1,54	1,75	7,45	9,02	6,96	-1,57	2,06

Table 8.4: District level shifts in demographic characteristics and votes of pro-Kurdish parties (2007-2009)
*Source:www.tuik.gov.tr

Table 8.4 illustrates changes in the overall population, the residents that are registered in the 15 Kurdish populated provinces, the estimated numbers of Kurdish citizens and support for pro-Kurdish parties for the years of 2007, 2009, and 2011 in

---

[39] The data is publicly available in the website of Turkish Statistical Institute (www.tuik.gov.tr)

Beyoğlu and 2009 and 2011 in Sancaktepe[40]. Data of population change for Sancaktepe for the year of 2007 is not available since the district was legally formed only in 2008.

As it can be seen from the second group of columns of each district, both districts have witnessed increase in its overall population and estimated numbers of citizens of Kurdish origin. For Beyoğlu, change in the overall population size and estimated numbers of citizens of Kurdish origin is considerably low for both periods. The population size decreased by 2775 from 2007 to 2009 and increased by 2432 from 2009 to 2011. Whereas estimated numbers of citizens of Kurdish origin increased by 885 from 2007 to 2009 and 945 from 2009 to 2011 . On the other hand, increase in the votes of pro-Kurdish parties is considerably higher with 3146 and 3328 votes. This makes an increase of 1831 of estimated number of Kurdish residents compared to 6474 increase in vote numbers of pro-Kurdish parties between 2007 and 2011. Given the fact that new comers consists of citizens from diverging ages and not all are eligible to vote, the difference should be slightly higher. Then, even if all new comers from the southeast region are from Kurdish origin and support the pro-Kurdish parties, still a considerable number of voters seem to have switched their preferences from AKP to pro-Kurdish parties in both periods. Unfortunately, there is no available data to analyze the population changes at the neighborhood level. Nevertheless, the hometown origin of the new migration flows to the district may provide clue to the effect of migration on neighborhood outcomes. The total number of migration flows between 2009 and 2011 from the provinces of Mardin, Diyarbakır, Batman and Bingöl are 650 100, 100, 4. On the other hand, the population of residents from Tunceli has decreased by 150. When the amount of support for pro-Kurdish parties in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet is analyzed, in order to explain change in these parties' electoral support between 2009 and 2007 through migration, all the new immigrants from Mardin, Batman, Diyarbakır should have migrated to the neighborhood. Given the fact that these citizens also reside in large quantity in other neighborhoods such as Çukur, Bülbül, Örnektepe such a possibility is very low. On the other hand, the slight increase in the votes of pro-Kurdish parties in Örnektepe between 2009 and 2011 may be affected by the immigration of citizens from Mardin. A possible suggestion in the vote changes of pro-Kurdish parties in Hacıahmet may be internal migration from another neighborhood. In fact such an

---

[40] For a detailed analysis of the change in the number of residents' province registration for each district across the years consult Appendix C.

explanation is given by AKP activists. However, this is not expected to be valid, given the fact that increase in the votes in Hacıahmet does not coincide with a parallel decrease in the votes of pro-Kurdish parties in any of the neighborhoods. Nevertheless, such an observation is not valid. In none of the neighborhoods, there is a considerable decrease neither in the total population nor in the vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties. Furthermore, the residents of the neighborhood of Örnektepe and Hacıahmet are respectively from Mardin, Tunceli, Bingöl and Mardin, Batman, Diyarbakır. Even if, all new immigrants from these provinces have settled in these neighborhoods and are all eligible to vote they cannot explain all increase in support for BDP in Hacıahmet. Then, the increase in the vote shares of pro-Kurdish parties in the neighborhood can be interpreted as a real increase.

Neighborhood Votes of AKP and pro-Kurdish parties across elections				
	Örnektepe	Hacıahmet	İnönü	Veyselkarani
PKP vote 2007	436	1230	827	701
PKP vote 2009	544	1797	730	1323
PKP vote 2011	596	2747	884	1099
AKP vote 2007	2016	1919	6133	3304
AKP vote 2009	2049	1831	7239	3530
AKP vote 2011	3029	2529	10751	4958

Table 8.5: Neighborhood Votes of AKP and Pro-Kurdish parties across elections

When these numbers are analyzed for Sancaktepe it is evident that the party has managed to increase it votes among citizens of Kurdish origin from 2009 to 2011 even if the votes of pro-Kurdish parties have remained considerably equal. Sancaktepe has witnessed a large increase in both total population size and estimated numbers of Kurdish origin from 2009 to 2011. While the overall population increased by 26.067, the estimated numbers of citizens of Kurdish origin increased by 4864 which made the percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin nearly unchanged. Even if there seems to be nearly no difference when electoral votes shares are taken into consideration, AKP's success is in fact higher when absolute change in both overall population size and estimated number of Kurdish origin are taken into consideration. Although support for pro-Kurdish parties has increased from 6383 to 10674 from 2007 to 2009, it remained nearly constant with 10817 in 2011 when compared with 2009. In contrast, although there is no information on the overall population from Kurdish origin from 2007 to 2009, it has increased by 4864 from 2009 to 2011. Given the nature of the competition

238

in the Southeast Region, the probability of these new comers to vote only for AKP is considerably low. Then, we can conclude that party has managed to attract a considerably large number of citizens of Kurdish origin from old residents or new comers who are eligible to vote in the defined period. Even if they got the votes from new comers, it is still very important because it means that they attracted potential supporters of pro-Kurdish parties.

Unfortunately, there is no available data to analyze the population changes at the neighborhood level. Nevertheless, the hometown origin of the new migration flows in Sancaktepe may give an idea how much they have affected population change in Inönü or Veyselkarani. From 2009 to 2011 the resident whose hometown origins are Kars, Van, Ağrı, Bingöl and Tunceli have respectively increased by 2000, 1000, 900, 750 and 300. Given the fact that immigrants from Kars and Bingöl are mostly situated in Veyselkarani, the number of citizens of Kurdish origin has probably increased in the neighborhood. Than the success of AKP is probably more than the electoral outcomes indicates. As illustrated in table 8.5 even if no new residents have migrated to the neighborhood still the votes of pro-Kurdish parties have decreased from 2009 to 2011. On the other hand, residents of Kurdish origin in the neighborhood of Inönü are from Tunceli and Bingöl. The increase in the population of residents of Kurdish origin in these neighborhoods is expected to be less given the relatively low increase in these populations in the district as a whole. Even if, all the immigrants from these province had settled in the neighborhood still change in the electoral outcomes across elections is moderate.

The suggestion that increase in the votes of pro-Kurdish parties derives from immigration flow across years is not supported by the data. As a result, the major assumption of the study that the districts diverge in terms of support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin is still valid for these cases. Especially for Sancaktepe, one can conclude that the absolute increase in support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin is even greater.

8.2.3- Degree of Ethnic Consciousness

One other explanation of increase in the vote shares of pro-Kurdish may be the difference in the degree of ethnic consciousness in the neighborhoods. Based on the literature Hetcher, 1975; Bates, 1983; Kitschelt & Wilkinson, 2005, Sassen-Koop 1979, Schmitter 1980, Schildkraut, 2005) on ethnic consciousness is expected to be higher in geographical units where residents of Kurdish have lower socio-economic conditions, immigration experience are negative, the number of citizens of Kurdish origin is higher, they are homogenous in terms of cultural traits, BDP is well organized. This section will mainly focus on these dimensions in order to understand whether these variables explain different electoral outcomes from 2009 to 2011 in the selected neighborhoods. As indicated in table 8.6, although the neighborhoods slightly diverge in term of these variables, this divergence does not coincide with change in the electoral support for BDP.

It has been illustrated that most of the citizens of Kurdish origin residing in both Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe were later immigrants having negative immigration experiences. Most of the immigrants of Kurdish origin in the neighborhoods of Örnektepe, Hacıahmet, İnönü and Veysel Karani also fall under the same category. In all the four neighborhoods, although there is an amount of early immigrants most of them consist of citizens migrating after 1990 due to the forced migration policy of the state in the Kurdish-speaking region of Turkey. Within this respect, they all have a certain amount of perceived negative experience before they have migrated to Istanbul. A similar situation can also be observed when their socio-economic conditions are taken into consideration. Since most of them have very low educational profiles, their socio-economic conditions are very low and comprise of unqualified labor. These immigrants occupy low position jobs, where most of them work in textile industry as workers in all the neighborhoods under investigation.

Most of the Kurdish citizens are of the *Shafi* sect who is very religious in nature. Some residents in the neighborhoods of Inönü and Örnektepe where a small amount of *Alevi* Kurds resides are exceptions. Nevertheless, these groups do not constitute potential swing voters since voters from the *Alevi* sect mostly do not vote for AKP. Unfortunately, there is no publicly available statistical data on either the hometown

origin or the percentage of residents of Kurdish origin residing at neighborhood level. As an alternative strategy, the study will base its analysis on the Interview conducted during the field research.[41] When the composition of hometown origin is taken into consideration we see that Kurdish residents in Hacıahmet are immigrants from the provinces of Batman, Mardin and Diyarbakır; in Örnektepe, they are from Mardin, Tunceli and Bingöl; In Veysel Karani, they are from Bingöl and Kars and in Inönü they are from Tunceli, Bingöl, Kars. Among the ones who immigrated from Tunceli approximately half are from the *Shafi* sect as opposed to the *Alevi* sect. Although group consciousness, in-group pressure and out-group distance is expected to be greater among residents from Mardin and Batman, as it can be seen from table 8.6, the number of province these citizens have migrated is not very different. Then their degree of homogeneity in terms of cultural traits and social network seems not to diverge extensively.

Furthermore, in each of the neighborhoods the citizens of Kurdish origin slightly diverge in terms of the percentage of the population. Kurdish resident comprise approximately 25% of the population in Örnektepe, 40 % of the population in Hacıahmet, 35 % in the Neighborhood of Veysel Karani and 25% of the neighborhood in Inönü. Nevertheless, these differences do not coincide to the direction of the vote shifts.

The neighborhoods seem also to slightly diverge in terms of the organizational strength of BDP. The predecessor party was functioning in these neighborhoods in 2002 when AKP had its predecessors, too. In the entire districts, BDP has a district presidency and in the four neighborhoods under investigation, BDP has neighborhood activists that works for the party. Furthermore, the party opened contact offices where party activists were active during the general elections in each of the neighborhoods. This can be evaluated as a sign of the party's organizational strength. The party's organization strength can also be understood from its pressure on the citizens of Kurdish origin. One example was their pressure on citizens of Kurdish origin not to participate in the constitutional referendum carried in 2010 that the party boycotted. In four of the

---

[41] These percentages have been asked to the *Muhtars* of each neighborhood and district activists of both AKP and BDP. These estimates are expected to be reliable since *Muhtarlık's* are the places where records on the residents are permanently updated. Furthermore, both parties and *Muhtars* have access to the hometown origin of the residents eligible to vote in each of the neighborhoods. As a result they have an objective base of measurement. As a matter of fact, each of the organs have given approximately the same percentages.

neighborhoods AKP activists highlighted that citizens of Kurdish origin were asked to boycott the referendum and on the referendum day BDP activists waited out of the polling station to control the compliance to their request. Yet, the effectiveness of this demanded is expected to be endogenous to the support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin and percentage of residents of Kurdish origin. The turnouts for Örnektepe, Hacıahmet, Veysel Karani and İnönü was respectively 71%, 51%, 71% and 77%.

Indicators of ethnic consciousness the Kurdish Group	Neighborhoods			
	İnönü	Veysel karani	Örnektepe	Hacıahmet
socio-economic status	low	low	low	low
Degree of homogeneity (no of provinces)	3	2	3	3
Religious sect	Shafi + Alevi	Shafi	Shafi+Alevi	Shafi
approximate percentage in the municipal population	25%	35%	25%	40%
time of immigration	mostly late	mostly late	mostly late	mostly late
BDP's organizational strength	strong	strong	strong	strong
Violence	high	low	low	high
change in pro-Kurdish parties' vote shares (2009-2011)	-0,89%	-4,46%	-0,20%	6,68%
BDP vote Shares in 2011	9,03%	12,58%	8,51 %	32,54%

Table 8.6: Neighborhood level ethnic consciousness and support for BDP

This section has illustrated that the neighborhoods slightly diverge from each other in terms of the variables expected to affect the degree of ethnic consciousness the citizens of Kurdish origin have. Then the ideological position of AKP on the Kurdish issue is expected to affect most of the Kurdish voters in a similar manner, translating in similar vote shift in BDP support. Table 6.4 is the classification of the neighborhood according to these variables and electoral patterns in BDP votes. As the table illustrates such a direct relationship is not valid. Although the neighborhoods of Hacıahmet and İnönü are neighborhoods where ethnic consciousness is slightly higher, BDP support increases in Hacıahmet as expected but it remains unchanged from 2009 to 2011 in Inönü. Similarly, electoral outcomes also diverge in the neighborhood of Örnektepe and Veysel Karani where ethnic consciousness is expected to be similar. While BDP vote shares remain constant in the former, it decreases in the latter.

8.3-   Activities of the Neighborhood Organization, Representation of Citizens of Kurdish Origin and Effectiveness of the Mobilization Strategy

This study suggests that the relationship of ethnic consciousness and electoral preferences of voters of Kurdish origin has a more complex nature. As Chandra (2004) highlights, defining him/herself on ethnic grounds and voting based on this ethnicity are two distinct processes. If the voter is incorporated into the clientelistic network of a multi-ethnic party his/her probability to vote for an ethnic party will decrease even if its ethnic consciousness is high. Within this respect, it is argued that in a political environment such as the 2011 general elections where AKP has a negative stance on the Kurdish issue, the main factor affecting a Kurdish voter's decision to vote either for AKP or BDP is based on whether he/she has been incorporated into AKP's clientelistic network and the time of this incorporation. On the other hand, high ethnic consciousness is expected to more rapidly translate into BDP support when citizens of Kurdish origin are not or very lately incorporated into the network (Chandra, 2004, p: 170, 171). In fact, the decision of some voters to switch their votes should be evaluated as the result of AKP's unwillingness or inability to incorporate citizens of Kurdish origin into their network.

This study suggests that the time of the incorporation of the activists of non-Kurdish and Kurdish origin in the neighborhood organization and the repetitiveness of the contact between the organization and the voters is vital in explaining divergent support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin. On the other hand, repetitiveness can be measured through the length and intensity of the interaction. As a result, stability, increase or decrease in AKP support among citizens of Kurdish origin from 2009 to 2011 should be related to the time of the entry of co-ethnic member of the existing social networks in the party's organizational structure and the amount of activities carried by the neighborhood organization through these co-ethnics. The study uses the entry dates of the activists and the intensity of the activities of the neighborhood organization to measure the repeated course of the interaction.

The neighborhood organization consists of different activists functioning at different levels of the party hierarchy. Within this respect, formerly entering activists would be in the higher level of the hierarchy. Nevertheless, although the presence, time and level of entry of such activists is important in understanding the previous

243

incorporation of citizens of Kurdish origin, the ability of the neighborhood organization to perform publicly and identify new members through these activists is based on the successful coordination between them and the neighborhood organization. It is only when the party is able to assure such coordination that it will be successful to increase its network among citizens of Kurdish origin through older activists. Coordination is especially important when the members of the neighborhood organization are new and activists of Kurdish origin are nonexistent. Recall that assuring cooperation between the district and neighborhood level activists is in the responsibility of the neighborhood coordinator. Then the dedication of the neighborhood coordinator to the party's work would provide a measure of cooperation. This is why the dedication of the neighborhood activist will also taken into consideration to measure the effect of a co-ethic in the district organization in providing information to the neighborhood organization when presence of co-ethnic in each of the neighborhoods is analyzed.

The main data used in this section has been extracted from participant observations and personal interviews conducted before and during the electoral campaigning period. Furthermore, the official web pages of AKP district branch and the municipality where personal information on the members of the main organs are published also comprise a considerable part of the data used for this section. Given the fact that parties mobilize the maximum of their resources to contact voters during the electoral campaigning period (Sayarı, 1976, p: 295); the amount of activities performed by the district and neighborhood activists during this period should give a relative neighborhood comparison on the extent of the intensity of their activities and the amount of coordination between them.

The composition of the district and neighborhood organization during the electoral campaigning activities has been taken into consideration. Although, in 2012 congresses were held at district level and the position of some activists have changed, these have not been taken into consideration since they would have no effect on the results of the elections. An interesting observation in all the neighborhoods and districts under investigation is the weakening of the neighborhood organizations after 2006 and their restructuring after the 2009 municipal elections due to the changing characteristic of the electoral competition. Although their weakening and restructuring was a similar process for all neighborhoods, characteristics of people recruited, their dedication to party activities after 2009 greatly diverged among the neighborhoods. As it will be

244

illustrated into the next chapter, the experience of a critical juncture in the district of Sancaktepe enabled the district branch to motivate both district and neighborhood activists. On the other hand, uninterrupted organizational order prevented Beyoğlu to motivate its activists.

8.3.1- Örnektepe

Örnektepe was among one of the neighborhoods where the party has successfully organized and recruited members to the district organization in its foundation period. In fact, a considerable number of these activists were former members of the FP who decided to continue their careers with AKP when its principle founders quit FP and organized under a new party in 2001, namely AKP. On the other hand, the party was also able the recruit activists from different traditional political orientations and hometown origin. The citizens of Kurdish origin residing in the neighborhood were not an exception. They were represented in the party since its formation and were still active during the electoral campaigning activities of 2011 general elections. During the electoral campaigning period, there were six activists from the district branch residing in the neighborhood of Örnektepe. Three of them were from Kurdish origin. One women branch activist from the province of Kars, two main activists from the provinces of Ağrı and Bingöl. All five of these activists entered the party in 2001, three as the founding members of the neighborhood organization and 2 as the founding member of the district organization during the party formation. After having worked in the neighborhood organization, they promoted to the district between 2003 and 2006. All of these members are very active in the party, respected people in the neighborhood, very well known among the residents and have consolidated relations with them. These activists have key positions in the party. Among the four activists in the main branch, two of them who are from Kurdish origin have been selected as members of the municipal council in 2009. One of them functions in the district as vice president since its formation while the other is member of the administrative board. Among activists from the woman branch, the one from Kurdish origin occupies the post of vice presidency while the other is the member of the administrative board.

245

Although the clientelistic network in the neighborhood has been formed during the foundation of the party in 2001 and was very active in the neighborhood, the neighborhood organization weakened and its activities decreased as some activists promoted to the district and others left the party after 2006. Attempts to strengthen the neighborhood of the organization began after the municipal elections of 2009.

Although the neighborhood organization of the main branch was reformed by 2010, the party did not recruit new activists. The activists, the neighborhood president included, of the new neighborhood organization composed of the previous activists that left the party after 2006. As the neighborhood president highlights, *"our old neighborhood president did his best, but it was not sufficient. The party convinced me and other former activists to return to the party. In a sense the organization has returned to its founding stage where founding members are back"* (Interview conducted on 14.05.2011, Örnektepe). In a sense, their support base was not different from district activists living in the neighborhood. Nevertheless, most of the activists were respected people of their community, known by the supporters of the party due to their previous experience and living in the neighborhood for long years. The main branch neighborhood president was from the province of Sivas. He mentioned to me that the district purposefully selects him since he was not from the dominant communities residing in the neighborhood, namely Kastamonu and Bingöl, and this was increasing the party's image of non-discrimination. For example the neighborhood president, informed me that he was residing in the neighborhood for more than 40 years.

Furthermore, the successful formation of the woman branch could not be assured. This situation was confirmed by the women branch district president who asserted many times that they had difficulty in building up their organization as they could not find an active neighborhood president that would form the organization. The main branch neighborhood president's attitude was also similar. After I asked the activities of the woman branch he answered, *"We have no coordination with them, as the party we don't know what they doing"*, when I asked him whether this meant that they do not work actively, he answered me with a smile his face, *"I would prefer to say, I don't know"* (Interview conducted on 14.05.2011). Interview conducted with the woman branch neighborhood president reveals that she had no experience on the responsibilities her post required. When I asked her what they were doing during an electoral campaigning activity she answered, *"They told me to come with some activists and her I am, but I*

really don't know the purpose, I think I will walk with them" (electoral campaigning activity on 03.05.2011, Örnektepe). During our talk, when I asked her what they routinely do, she only could tell me that they were meeting once a week, she did not even mention a word on their strategy, the purpose of their activities or how she formed the organization, albeit I tried to orient her. The weakness of the woman branch organization was also visible in the preparation of the lists for the representatives of each polling station. Although each neighborhood branch has normally the responsibility to prepare these lists, the main branch president prepared all the lists himself without the assistance of the woman branch president. Furthermore, the neighborhood coordinator of the woman branch hardly performed her responsibilities. In fact, in contrast to the other district activists she participated in neither of the general electoral campaigning activities in the two-month period, nor to the ones carried in her neighborhood.

The main branch neighborhood organization had good coordination with the district activists residing in the neighborhood. This coordination was visible from the discourse of the neighborhood president who related the expected success of the party to the assistance of the district coordinator in all the activities the organization had performed. Nevertheless, the neighborhood organization neither has incorporated new activists in the organization origin, nor has intensified its network through routine activities. After 2009, no new activists of Kurdish origin have been incorporated in either the main or the women neighborhood organizations. This return decreased its ability to identify and persuade other voters of Kurdish origin outside their actual network.

When we look at the intensity of the activities of the neighborhood organization we see that the participation of both main and women branch neighborhood activists, especially presidents, in the electoral campaigning activities in the district was very low. Although, they were supposed to be present during the electoral campaigning activity of the district, no one from the organization was present, except the woman branch neighborhood president who only participated in the first activity. As it will be illustrated later this is a rather different situation than the neighborhood of Inönü and Veyselkarani. The low attendance of people in the opening of the neighborhood contact office revealed that neither had they recruited people in the activities nor had they participated themselves. The only activity they performed and were responsible of was

to distribute the brochures of the party to the residents of the neighborhood. Furthermore, they mostly did not make the weekly neighborhood meeting weakening the information flow among the organization. Although the neighborhood organization had access to former connections and street representation, it was not able to increase its reach among citizens of Kurdish origin since neither new activists of Kurdish origin were recruited, nor the activities of the neighborhood organization were intense.

Although some of the activists of Kurdish origin were incorporated into the clientelistic network in the founding phase of the party, after 2009 no new activist of Kurdish origin was incorporated. Recall, that identification of new types of voters it carried through either the incorporation of new activists or the regular activities conducted. Within this respect, although there is an amount of coordination between district and neighborhood level activists that gives opportunity to increase the network among voters of Kurdish origin, the low amount of activities decreased this possibility of existent activists to identify new voters through their routine activities. Under these circumstances although the party was able to incorporate some citizens of Kurdish origin through the activities of activists of Kurdish origin in the neighborhood until 2006, the party could not increase its support afterwards. This was reflected as a stability in the electoral support for AKP across elections.

8.3.2- İnönü

A similar pattern concerning the incorporation of activists of Kurdish origin is also visible in the neighborhood of İnönü, albeit the amount of activities of the neighborhood organization during the electoral campaigning period greatly diverged. The voters of Kurdish origin were incorporated to the clientelistic network in the founding phase of the party and their representation continued across elections. Nevertheless, new channels of contact could not be established with different voters of Kurdish origin as in Örnektepe, albeit the cause of this inability is slightly different. Many activists still present in the party entered the organization during its formation phase in 2001 and among them activists of Kurdish origin comprise a considerable quantity. Most of these activists have entered the party through the neighborhood

248

organizations and promoted to the district between 2003 and 2006.[42] Six activists among which three were of Kurdish origin were in the district organization of women, main and youth branches of the party during the electoral campaigning period. Five of them, including the members of Kurdish origin were founding members of the neighborhood organization in 2001, promoted to the district organization after 2006, and kept their post until the 2011 general elections. When the representation of Kurdish citizens in all the sub-region of Sarıgazi, which was a sub-region (*belde*) until 2008, is taken into consideration the numbers of citizens of Kurdish origin represented in the party since 2001 rises to six.[43] The hometown origins of these activists represent the population patterns of the region. Two are from Kars, two from Tunceli (these are from the *Shafi* sect, nevertheless there one *Alevi* activist from Tunceli formerly supporting CHP recruited in 2009), one from Van and the last from Bingöl. These activists were in the executive and administrative board of the sub-district before it united with Samandıra and Yenidoğan to constitute the district of Sancaktepe in 2008. Then they passed to different positions in the district organ. One has been selected as member of the Municipal council in 2009; one was the main responsible of the youth branch of the sub-district of Sarıgazi; others were members of the auxiliary board during the field research.

The district began to restructure the neighborhood organization after 2009. Although the main branch neighborhood president present during the electoral campaigning period was recruited in 2009 to form the organization, it was not until the woman branch of the district found a motivated and active president apt to form the organization in 2010 that the woman branch neighborhood organization successfully began to function. Although the main branch president was an old party activist that was transferred from ANAP in 2002 and left the party in 2008, the women branch president, whose family was traditionally close to CHP, was a new one having no previous party experience. Both of the presidents were from the Black Sea Region of Turkey. The two

---

[42] Recall that a similar situation was also visible in Örnektepe and is also visible for Sancaktepe. As it will explained in detail on the new section this coincides to the Party Congress where party completed its organizational restructuring.

[43] The reason I use the representation is Sarıgazi is due to the geographical concentration of citizens of Kurdish origin in a specific area which fall between the neighborhoods of Inönü, Merkez, Atatürk and Kemal Türkler. In fact, all of these neighborhoods are very close to each other making the neighborhoods only administratively divided not in terms of populations. A similar situation is also valid for the neighborhoods of Akpınar and Veysel Karani in the sub-region of Samandıra.

activists replaced all the non-working activists with new ones. The neighborhood organization says, "*I have totally changed the organization and left no one from the old one*". When I ask her why she answers, "*I have tried to work with them but they get used to do nothing, that's why I replaced them with new people who would be very glad to work hard*" (Interview conducted on 10.05.2011, İnönü).

The organization could partly attain street representation in the neighborhood. This was the especially valid in the region of *Demokrasi* where residents of Kurdish origin are large in numbers. The woman branch president highlighted that she purposefully recruited a young female activist by a strong family from the region 6 months ago so that she could be informed on what was happening there. She added that by her intermediary, she was able to visit people there and carry a few home-talks. (Electoral campaigning activity on 21.05.2011, Inönü). Nevertheless, no now activist of Kurdish origin were incorporated into the organization after 2009.

The coordination between the district activists residing in the neighborhood and the neighborhood organization was not successfully carried preventing the neighborhood organization to have access to former communication channels. While the lack of cooperation in the main branch was the ineffectiveness of the neighborhood coordinator, the major cause in the woman branch was the competition between the new and old activists where old ones were blamed not to work enough. This situation was also visible in the discourses of the activists. When I asked the women branch neighborhood president why she entered the party, she answered,

> "*I was furious with the neighborhood coordinators from the district, they were not fulfilling their functions. We had deaths in my family no one came to visits although I am a member of the party. The municipality performed many activities, but we were not informed. The party's image was pretty damaged because of them*" (Interview conducted on 21.05.2011, Inönü).

In one of the meetings where all activists in the neighborhood meet to call for asking members to participate in a mass meeting, the activists were furious because the two women branch district members did not show up. One among them complained, "*I don't understand, people have changed. They enter the party, find a job through their connections and once they get the job they stop working for the party. It was not like that before*" (Electoral campaigning activity, 12.05.2011, Inönü). In another occasion

during the district activities in the neighborhood, the main branch president was whispering to the woman branch president, *"they do nothing, but you see they show up now, just to convince the higher ranks that they work and off course to introduce themselves to the deputy candidate"* (electoral campaigning activity in 21.05.2011, Inönü).

The neighborhood organization was very active during the electoral campaigning activities; they routinely conducted their meetings and informed people on the activities of the party and the municipality. In fact, the organization gathered nine full buses of people for the mass meeting of Erdoğan, the president of the party and the prime minister of Turkey. The neighborhood presidents and some activists were present in all the district level activities and were responsible to coordinate the places to be visited that they arranged through the connections of the other neighborhood activists. Furthermore, they continued to perform routine visits to the voters they get informed.

Some of the activists of Kurdish origin were incorporated in the party in its founding phase through the neighborhood organization and they continued functioning in the party afterwards. Nevertheless, there were no new recruited activists of Kurdish origin in the neighborhood organization, they were deprived of old connections due to the lack of coordination, and the connections they formed were too new to develop personal relations. This prevented the party to increase its network among citizens of Kurdish origin through identification of new potential party supporters. Within respect, support for the party has remained constant across the elections. After 2009, although the neighborhood organization was very active, the inability of the party to incorporate activists of Kurdish origin and the absence of coordination with old activists prevented the party to incorporate citizen citizens of Kurdish origin outside their traditional network and the party could not increase its support among citizens of Kurdish origin. So compared with Örnektepe, the neighborhood organization was more active but was not effective to mobilize voters of Kurdish origin.

8.3.3- Hacıahmet

In contrast to Örnektepe and İnönü the party in Hacıahmet has been unable to create permanent channels of communication with residents of Kurdish origin since its foundation in 2001. Although there were two activists from the neighborhood of Hacıahmet joining the party in 2001 and they were still in the party in the date of the field research, these activists directly joined the district organization and had no neighborhood experience. One activist from Kurdish origin was a member of the executive board of the main branch, while the other was a member of the administrative Board of the women branch. None of these activists fully functioned in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet during the electoral campaigning period. As a result, support for BDP regularly increased across the elections where the party respectively gained around 15%, 20% and 25% of the votes for the 2002, 2007 and 2009 elections. Furthermore, a well functioning neighborhood organization was not established during the founding phase of the party. Given the fact that the main organ of penetration is the neighborhood organization, the party was unable to penetrate among the residents of the neighborhood through its activists. Although after 2009 the party has also tried to restructure the main, women and youth organization by incorporating new neighborhood presidents to fulfill this function, their attempts were not really effective since activists of Kurdish origin were lately incorporated, there was no coordination between the neighborhood and district activists and the amount of their activities was considerably low.

The main branch president was recruited in 2009, while the women and youth branch presidents were recruited in 2010. During the electoral campaigning period, their experience was only for 1 year and they had no experienced coordinators to orient them. The woman branch president having migrated from the Black Sea region resides in the lower parts of the neighborhood where citizens of Kurdish origin are large in number. The main branch president is an old resident of the neighborhood, who has returned to the neighborhood after he was retired. On the other hand, the youth branch president is from residents of Kurdish origin that have recently migrated from the province of Siirt, a community that comprises a minority in the neighborhood. As a result, although he is from Kurdish origin, the member of the social network of the

252

voters from Mardin and Diyarbakır that constitute the majority in the neighborhood is very low.

The women branch functions with 11 activists and is composed of activists entering the organization in between 2007-2008 and new activists entering in 2011. Among them, one old activist is from Kurdish origin who is among early immigrant from Bingöl. This is also a minority community in the neighborhood, so she has few channels of communication with the majority groups of Kurdish origin. Furthermore, there are two activists from Mardin and Diyarbakır who were recruited to the organization a few months before the electoral campaigning period. The main branch also consists of 11 activists, but there is no activist of Kurdish origin. The youth branch consists of a few activists who barely perform any activities. The organization is too new to establish the permanent channels of contact with the citizens of Kurdish origin. Furthermore, it was not able to extend its reach to all the streets of the neighborhood, although they informed me they could physically enter nearly all streets except two. Such an argument is expected to be developed to show the organization stronger than it is. In fact, this was a very commonly used discourse by the activists during the field research to increase the party's reputation. Nevertheless, the liability of this argument is discussable, as the main branch neighborhood president expressed quite the contrary. When I asked him, whether they have activists in all the streets of the neighborhood, he answered me, " *In fact we should have done this, but unfortunately, me and the Bircan* (the neighborhood president) *could not attend such an organizational structure*" (Interview conducted on 06.06.2011, Hacıahmet).

Furthermore, there is no coordination between the district activists and the neighborhood organization. I have never been able to meet the main branch neighborhood coordinators. Although the woman branch coordinator assisted the neighborhood meetings, she also never participated in the activities performed by the district, around the neighborhood or elsewhere. Given the fact that nearly all district activists routinely participated to the activities in all the neighborhoods, this really seems to signify a lack of motivation. The activists were also poorly informed by the activities of the party or the municipality; a duty that the neighborhood coordinators had to perform. Furthermore, activities such as distributing brochures, or stuff with the logo of the party were told to them on the phone and none of the coordinators helped them to do it. This is a considerably different situation from the neighborhood of Örnektepe

253

where neighborhood activists were informed by the neighborhood coordinators on the activities. The lack of coordination was also valid for the district activist of Kurdish origin. None of the neighborhood activists mentioned her name when they were counting the activists functioning in the neighborhood. She was in total isolation, except for the activities performed by the municipality. The main branch neighborhood president commonly expressed the lack of coordination. On one occasion he expressed,

> "*We never see them in the neighborhood and we get informed of nothing. They should stay in the district office where they always are, this is more beneficial for them. You know the municipality has realized a visit in their camp in Kefken[44], and we heard this from people who got informed from the municipality. Strange isn't it, we should have been the ones informing people?*" (Interview conducted on 23.05.2011, Hacıahmet).

The amount of activities performed in the neighborhood was very low during the electoral campaigning period. The women branch president informed me that she had no much time to do party works since she got a new job where she works 6 days a week. Among the activities that they performed, she counted routine activities of the neighborhood organization such as effectuating the weekly meeting, voter scan (seçmen taraması), social assistance (Interview conducted on 23.05.2011, Hacıahmet). Nevertheless, none of them has been carried during the electoral campaigning period. The low amount of activities may be understood from the discourse of the main branch president who told me,

> "*Actually I don't work very much in the neighborhood, in fact, there is no much to do and I am ill, I can't even walk very long. I come here every day and open the office; that is all. I prepare the lists of the coordinators of the ballot box and the youth branch president distributes the brochures at night*" (Interview conducted on 24.05.2011, Hacıahmet).

In fact, I was able to meet none of the neighborhood activists during my visits to the contact office except the activist responsible of the organization who was coming to sign for his presence and leaving after a while. The major activities performed by the activists were the distribution of brochures and preparation of the ballot lists.

Although there is one activist of Kurdish origin functioning in the district organization in 2001, the inexperience of the activists in the neighborhood organization prevented the incorporation of citizens of Kurdish origin into the network until 2009.

---

[44] A vacation place near Istanbul where the municipality of Beyoğlu has a camp and regularly send residents of the district every year.

Furthermore, the neighborhood organization functions in the neighborhood through the woman branch, but its establishment and recruitment of activists of Kurdish origin are too new, there is lack of coordination between activists at different levels and the activities of the neighborhood organizations are very low. As a result, the party could also not incorporate citizens of Kurdish origin after 2009. These are expected to act as obstacles to the formation of permanent channels of interaction required for the identification of different types of voters and development of solid relations with the residents of Kurdish origin based on mutual trust and commitment. As expected, the support among voters of Kurdish origin considerably decreased across elections where it found its lowest point in 2011 general elections.

8.3.4- Veysel Karani

The representation of the citizens of Kurdish origin into the clientelistic network has a very changing character in the neighborhood of Veysel karani, where there were ups and downs from 2002 to 2007, but considerably increased after the year of 2009. As the neighborhood of Örnektepe the party was able to convince some of the former activists of FP of both main and women branches to join the organization during its foundation in 2001. Citizens of Kurdish origin were not represented into the network, but activists worked long enough in the neighborhood to develop personalized relationships with them. Nevertheless, none of these activists continued to function in the party, as a considerable number left it between 2006 and 2007.[45] In fact, there is no activist who continued in the party from its foundation until the general elections of 2011, except the actual woman branch neighborhood president who began with RP in 1994. The interviews conducted with her indicate that she has no connection with the citizens of Kurdish origin and reluctance to incorporate them into her organization. The present neighborhood coordinator of the woman branch who is very active in the neighborhood is from the Black Sea region of Turkey. After entering the neighborhood organization in 2007 and worked as the neighborhood president she was promoted to

---

[45] As it will be revealed in the next chapter, splits from the neighborhood organizations under the all the neighborhoods was due to the inability of the district branch to motivate these activists that could not promote to the district as a result of the internal organizational structure of the party.

her position in 2009. She also has no connections with voters of Kurdish origin. The neighborhood organization was also re-structured after 2009, where old activists and new ones have been recruited. Among the old ones are the main branch neighborhood president and the woman branch member responsible of the organization who both of them have left the party after 2006. The main branch president informed me that he entered to the party on the demand of the district president *"He asked me to re-structure the organization which dissolved during the former presidency."* (Electoral campaigning activity on 26.05.2011, Veyselkarani). Both of them have good relations with the citizens of Kurdish origin. Working for a long time as owner of a grocery shop in the neighborhood, the main branch president suggests that his respect among these residents is the result of his profession. The president highlights, *"I have lots of friends from them. Some are BDP supporters. They know that we are from AKP, we discuss politics with them, but we know each other for a long period of time"* (Electoral campaigning activities on 04.06.2011, VeyselKarani). On the other hand, the female activist lives in the part of the neighborhood greatly populated by citizens of Kurdish origin. Her good relations with them could be observed during one of my visits to her house. The youth branch president recruited to the organization in 2007 is member of a Kurdish family close to AKP migrating from the province of Ağrı. An important fact, differentiating Veysel Karani from the other neighborhoods is the incorporation of activists of Kurdish origin in all the branches after 2009. These activists are close to BDP supporters in the neighborhood. During the electoral campaigning period there was one activist in the woman branch from Bingöl, two activists in the main branch from Bingöl and Kars, one activist in the youth branch from Kars. The main and youth branches representatives were very proud of the new recruited activist whose families were traditionally close to BDP. The youth branch president shows a teenage from the neighborhood who was present in all the district activities, *"you see him, his family supports BDP, yesterday his uncle yelled at him because he is with us, but he is here again. People have prejudices but as you see they are not always right"* (Electoral campaigning activity 04.06.2011, Veysel Karani). This example also reveals the importance of the time of incorporation into the network. As it can be seen from the reaction of his uncle, the incorporation of voters of Kurdish origin through the activists does not directly transform to support. It seems rather to be the result of a long process of interaction.

256

As illustrated previously there is a high degree of coordination between the activists in the neighborhood. The neighborhood meetings were carried every week with the participation of each branch and neighborhood coordinators. The main branch neighborhood coordinator was an activist from Kurdish origin who worked for years in the neighborhood organization of Akpınar[46]. He was present in all the activities in the neighborhood. Similarly, the woman branch neighborhood coordinator prepared all the activities of the organization and actively took part in all of them during the electoral campaigning activity. It was her that decided which house to visit, who to contact. She had total control of the neighborhood. In fact, she had total control of the information on all the events taking place in the neighborhood through her capacity to mobilize the activists residing in different streets of the neighborhood. She was well known and loved by the residents of the neighborhood. All of the activists appreciated her hard working. One district members highlighted, "*In all the neighborhoods there should be an activist working like that, then our votes would probably increase more*" (Electoral campaigning activity on 26.05.2011, Veysel Karani).

The presence of the neighborhood organization was very evident during the electoral campaigning activities as in the neighborhood of İnönü. In the entire district programs, the activists were present and were responsible to coordinate the activities. They all actively recruited people to the activities distributed the party's brochures, carried door-to-door visits in the neighborhood. The party was able to send ten buses for the mass meeting of Istanbul. Activists were routinely informed by the activities of the district and the municipality whom they were asked to participate. In fact, nearly all of them, they took actively part in all kind of activities.

There is a great divergence in the incorporation of the citizens of Kurdish origin in the neighborhood. Although they were not incorporated into the network until 2009, a huge quantity of activists of Kurdish origin participated to the organization then. Furthermore, old activists have normalized relations with the residents of Kurdish origin. The coordination between the activists was very well attained through the neighborhood coordinators and the amount of the activities of the neighborhood organization was very high. Under these circumstances, the party's support among citizens of Kurdish origin fluctuated across the elections until 2009. Nevertheless, the

---

[46] This is neighborhood, which has a frontier with Veysel Karani and is divided only administratively from it.

party was able to increase its support among voters of Kurdish origin from 2009 to 2011.

8.4-   Incorporation of Co-ethnic and Effectiveness of Mobilization

The previous section has illustrated the relationship between the time of incorporation of the activists from the Kurdish origin members of the existing ethnic social network in the party's rank, the intensity of the amount of the neighborhood organization and the electoral support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin across the years. The relationship between time of entry of Kurdish activists and electoral outcome has been articulated on the basic assumption that the former increases the effectiveness of the mobilization by enabling the party to function publicly and selectively. Within this respect, it has been assumed that time of activists' entry and their ethnic identification increases effective mobilization. This section has the objective to understand how the time of incorporation of activists of Kurdish and non-Kurdish origin affects the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy of the party.

Three basic assumptions will be tested in this section. Mobilization is ineffective when voters of Kurdish origin are contacted by unknown non-Kurdish activists since they cannot perform publicly and selectively due to the violent character of the Kurdish opposition and weakness of inter-community relations. The length of the contact decreases fear of the activists, reaction of opposition voters, increasing identification. The presence of co-ethnics decreases the cost of mobilization since their dense social networks decreases the required length to decrease fear, reaction and identify voters. Thus, they more easily decrease violence, identify swing voters enabling the party to mobilize publicly, selectively.

Then, in neighborhoods where activists of both non-Kurdish and Kurdish origin are performing their activities for a long period of time the study expects these activists to function publicly and selectively. Within this respect, as the activists in the neighborhood of Örnektepe, İnönü and Veysel Karani have entered the party in its founding phase, the study expects the number of identified voter to be high and the activities performed through these activists to be public and selective.

258

The increase of the clientelistic network is carried at the neighborhood level. Then representativeness at the neighborhood level is effective in incorporating voters of Kurdish origin outside the party's traditional network. Public and selective mobilization is expected to be possible only when there are activists of non-Kurdish or Kurdish origin known by the residents of Kurdish origin in the organization. Nevertheless, recall that the neighborhood organization consists of different activists functioning in different levels of the party hierarchy. The level of coordination between activists at different levels influences the effectiveness of the neighborhood level mobilization strategy. Coordination is especially important when the members of the neighborhood organization are new and activists of Kurdish origin are nonexistent. It is only when the party is able to assure such coordination that the neighborhood organization will be able to function publicly and collectively. Then, the activities of the district and neighborhood organization will diverge depending on the number of activists of Kurdish origin among them and the amount of cooperation between them.

Within this respect, the first section illustrates how the length of the contact of the activists increases identification by comparing the neighborhoods according the percentage of membership to their overall support. The second section will illustrate the effect of the length of the contact on the public and selective nature of the mobilization by analyzing the electoral campaigning activity carried by the district. Such kind of analysis is expected to accurately measure the relationship between length of the contact and effectiveness of mobilization since all activists old and new from different rank participate to these elections. Nevertheless, public and selective functioning is expected to increase the clientelistic network when carried at the neighborhood level. Thus, the last section will analyze the nature of the activities of the neighborhood organization according to the presence of activists of Kurdish origin either through their new incorporation or through coordination with the ones at district level. This section will especially show how incorporation of new activists of Kurdish origin and cooperation among different level of activists is important in increasing the effectiveness of mobilization at neighborhood level.

8.4.1- Identified Supporters in the Neighborhoods

One of the hypotheses of this study is that the regardless of the origin of their origin, the length of the interaction of the party activists with voters of Kurdish origin influences the party's ability to function publicly. Then in neighborhoods where activists are working for the party for a long period of time the study expects these activists to function publicly and selectively. Then in neighborhood where the party functions for a long period of time the number of identified voters is expected to be high. This coincides to the neighborhoods of Örnektepe, İnönü and Veysel Karani. On the other hand, in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet where the activists began to function very recently membership is expected to be low.

The literature suggests (Mckenzie, 1963, p: 544, Sayarı, 1975) that membership is an important indicator for measuring the size of the clientelistic network. Membership should be liable data to measure the number of supporters identified by AKP in the neighborhoods since all activists from different ranks were asked by the party central administrative board to make as many members as possible before the 2011 general elections campaigning period. This strategy was so important for the party that rewards were given to districts, neighborhoods that enlarged their membership numbers. During my participation in the monthly provincial meeting with the district presidents, the district making the most members were promised to be given a laptop. Similarly, during one of the woman branch district meetings that I attended, the branch president promised a dinner in a reputable restaurant to the members of the wining neighborhood. For the purpose of the study, the importance is that it shows the maximum number of identified supporters in each of the neighborhoods. Such a measurement could be objected on the ground that all potential supporters indentified by the activists would perhaps not become a member of the party. The main logic of such an objection derives from the costs that membership brings to voters. Nevertheless, the validity of such an objection decreases in this case. As it has previously been illustrated, membership in AKP has very low responsibilities, but enables voters to have access to certain benefits. As a result, contacted supporter would probably accept to become a member when they are asked. Second column of table 8.7 indicates the membership in the neighborhoods highly populated by citizens of Kurdish origin in Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe before the

2011 electoral campaigning period. The third column measures the percentage of the party supporters reached by the party through membership.

Membership and vote shifts in the neighborhoods (2011)						
neighborhood	AKP vote	Membership	reached supporters	Kurd. Pop %	2009	2011
Veysel karani	4958	2707	54,60	35,00	17,02	12,58
İnönü	2966	1413	47,64	25,00	9,54	9,04
Hacıahmet	2529	858	33,93	40,00	25,86	32,54
Örnektepe	3029	1931	63,75	25,00	8,71	8,51

Table 8.7: Membership and vote shifts in the neighborhoods (2011)
* These are the total vote shares of right parties in these neighborhoods MHP included
** Note that the members in the district are more than the actual supporters, this support previous studies suggesting that membership is not always a case of preferences.

The data reveals a relationship between the percentage of identified supporters by AKP and length of the activities in the neighborhood. In the neighborhood of Hacıahmet where the activists have begun to function very recently membership is the lowest, precisely 33,93% of AKP's total support. In the neighborhoods of Veysel Karani, İnönü and Örnektepe where the neighborhood organization functions for a long period of time membership is considerably high.

8.4.1- Mobilization Activities of the District Organizations

The previous section has identified that the number of identified voters is high in the neighborhoods of Örnektepe, Inönü and Veyselkarani, while it is low in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet. It has also been illustrated that activists from both Kurdish and non-Kurdish origin were active in the neighborhood from the foundation phase of the party until 2007 in Örnektepe and Inönü. On the other hand, although there were no activists of Kurdish origin in the neighborhood of Veyselkarani, activists functioned long enough to develop relations with voters of Kurdish origin but left the organization after 2007. The study suggests that in the three neighborhoods the party was able to identify potential supporters and decrease reaction with citizens of Kurdish origin until 2007. Then, during the electoral campaigning period, in the three of the neighborhoods

there were activists known by voters of Kurdish origin with a certain support base among citizens of Kurdish origin. In contrast, in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet although 2 activists one from Kurdish origin entered the district, these activists did not function in the neighborhood. As a result, they did not have the ability to identify or decrease violence in the neighborhood.

If this argument is valid, then, we should observe different mobilization strategies during the electoral campaigning activities in the first group of the neighborhoods vis-à-vis Hacıahmet. Furthermore, in the first group of the district's the activists violence is expected to be low, selective targeting among Kurdish citizens high. In fact, the party publicly functioned in all of the three cited neighborhoods whereas it performed no activities in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet. In first group of the neighborhoods, public and selective functioning of the district organization and decreasing violence accompanied by high support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin is expected. On the other hand, activities in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet are expected to be more programmatic where the party does function neither publicly nor selectively. Furthermore, violence and low support for AKP is expected in this neighborhood. In fact, the observations conducted during the electoral campaigning activity support these expectations.

In the neighborhood of Örnektepe none of the activists feared to publicly function in the neighborhoods. The district organization carried 3 full day activities in the district with the deputy candidates and all district members. These activities comprised of door-to-door visits of the residents and the stores, coffeehouses and hometown-associations, contact office meeting.[47] Furthermore, the party could carry these activities in all the streets in the neighborhood, albeit they were more careful in the streets where opposition voters are in majority. In these streets, the party was very careful to walk between two of the election buses, one in the front and one behind. Activists were many times, warned on not to retreat from the group. Nevertheless, all activists were present in the district activities carried with the deputy candidates during the electoral campaigning period. Furthermore, they all know very well the residents of the neighborhood; easily talk about personal issues with them. Within this respect, the party

---

[47] The electoral campainging activity in Beyoğlu differed form Sancaktepe and Beykoz. It was mostly carried through walks named by the activists as "love walks", where the members of the party distributes flowers to the residents. Specific targetting was less, people asking for help were directly transmitted to the neighborhood organization. This was probably due to the inability of the party to motivate neighborhood activists to actively work and identify potential supporters.

could make specific targeting within the format of the electoral campaigning activities. An event that took place during one of the campaigning activity with a resident of Kurdish origin is a good example to the extent of their relationship. While we were sitting in the bus, one of the district member open the window and began to talk with a couple standing in front of their house, *"your daughter came to our department for a job interview, she called me, I helped her, I hope she will be able to have the post"* (Electoral campaigning activity on 03.05.2011, Örnektepe).

Furthermore, all the activists declared the changing reaction of the citizens of Kurdish origin towards their party. The main branch president of Örnektepe highlighted, *"there is no violence in the neighborhood; no one would do anything to the party's activists. Once it was not like that. What can I tell you, my own car was burned once in the middle of the night, but those days have passed"* (Interview conducted on 14.05.2011, Örnektepe). Decrease in the reaction of the voters of Kurdish origin is also supported by the electoral outcomes. Beginning with 2007, BDP received only 8 % of the votes in the neighborhood where citizens of Kurdish origin comprise approximately %25 of the total population.

The same situation was also apparent in İnönü despite of its more violent character of the Kurdish opposition due to the presence of lots of members of illegal organizations. All of the activists were very active and the district branch could publicly effectuate electoral campaigning activities with the deputy candidates. The residents of Kurdish origin were moderate towards the candidate deputies that saluted them, listened to their demands and problems in the door-to-door visits. Although most of the contacting offices of the party were stoned and burned at nights, a few acts of violence occurred during the activities, these events were not taken seriously. None of the less, activists were careful in not provoking people and built an image of the party which is inclusive and against violence. As an example during their presence in the neighborhoods, the drivers of the election cars were careful not to open the elections song too loudly. When reaction was high or tension rose between different groups, the activists, even the younger one, were very calm and tried to continue to their activities without giving any aggressive reaction. The district organization performed 4 full days of electoral campaigning activity. These activities comprised of door-to-door visits of the residents and stores, hometown associations, home talks and personal visits of diverse kind such as funerals, illness, social assistance etc. Activists tried to benefit

263

from the presence of the deputy candidates to solve several problems of the voters that were detected formerly. Furthermore, the party was able to perform these activities in all the streets, albeit they were more careful in the area of *Demokrasi* where opposition groups comprise the majority. On the other hand, while they were conducting visits, the activists could easily identify opposition voters; voters of Kurdish origin included, and warn the deputy candidate in place where violence could occur. They, one by one cited the electoral preferences of the owners of the stores before the deputy candidate make visits. In one occasion, the neighborhood president prevented the deputy candidate to enter a passage on the ground that it was the place greatly frequented by illegal organizations.

Both the activists and electoral results support decreasing violence. One women branch activists proclaims, "*We have been stoned lots of time in the past, but as you see now we can publicly and comfortably work here. People's reactions change over time as they better know you*" (Electoral campaigning activities on 21.05.2011, İnönü). In fact, although potential for violence has occurred during the electoral campaigning period, it was successfully prevented by Kurdish activists. The high support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin also supports the decreasing reaction to the party. BDP received only 9.03% of the votes in the neighborhood where citizens of Kurdish origin comprise approximately 25% of the population.

Activists in the neighborhood of Veysel Karani, performed their activities even more publicly and comfortably. The district organization carried 4 full days of electoral campaigning activity in the neighborhood. The activities comprised also of door-to-door resident and store visits, contact office talks, but personal visits covered a greater share of the activities. The party could carry these activities in all the streets of the neighborhoods. Activists knew the electoral preferences of the voters, the citizens of Kurdish origin included. They were contacted in all activities and personal visits to some of its members have also been performed. Many voters of Kurdish origin were recruited by neighborhood activists for activities of the district and the municipality such as picnics, dinners etc.

As in the other neighborhoods, old activists expressed the changing reactions of the voters of Kurdish origin. They reported incidences where they have physically been abused by HADEP (former BDP) supporters in the year of 2002. The declaration of the

main branch president shows how the activists' personal behavior is important in changing these reactions.

> "*You know their perception has changed over time. In the Election Day in 2002, they were first very reactive. Then, in the lunchtime their meal didn't come. I was responsible of arranging the meal of our activists I also made sandwiches for them, they thanked us. My relation is pretty good with the ones who were there this day*" (Electoral Campaigning activity, 04.06.2011, Veyselkarani).

The low reaction among voters of Kurdish origin is also supported by the electoral outcomes. Support for BDP in the 2011 general elections was 12,58% albeit the approximate percentage of residents of Kurdish origin comprise 35% of the neighborhood population.

In fact, the inability of the party to identify citizens of Kurdish origin in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet can be observed from the decision of the party not to publicly perform during the campaigning period, the great reaction of the citizens of Kurdish origin reported by the party activists and the low support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin in 2011 general elections. The activities of the party were of more programmatic nature. The party showed no physical appearance, except the tea talk of the woman branch organization in the contact office. The district decided to contact its supporter in the neighborhood through the activities of the municipality. The municipality realized only one saloon meeting where complaints of the residents were taken. Voters were contacted by the municipality through the visits they performed such as trips to Kefken, boat trips to the Bosphorus and historical peninsula of Sultan Ahmet. People were informed of these activities not through the activists but directly the municipality. Although district activists related such a decision to the low support for AKP in the neighborhood, such reasoning seems not to be valid, given the fact that the vote shares of the party in previous elections was slightly different from Örnektepe or other neighborhoods where the party carried activities (see table 8.5). In fact, the president of the main branch expressed the main reason of the party's decision not to publicly perform activities due to low reach. In one occasion he expresses, "*the district organization asked to visit the neighborhood, we told them that they could only visit 2 streets identified as safe. In the other streets they may have great reaction.*" (Interview conducted in 02.06.2011, Hacıahmet). Actually, the district was very careful not to pass, even for transportation purpose, from the down side of the neighborhood where

opposition groups comprise the majority. After the tea talk in the contact office located in the upper part of the neighborhood, the driver of the election bus was warned not to use one of the main roads to go to the district center since it passes from the down side of the neighborhood where contact office of BDP was located. Instead, they preferred to enter into the traffic jam and prolonged their trip for almost half an hour. The only activities at the neighborhood were the distribution of the brochures and gifts of the party. Even in these activities, the activists immediately retreated when violence occurred in other parts of the district.

8.4.2- Mobilization Activities of the Neighborhood Organizations

It is mostly through the functioning of the neighborhood organization that the party routinely contact voters and identify voters. It has been suggested that the time of incorporation of the activists and presence to activists of Kurdish origin in neighborhood organization is decisive in shaping the nature of activities and ability to identify swing voters since it would affect the fear of the activists and reaction of the voters of Kurdish origin.

Previous section has illustrated that the presence of old and Kurdish activists is low in the neighborhoods of İnönü and Hacıahmet. In both neighborhoods, the neighborhood activists have newly been recruited. In Inönü no activists of Kurdish origin have been recruited. Furthermore, although there are district level activists from Kurdish origin functioning in the neighborhood for a long period of time, cooperation of the neighborhood organization with them is very low. There are two activists of Kurdish origin recruited in the organization but their incorporation is too low to be effective. Furthermore, the district level activists have not functioned in the neighborhood and their cooperation with neighborhood activists is low.

The presence of old activists of both non-Kurdish and Kurdish origin is high in the neighborhoods of Veysel Karani and Örnektepe. In Veysel Karani, there are both formerly functioning activists, neighborhood level activists of Kurdish origin and cooperation with district level activists is high. A similar situation is also apparent in Örnektepe albeit there are no activists of Kurdish origin in the neighborhood

organization. Then in each of these neighborhoods, the neighborhood organization is expected to carry public and selective mobilization. In fact, Interviews conducted in the neighborhoods of Hacıahmet, İnönü, Veyselkarani and Örnektepe support this expectation. The neighborhood organization functions more discreetly, less able to identify Kurdish supporters in the first group of neighborhoods where as it functions publicly and more able to identify voters of Kurdish origin in the second group of neighborhoods.

In the districts of Hacıahmet and Inönü, most neighborhood activists highlighted that their main problem was their inability to enter in the households of citizens of Kurdish origin and form close relations. This was especially been reported to be difficult for male residents. The main branch president of Hacıahmet, expressed that they should have activists in all street but they are not very successful in achieving this because they had difficulty in identifying who supports the party among citizens of Kurdish origin (Interview conducted on 07.06.2011, Hacıahmet). This fact affects the functions and activities performed in the neighborhoods. The party mostly relies on the youth and women organizations since they can work more discreetly more easily contact people and enter in the households. Furthermore, female voters tend to be less violent decreasing the amount of reaction. In contrast with other neighborhoods where all of the branches work in coordination but separately, especially women and main organizations works together in these neighborhoods in order to be able to reach more people. Even in that situation, all activists mention that there are a great number of streets where they cannot enter as the formal representative of the party. The main branch president of Hacıahmet mentioned me, *"we go everywhere together, I don't let her alone"* (Interview conducted on 23.05.2011, Hacıahmet).

All the activists in Hacıahmet, İnönü I have interviewed mention that they prefer to work discreetly in their activities due to their fear of security. They only expose themselves in home talks where only a small number of trusted people that are defined as more moderate towards the party participate, but these instances are reported to be low. In a sense, the home talks only serve as a place to persuade identified potential supporters to enter the party. Since it is not publicly declared to every resident, party's ability to identify non-contacted potential supporters through this activity or change the perception of opposition voters is very low. During my meeting with BDP activists, it was very apparent that they did not know AKP representatives in the neighborhoods,

which is an indication of the party's inability to form strong channels of contact. Since they had difficulty in identifying party supporters, the main aim of the party is to socially and economically integrate Kurdish citizens via the neighborhood branches activities and services of the municipality in order to decrease perceived discrimination, polarization and contribute to the normalization of the relations. The main activities rely on social assistance based on identifying the citizens in need and providing aid to them. Provision of these activities is performed discreetly where activists mostly disguise their party identity. Although major activities are still based on provision of assistance or visits, the fact that activists do not perform these activities as the representative of the party and their inability to develop personal relations with the residents of Kurdish origin decreases the positive perception of the party among of the residents of Kurdish origin. This in turn negatively affects the success of the party efforts since people are not publicly informed on the activities of the party's activists, preventing the formation of loyalty and sympathy towards the party. Perhaps such a strategy can be effective in the long run only if neighborhood activists continue their activities

Activists try to use the channels of the municipality or participate in activities of other civil organizations to create possible channels of contact so as to get informed about the events among voters of Kurdish origin and identify their demands and political preferences. Furthermore, the activists try to detect the voters in need and communicate with them with the intermediary of the lists provided from the municipality that gives contacting information on the residents applying to municipality social aid and benefit from them. The party's strategy may be identified as a long run attempt to first create personal loyalty between the activists and the residents of Kurdish origin independently of their party identity via different kinds of assistances, increase the amount of the interaction and present themselves as the party's representative only after they have built enough trust and loyalty to identify the political preferences of the voters. It is clearly visible that the main problem of the party in these neighborhoods is the lack of permanent channels where the party can contact its supporters, get informed on their basic needs and provide them assistance, which would reinforce party identification. Discontinuity in the party organization and lack of motivation really act as an obstacle.

The mobilization activities of the neighborhood organization greatly change in Veysel Karani and Örnektepe. Although the activists perform similar activities, their

main difference lies in the ability of the activists to function quite openly since they are known by residents of Kurdish origin. They participate in all kind of activities as the representative of the party. This in turns reinforces the positive image of the party among citizens of Kurdish origin and increase identification of potential supporters among them.

Visits to residents for birth, funerals, and important events are routine activities where activists perform as the representative of the party. Furthermore, activists openly act as brokers between the citizens and higher authorities to resolve the formers' demands and problems. Provision of economic aid and control of the economic situation of the citizens that benefit from the aid programs of the municipality is also a major function. The fact that all these activities are performed publicly increases the reputation of the party. Within this realm, different from the other neighborhoods one can observe an increased desire to enter AKP's branches by the citizens of Kurdish origin.

The characteristics of the home talks carried by the neighborhood organization where the party's policies are introduced are also very different from Hacıahmet and İnönü. They are carried under any circumstances where as many people as possible are demanded to participate. Both potential supporters and opposition voters can get informed of these kinds of activities. As a result, potential supporters not identified by the party that participate in these activities can easily be identified and persuaded since after each home talk people are asked whether they want to be a member or not. On the other hand, it also serves as a place where opposition voters also get informed on the party's policies decreasing their negative perceptions. The youth branch president of the district reports such a situation,

> "*I demanded some of my friends supporting BDP to come to of our home talk, they came reluctantly. But after the hometalk, they were very impressed of the policy of the party. They told me, it is very surprising that there was no word of violence or discrimination towards us. We expected a harsher stand towards the Kurdish problem and Kurdish demands. This lowered their reaction towards us and the party*" (Electoral campaigning activity on 26.05.2011, Veyselkarani).

The presence of a permanent channel of contact between the activists and the citizens of Kurdish origin contribute to their incorporation to the network formed by the activists via their routine activities, consolidating the support for the party. The activists mentions that they routinely were informed by the events, problems taking place in

Kurdish families through their Kurdish and street activists. Furthermore, they could contact them in the daily activities, which mostly take the form of Koran reading for women branches and Coffee-house or hometown associations' gathering for the main and youth organizations. Recruitment of activists of Kurdish origin within AKP's local branch seems to further contribute to the normalization of the relations between different communities, decreasing the potential for conflict in the district. The non-conflictual relations among the activists that function in the neighborhood for a long period of time, permits the activists to publicly perform their activities increasing their reputation. During the electoral campaigning period home visits for providing social aid and home visits for condolence illness, aged citizens of Kurdish origin both close to AKP and BDP were routinely carried without any problem. Furthermore, the activists were very well aware of who the residents they contacted were and their political orientation. The major objective of the neighborhood organization towards citizens of Kurdish origin is to consolidate and increase the party's votes rather than contributing to social and economic integration as in the other two neighborhoods.

As it has been illustrated previously, the ability of the party to increase its network among citizens of Kurdish origin is based on the conjunction of two factors: the ability of the party to identify these voters through the activists and the intensity of the activities carried by the neighborhood organization that increases identification and compliance. The observation confirms that the time of incorporation of activists of Kurdish and non-Kurdish origin is effective in the ability of the neighborhood organization to perform publicly and selectively. When the neighborhood organization is unable to effectuate public and selective mobilization, the party cannot increase its clientelistic network among voters of Kurdish origin even if its activities are intense at the shortrun, as in the case of İnönü. On the other hand, although neighborhood activists had the required connections to identify new potential voters of Kurdish origin in the neighborhoods of Veysel Karani and Örnektepe, the low amount of activities in the neighborhood of Örnektepe prevented the party from increasing its network.

The participant observations conducted in these four neighborhoods also indicate important difference in the organizational characteristics of the two districts and the mobilization strategies they formulate. The low participation of the neighborhood organizations in the electoral campaigning activities was observed as a general characteristic in Beyoğlu, whereas quite the opposite was observed in Sancaktepe. This

270

difference influenced the format of the general campaigning activities and the strategy of the Municipality. The electoral campaigning activities in Beyoğlu were mostly carried through walks named by the activists as "love walks", where the members of the party distributes flowers to the residents. Furthermore, only the district activists participated in the activities. Since the number of district activists is low, the party conducted activities with the two deputies only in one neighborhood each day. In these activities, individual specific targeting was less, the party conducted visits to place where they had the opportunity to contact potential supporters for the party such as visiting the mosque in a praying hour, hometown associations or coffee-houses whose members support the party. The number of home talks conducted was rather less. In a large number of neighborhoods, no home talks have been conducted. The format of the electoral campaigning activities was quite different in Sancaktepe. First, both district and neighborhood activists participated in the activities. Since the number of the activists was high the party conducted activities in two neighborhoods with one candidate in each. On the other hand, albeit door-to-door visits were conducted, the main emphasis was given to personal visits and home talks realized in the house of a member.

The difference in the strength of the neighborhood organizations in the two districts seems also to have influenced the way through which individual types of goods; mostly social assistances are distributed by the municipality. In the district of Sancaktepe, application places are very centralized. Furthermore, food packages, daily meals are directly sent to the addresses of the residents. All of the process in very individualized where regular interaction between the personnel of the municipality and the residents is at the minimum. Observations confirm that the party and the municipality try to overcome the weakness of the neighborhood organizations through the municipality. Both the application and the distribution process of social assistance are quite different in Beyoğlu. In every step of the process, regular interaction between the municipal personnel and the residents at a very low level is induced. First, the municipality provides assistance services through the Neighborhood Halls (*Semt Konakları*) localted in most of the neighborhoods. Daily meal assistance is provided through these halls were people benefitting from them go at least once a day to the refectory. This creates an environment of regular interaction between the municipal personnel providing these services and the residents benefitting from the assistance. A

similar process is also at stake for the distribution of food packages. The residents attain the services in the stores situated in some of the neighborhood halls, where they can regularly assure by a credit card given to them. This also helps to personalize the relationship between the municipal personnel and the residents benefitting from help. Recall that there was a considerable number of party activists at the district level working in these neighborhood halls. Through these places of regular interaction these activists seem to develop clientelistic linkages with these residents by easily identify different types of voters, assuring voluntary compliance. The interviews with the party activists working in these halls confirm this situation. They all declared that they could easily enter the households of the residents since they were known by the residents, and they had personal relations with people regularly coming to the hall. In fact, albeit they did not comprise the main field of research of the study, the opening of neighborhood Halls in the neighborhoods of Çukur and Yenişehir seems to have an effect on the electoral outcomes in these neighborhoods. The opening of a Neighborhood Hall in the Hacıahmet during the 2011 general elections should not be coincidence.

Yet, since both presence of activists of Kurdish origin and the intensity of the neighborhood activities influences the effectiveness of the clientelistic network by identifying different types of voters and assure voluntary compliance, a major question is why the party is not capable to carry the same strategy in each of these neighborhoods. The next chapter provides an explanation to this question by defining the factors affecting the party's ability to increase representation through either incorporation of new activists or cooperation among old and new ones on the one hand and the amount of the neighborhood activities on the other.

CHAPTER 9

EXPLAINING DIVERGENCE IN THE STRENGTH OF THE PARTY ORGANIZATION AND INCORPORATION OF CO-ETHNICS

The previous chapter has illustrated the main differences in the neighborhoods of the district of Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe in terms of the intensity of the neighborhood activities, the amount of coordination between new and old activists and the time of incorporation of activists of Kurdish origin and its effect in increasing the effectiveness of the mobilization of Voters of Kurdish origin between 2009 and 2011. The aim of this chapter is examining the factors effective in explaining these differences.

Recall from Chapter 2 that the mobilization of swing voters through such kind of a clientelistic linkage necessitates a great motivation for both existing and new activists, members of different ethnic groups included, to actively work for the party. It has been suggested that the distribution of incentives should also successfully function for the mobilization of activists, albeit at a higher cost. Yet, the scarcity of resources creates a problem of exclusion from the incentives. Existing studies focus on the exogenous and endogenous factors that affect the motivation of activists. Within this respect, some studies argue that a party's decision to strengthen its organization and incorporate new activists is a function of the electoral competition it faces. Other studies argue that the amount of resources available to a party may prevent parties to fulfill such a function even it desires to do so. Although, exogenous factors certainly affect the decisions of the leaders, the study will mainly focus on the endogenous factors, namely the characteristic of the inner party organization in explaining different abilities of the party to motivate both existing and new activists of Kurdish and Non-Kurdish origin. In fact authors such as Panebianco (1988) and Bolleyer (2006), argue that the problem of exclusion can be solved by tying certain incentives to the posts available in the party.

273

For Bolleyer, stability through distribution of incentives can be attained through an effective mechanism of intra-party advance to distribute these incentives. Panebianco suggests that one function of the organizational hierarchies is the regulation of the distribution of incentives. Chandra (2005, 2010) argues that the intra-party rule of advancement is the primary factor in motivating both existing and new activists. Yet, in centralized party organization posts are mostly distributed by the higher-level party leaders, which the main criterion is rather loyalty than performance. This study suggests that change in the intra-party advancement rule is difficult in political parties due to the path dependent nature inherent in organizations that make change difficult once the party is established. Although rational calculations, exogenous or endogenous, may play major role during the initial formation of institutions; once they are designed institutions may act as an obstacle to the ability of the party to adapt to new exogenous changes. Yet, such a change may only be implemented through a critical juncture that resets the organizational order by changing the dominant coalition of the party and introduce a competitive intra-party advancement rule.

Recall that AKP motivates the voters and activists from Non-Kurdish and Kurdish origin through the formation of a partisan network based on the distribution of the municipal resources. The clientelistic network functions through the distribution of party posts, in which membership is the lowest, are tied to certain incentives. Three factors may explain different representational profiles and amount of motivation among activists. It may be the outcome of the electoral competition each district branch faces. Second, the control of the party on the municipal resources may be a factor explaining different motivation capabilities of the districts. Third, the internal structure of the party organization may an influential factor.

This section mainly relies on the last factor in explaining different representational profiles and amount of motivation of activists after 2009. Recall from Chapter 5 that AKP is very centralized in nature where posts are distributed mainly by the district president at the district level and the neighborhood president at the neighborhood level. Thus, promotion is based on the decisions of the leaders. The study suggests that the inability of Beyoğlu to motivate its activists after 2009 is a function of the characteristics of its organizational order in its founding phase. The successful motivation of most of the party activists in Sancaktepe derives from the critical juncture where the organizational order of the party was radically changed when the district was

established in 2008. Yet, the study also reveals that exogenous factors has prevented the party to change all of its organizational order, creating resistance among activists of the old order in the neighborhood of Inönü and preventing the party to increase its network among voters of Kurdish origin.

In accordance with these arguments, this section will first briefly evaluate the validity of exogenous factors that can constrain the behaviors of the leaders after 2009. These are the nature of the electoral competition and the amount of the control of the municipal resources. In the second section, it will demonstrate how different trajectories have differently affected the districts' capabilities to motivate their activists.

9.3- Explaining Different Strategies after 2009: Alternative Explanations

This section will briefly compare the two districts in terms of the exogenous factors that are suggested to be effective by the literature in a party's decision to motivate its activists to increase its clientelistic network. Although the nature of the electoral competition was controlled in the selection of the districts to be analyzed via the vote shares attained by the party, other competitive factors may also influence the strategies of the parties. Within this respect, the first section will compare the districts in terms of the party system indicators across elections. The second section will investigate the amount of other potential swing voters that the party can mobilize. The last section will evaluate the degree of the control of the municipal resources by each of the district branches.

9.1.1- Party System Indicators in the Two Districts

The literature suggests that effective number of parties and the amount of volatility are influential in explaining the nature of the electoral competition the party faces. Thus diverge in these indicators may affect the district decisions to incorporate

new voters into the network through their activists. Yet, the two districts have slightly diverging patterns when party system indicators are taken into consideration.

When the effective number of parties, which in each district are analyzed, one can observe that the districts face a similar competition in terms of the number of parties AKP competes. As illustrated in table 9.2 and graph 9.1 the number of effective parties is the highest for 2009 municipal elections for all the three districts. Sancaktepe has the lowest effective number of parties for 2007 general elections where as in 2011 approximately the same number of parties are effective in the system.

	Effective number of parties			
	2002	2007	2009	2011
Beyoğlu	4,48	3,40	4,13	2,89
Sancaktepe	3,80	2,93	3,65	2,73
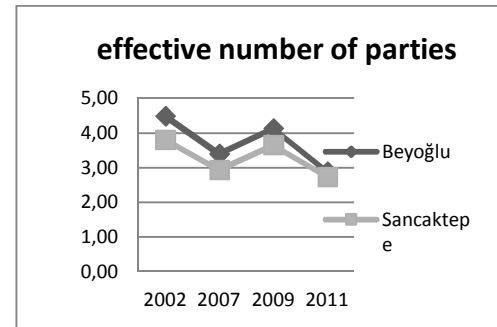
Table 9.2 Graph 9.1: Effective number of parties of the districts (2002-2011)

The districts are also similar in terms of the volatility rate they face (see table 9.3 and graph 9.2). Within this respect, the overall percentage of potential swing voters for each district is the lowest in Sancaktepe, albeit very close. In fact, the data indicates a very stable electoral system for three of the district, which makes competition very high if AKP envision to increase its votes. According to the party system indicators the district branches in the two districts are expected to have a similar strategy in their decision to mobilize more potential swing or core voters.

	Volatility Index		
	2002-2007	2007-2009	2009-2011
Beyoğlu	0,17	0,18	0,16
Sancaktepe	0,14	0,17	0,14
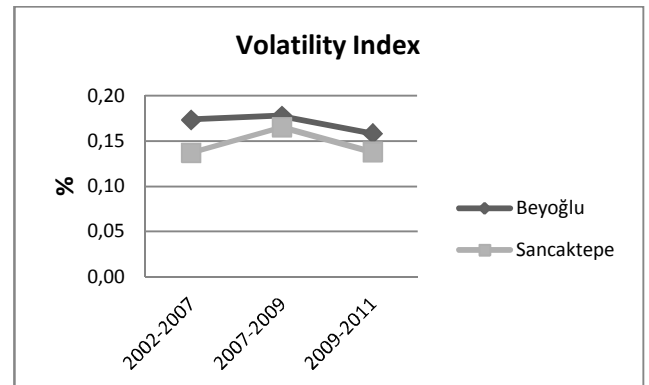
Table 9.3 Graph 9.2: Volatility index of the districts (2002-2011)

9.1.2- Composition of Potential Swing Voters in Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe

Although the party system indicators indicate similar competitive settings for the parties' district branches, the districts may diverge in terms of the characteristics of the competitors they face. In all the three districts potential swing voters are expected to be more targeted since AKP faces a relatively competitive environment when compared with other districts. Nevertheless, an alternative explanation for the decision of the party branches not to target voters of Kurdish origin may be the presence of a larger group of other potential swing voters. As Matz Dahlberg and Eva Johanssen (2002) argues that when specific identifiable groups are concerned political parties will target groups that are not only larger in quantity but also are composed of more swing voters. As a result, the presence of other easily targetable potential swing voters may also affect the party's decision to target a specific group. If the number of other potential swing voters compared to potential Kurdish swing voters is larger in Beyoğlu than in Sancaktepe, the party's district branch may decide not to mobilize the later. In order to assess the validity of such an assumption for the districts under investigation, a deeper analysis of the electoral strength of other ideologically potential swing voters is conducted in this section. The study will mainly focus on the electoral characteristics of 2007 and 2009 elections since they are expected to affect each district branch's strategy.

Representing the center-left, CHP is the second party in the two districts managing to increase its electoral support in each of the elections (for more detail see second row of table 9.1). Nevertheless, as AKP and CHP are ideologically opposed to each other, the supporters of CHP are not expected to constitute potential swing voters for AKP. It has been illustrated in the previous chapters that the electoral support of AKP came from the parties of the extreme and center right-namely FP, DYP, ANAP and GP. Furthermore, the 2011 general elections were characterized by AKP's attempt to target the nationalist MHP supporters. Then, some of the supporters of these parties may be defined as potential swing voters. The difference in the relative size of the supporters of the parties and the estimated percentage of their potential swing voters in each district may have affected AKP's branches decision not the mobilize voters of Kurdish origin in Beyoğlu.

277

When the electoral performance of these political parties across the districts are analyzed we see that MHP is the third party, considerably increasing its support from 2002 to 2007 general elections, slightly increasing its support in 2009 and retaining a large part of its 2007 support in 2011 general elections in both districts. The vote shares of MHP are higher in Beyoğlu when compared with Sancaktepe for both 2007 and 2009 general elections. The electoral support for the party in Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe are respectively, 8.31% and 6.15% for 2007 general elections, 9.60% and 8.30% for the 2009 municipal elections and 7.94% and 6.18 % for 2011 general elections.

The pro-Islamist party SP is the fifth following BDP in both Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe. An interesting observation is the sharp increase in the support for the party in 2009 municipal elections in all the districts, which is accompanied by an even sharper decrease in 2011 general elections. The party is stronger in Beyoğlu than Sancaktepe for 2007, 2009 and 2011 elections. The vote shares of the party in the districts are respectively 4.43%, 2.91 % for 2007 general elections; 12.58% and 9.20% for 2009 municipal elections, where as it decreases to 2.39% and 1.59% in 2011 general elections. The electoral support of the parties of the center right is very low for both of the districts for all of the elections.

Support for pro-Kurdish parties for all three elections has a different trend in Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe. Beginning with 2007 general election BDP has managed to increase its vote shares from 4.95% in 2007 to 6.70% in 2009 and 8.28% in 2011 general elections in Beyoğlu. The support for the party in Sancaktepe follow a different trend where an increase from 6,96% in 2007 to 9% in 2009 and decrease to 7.50% in 2011 elections is witnessed.

Studies measure swing voters for a specific election as the volatility of its vote shares between two previous elections. This strategy is also expected to be used by AKP since electoral outcomes are publicly known data. Nevertheless, such a measurement of swing voters can be valid only under the conditions where the party's ideological positioning is constant. As illustrated in the previous chapters, the position of AKP from 2007 to 2011 general elections is not constant on the Kurdish issue where the party moved towards a more nationalist tone approaching to MHP supporters and moving away from Kurdish voters. As a result, voters identified as core supporters in terms of volatility rates have the potential to switch their votes in 2011 general elections. The effect of such a position change on neither MHP, other right wing parties nor AKP

supporters among Kurdish voters is not predictable. This is why the study has used both the electoral volatility from 2007 to 2009 elections and the overall vote shares in 2009 elections to compare the magnitude of potential swing voters among the supporters of MHP, other right wing parties and pro-Kurdish parties. The amount of AKP supporters among voters of Kurdish origin has been found by subtracting the estimated percentage of citizens of Kurdish origin from the vote shares of the pro-Kurdish parties.

Percentages of potential swing voters in the districts		
support (%)	Beyoğlu	Sancaktepe
MHP 2009 (%)	9,60	8,30
MHP 2007 (%)	8,31	6,15
other right wing parties 2009 (%)	13,14	10,00
other right wing parties 2007 (%)	11,00	6,00
Support for pro-Kurdish parties 2009 (%)	6,70	9,00
Support for pro-Kurdish parties 2007 (%)	4,95	6,96
AKP support among. Kurds 2009(%)	8,50	6,86
AKP support among. Kurds 2007(%)	10,25	8,90
Change in MHP support (2009-2007)	1,29	2,15
Change in other. Right. parties support (2009-2007)	2,14	4,00
Change in support for pro-Kurdish parties (2009-2007)	1,75	2,04
est. Kurd Pop.2011 (%)	15,20	15,86

Table 9.4: Percentages of potential swing voters in the districts

Table 9.4 provides information on the vote shares of each party for 2007 and 2009 elections in the two the districts. When the vote shares of the two groups of voters are analyzed for each district for the two elections one can observe that they have considerably equal sizes in Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe. Support for MHP, right wing parties on the one hand and AKP supporters of Kurdish origin on the other are respectively 9.60 % , 13.14% and 8,5% in Beyoğlu for 2009. These shares are respectively, 8.60%, 10% and 6,86% in Sancaktepe. In both of the districts, the amount of AKP supporters among voters of Kurdish origin is lower than MHP and right wing parties for both 2009 and 2007. Furthermore, the shares of MHP and right wing parties are higher in Beyoğlu compared with Sancaktepe. A similar observation can be made for support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin for 2009 where it is higher in Beyoğlu than in Sancaktepe. Nevertheless when the electoral volatility is taken into consideration one can observe the stability of MHP votes on both regions, indicating the presence of a stabilized vote for the party. The volatility of the party's vote shares from 2007 to 2009 elections is only 1.19% and 2.15% in Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe

respectively. AKP decreased its vote shares by 1,75% in Beyoğlu and 2,04% in Sancaktepe. Although volatility in right-wing parties is high, they do not greatly diverge across the districts with 2.14 in Beyoğlu and 4% in Sancaktepe. The electoral results reveal that both Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe face a similar amount of other potential swing voters. With the high support for the party among citizens of Kurdish origin, the study expects a similar tendency in both districts to mobilize citizens of Kurdish origin.

9.1.3- Evaluating Different Access to Municipal Resources

Recall that some studies on the use of state resources for organizational or electoral purposes argue that access and control of state resources are an important requirement for its success. While access refers to the amount of resources a party can distribute, control refers to the party's ability to retreat or redistribute these resources in case of incompliance. Then, one possible explanation for different representations may be the difference in the amount of the resources at the disposal of the party or different ability to access and control these resources. Previous chapters have indicated the use of municipal resources for inducement by district level organizations. As indicated in the previous section Beyoğlu, Sancaktepe are similar in terms of their municipal budget shares per citizens. Nevertheless, other factors as well may affect the party's ability to distribute resources in return for support. First, access to resources may change across the years. Second control of the parties in the Municipal Council may be different. This section will analyze both districts in terms of these variables

Budget	Total Budget		Budget per resident	
	Beyoğlu	Sancaktepe	Beyoğlu	Sancaktepe
realized total budget 2009 (TL)	71.860.644	48.337.491	292,81	198,83
realized total budget 2010 (TL)	98.680.381	110.213.557	396,42	426,77
realized total budget 2011 (TL)	148.669.628	154.848.423	599,83	575,26
expected total budget 2012	137.000.000	117.889.655	552,75	437,96
Population 2009	245.420	243.113		
Population 2010	248.930	258.251		
Population 2011	247.852	269.180		
Population 2012				
total amount of goods (2011)	33.188.603	45.145.500	133,90	167,71
share of total goods (2011)				

Table 9.5: Allocation of the municipal budgets (2009-2012)
*carried under the collaboration with the State district office

If different municipal budget would have a direct effect on electoral support of Kurdish speaking voters' support for AKP, then one should expect, within each year and from 2009 to 2011 more resources available for Sancaktepe than Beyoğlu. Table 9.5 is a detailed illustration of the three districts municipal budgets.[48] The first three rows illustrate the changing amount of realized budget per residents for the years of 2009, 2010, 2011 and 2012. One major observation is the increase in the total budget per residents in all municipalities across the years. When the districts are compared, we can observe that municipal budget per resident is nearly the same within each year, where Sancaktepe is slightly over Beyoğlu in 2010 and the later is slightly over the former for the years of 2011 and 2012. The year of 2009 is an exception, where Sancaktepe with 198.83 compared to 292.81 is far below Beyoğlu. Such a circumstance should be related to the fact that in 2009 the municipality was newly established. It has been illustrated in Chapter 3 that both municipalities have control over the re-distribution of individual types of goods they have access. As a result, a double increase from 2009 to 2010 should not be so effective for Sancaktepe since in 2010 both municipalities had approximately the same amount of resources. Furthermore, given the fact that activists were mostly recruited in 2009, it should have been more difficult for the district branch in Sancaktepe to motivate both existing and new entering activists vis-à-vis Beyoğlu.

Resources at the disposal of AKP is not only based on the absolute size of municipal budget, but also to the former's ability to affect the main decision making body responsible of distributing these resources in the municipality. This ability is especially based on the amount of the coordination between the municipal organs and the party's district branches. Recall from Chapter 3 that the coordination is realized through the municipal council and appointment of AKP activists in posts controlling the distribution process. Table 9.6 illustrates the number of representatives of AKP in the Municipal Councils of two of the municipalities. AKP is the majority in the council which takes decision with the plurality of its members. Within this respect, there is a

---

[48] Necessary data on the budget of the municipalities has been extracted from the Action Plan and Performance Programs prepared for the Ministry of Internal Affairs and published in each Municipality's website. While the Action Plan is an annual evaluation of past carried activities, the Action Plan is the forecast for future envisioned activities of the municipality.

similar cooperation between the two institutions in terms of general policies to be realized in the district.

Municipal council representation (2009)		
	Beyoğlu	Sancaktepe
AKP	21	20
CHP	10	11
Total	31	31

Table 9.6: Municipal council representation

The study suggests that the amount of resources is of minor importance for an existing or new entering activist if he/she has no probability to have access to it. As it will be illustrated in the next section, the internal party organization regulates access. Thus, it is expected to be more effective in explaining different capacities of the districts to motivate their activists.

9.4-   The Party's Inner Organization and Motivation of the Activists

The previous section has illustrated that the districts of Beyoğlu and Sancatepe do not diverge in terms of the electoral competition they face and the amount of the resources at their disposal. Therefore, these variables are not influential in explaining different abilities of the party to motivate district and neighborhood activists for the two districts. The study suggests that the ability of the party to motivate its activists and distribute the recourses is the function of the inner organizational structure of the party (Pannebianco, 1988). Within this respect, the effective mobilization of both old and new activists to publicly work for the party and increase their support base is influenced by the nature of the mechanism that regulates the distribution of the party's posts that provide access to resources.

Chandra (2004) suggests that competitive intra-party advancement rules where posts are distributed by elections provide a suitable mechanism to attain these two objectives. Yet, centralized party organizations are not suitable to the formation of competitive intra-party advancements rule since posts are distributed by the leaders where loyalty is the main criterion. According to Chandra leaders in this type of

organization can change the organizational structure only if they are safe. On the other hand, Historical institutionalist approaches (Colier and Colier, 1991; Pierson, 1993, Thelen, 1999; Hall and Taylor, 1996; Katznelson & Berry, 2005) suggest that rational expectations play a major role in the foundation phase of political parties, but once they have been established organizations have lives on their own shaping the perceptions of the actors. A similar suggestion is given by Panebianco who asserts that the genetic phase of political parties have a great impact on the behavior in their following faces. According to him, change in the organizational structure and composition of the activists, that he calls "the dominant coalition" may only occur through an organizational crisis. This corresponds to what historical institutionalist approaches call as a critical juncture. The study suggests that such crisis may only be effective in changing the nature of the dominant coalition and promotion mechanism.

Recall from Chapter 5 that AKP is a centralized party organization where distribution of the posts is tied to the decision of the top leaders of the district. Furthermore, the posts of the leaders at district level are safe from the preferences of the lower level activists. The successful functioning necessitates a mechanism that motivates both neighborhood level and district level activists to actively work for the party to increase their support base. As placed on the higher level of the organizational structure, promotion to district posts is expected to be the main mechanism of motivation for the neighborhood activists. In fact, it is mostly the owner of these posts that are placed in municipal jobs. Then, the motivation of the new entering neighborhood activists and the desire of district activists to cooperate with each other should be a function of the amount of vertical circulation from the neighborhood to the district and the criterion through which this circulation is assured.

Difference in the abilities of the political parties to motivate activists should be related to the peculiar experiences the party branches have faced in each of the districts under investigation. This should be important in the sense that it will define first the composition of the activists and second, the mechanism through which appointment in strategic positions is made. Thus, representational profile in 2001 should be a function of the competition the party faces, the composition of its electoral support. Difference in the composition of the activists, the amount of their activities and the magnitude of their cooperation after 2009 in each district, should result from either the different experiences faced at the founding phase or a critical juncture in later phases. The study

283

argues the main difference in the motivation capacities between the two district branches is the critical juncture Sancaktepe faced in 2008 when the district was founded by the unification of three sub-districts each having a distinct party organization. This can be interpreted as an organizational crisis since the new leaders had to establish a new organization from the three distinct organizations of the sub-districts. The large circulation in the dominant coalition and the introduction of a competitive mechanism based on performance to attain these posts has been a great source of motivation for both existing and new activists. On the other hand, although Beyoğlu also faced a leadership change in 2008, this was accompanied by neither an organizational crisis nor an appointment outside of the dominant coalition. The inequality of representativeness, low vertical circulation provided an obstacle in motivating both existing and new entering activists after 2009.

Yet the ability of the district of Sancaktepe to change the organizational order in all of the neighborhoods seems not to be identical. The amount of supporters for the party and the strength of the neighborhood organization before 2009 seem to have affected the number of trained activists required for the re-organization. The different capacity of the party to motivate the activists in the Neighborhood of Veysel Karani and İnönü in the district of Sancaktepe should be understood in this context.

Within this respect, the first section is an analysis of the exogenous factors the party's district branches face at the founding phase and their effect on the composition of the activists and mechanism of promotion. This will help to understand the general logic in the presence of representational differences at both district and neighborhood level and the nature of the promotion mechanism. On the other hand, the second section will analyze how the difference in the composition of the dominant group and promoting mechanism after the leadership change, differently affected the motivation of the activists in each district and neighborhoods.

9.2.1- The Foundation Period of the Party (2001-2006)

Recall from Chapter 2 that according to Panebianco the main factors affecting the organizational size and the composition of the leaders, as he calls "dominant coalition",

is a function of the objective of the party, its ideology, support base and external environment it faces. It has earlier been suggested that arising from FP's ashes; ideologically AKP had a more moderate tone than the former[49]. The new leaders of the party highlighted in every occasion that they had the objective to gain the necessary majority to run the country as a new untried central-right party cleaned of the corruption of existing Turkish parties. In fact, the abbreviation of the party insistently used by the leader "*AK Parti*" meaning "white party" was and is still the symbol of this objective. During the field research, when I used the abbreviation "AKP" for the party, nearly all administrators interviewed, intentionally reminded me that their name was "*Ak Parti*". In accordance with this objective, the electoral target of the party was not only the former supporters of FP but also other rightist parties in the Turkish political scene. The party had an advantage in persuading people to joint its ranks as a new, yet, untried party that promised change in Turkish politics. This situation is expected to be a driving force in the decisions of activists to join the party's ranks in this period. In fact, nearly all the activists that were asked why they joined the party answered first because they were asked to and second they accepted the offer because they believed the party would change something in the Turkish political scene and they wanted to be a part of it. The Charisma of the leader of the party Recep Tayip Erdoğan seems to be very effective in building this image. The party incorporated many activists from FP at different levels the organizational hierarchy. The strategy of the party in each of the districts and neighborhoods should be evaluated in relation with its objective, the competition it faces, the composition of its support base and the organization heritage of FP.

Beyoğlu district branch and neighborhood organizations were first established in 2001 during the founding phase of AKP. The electoral competition the party faced, socio-demographic, geographical composition of its support and the organizational strength of FP were factors affecting composition of the activists at district and neighborhood level during its founding phase. Strong electoral support for FP in the district, which obtained 24.62% of the votes in the 1999 general elections, meant a comparative advantage for the party in its competition with its opponents ANAP and CHP who were greatly behind the party in electoral terms gaining approximately 13% and 11% of the votes respectively (see table 7.1). In parallel with the moderate image it

---

[49] The fundamentalist position of FP on major issues was one of the main causes of the decision of the founders of AKP to establish a new party in 2001 after FP has been closed by the constitutional court.

wanted to draw the party also targeted a considerable number of voters having center right tendencies. On the other hand, neither the electoral support nor the organizational encapsulation of FP was uniform in all of the neighborhoods. As it can be seen from table 8.1 neighborhoods in the second electoral region such as Kaptanpaşa, Piyalepaşa, Sütlüce, Halıcıoğlu, Örnektepe, which are located it the same geographical region was the traditional electoral base of the party according to 1999 general elections. The presence of former FP neighborhood activists in these neighborhoods confirms that this electoral support was accompanied with the organizational encapsulation of the party. Furthermore, the supporters of other right wing parties were also powerful in these neighborhoods. Given the relative advantage of the party in terms of votes, the party mostly targeted these neighborhoods and did not try to enlarge its organizational encapsulation to other ones. The party was able not only to convince FP supporters but also activists from other right-wing parties to join the party. Recall that the positive image of the party was a driving force in motivating participations. The participation of activists in the neighborhood of Örnektepe coincides to this case.

The residents of these neighborhoods were mostly from the Black sea region, they filled important positions in the party. The exception was Örnektepe, where FP was organizationally strong but facing great competition. FP's vote shares in 1999 general elections were nearly 21%, a lower share when compared with Kaptanpaşa, Piyalepaşa, Sütlüce, Halıcıoğlu where the party received respectively 31.67%, 28.99, 39.67% and 27.51% in the same period. Furthermore, the vote shares of other right- wing parties, such as ANAP, DYP, were only 7.01%, also very low, when compared with other neighborhoods, which shares were ranging between 14% and 23%. The number of Kurdish citizens supporting FP and other right-wing parties were also large in the neighborhood. Combined with the considerably high electoral competition the party faced, the voters of Kurdish origin constituting an important population of the neighborhoods, were incorporated in neighborhood organization of FP. After its foundation, they transferred to AKP.

As a result of the party's advantage in the electoral competition, the concentration of the targeted potential swing and core supporters in the neighborhoods were FP was organizationally strong, the district did not concentrate its mobilizing efforts to other neighborhoods where FP was traditionally weak, although there were also considerable amount of right-wing supporters. The discourse of the activists indicates no attempts of

organizational encapsulation in neighborhoods of the first and third electoral regions, including the neighborhood of Hacıahmet where vote shares for 1999 general elections were 16% for FP and 18% for right-wing parties. The party only assured their representation in the district by appointing neighborhood coordinators. It was through this mechanism that the two activists from Hacıahmet entered the organization. The neighborhood coordinators informed me that she was made responsible to form the neighborhood organization in Çukur, Hacıahmet, Yenişehir etc forming the Dolapdere region, a very difficult task to attain by only one activist. Given the fact that most of the residents of Kurdish origin resided in these neighborhoods, they were excluded from the organizational ranks of the party.

In the initial stage, these activists came to power without elections since they were the founding members of the party. The foundation period provided no clue on the intra-party advancement , except the important role of the district president in the selection process. The first sign on the advancement rule began to be shaped with the two regular congresses of 2003 and 2006. In theses congresses, some neighborhood activists promoted to the district organization. It was in this period that some neighborhood activists from Kaptanpaşa, Örnektepe, Piyalepaşa, Sütlüce were incorporated in the district. These activists were from the neighborhood where the party has a strong electoral base and a successfully functioning neighborhood organization. In reality most of the real circulation at the district level was either horizontal, or through the incorporation of activists outside the party. As it will be illustrated, the time and the mechanism through which the district activists have been incorporated shows that this was a circulation within the district posts among the district members themselves that were directly incorporated into the organization without neighborhood experiences. This congress marked the end of the initial stage of the party organization and its consolidation. These horizontal circulation and incorporation of some of the district activists outside the party in the congresses made a sign of the low probability for neighborhood activists to promote in higher positions where they could acquire the desired incentives. The separation of neighborhoods activists from the party by 2007, in Örnektepe as well as other neighborhoods such a Kaptanpaşa, Piyalepaşa coincide to the period. On the other hand, for district level activists it meant the low probability to lose their position regardless of their performance, as in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet. This decreased the motivation of both districts activists and neighborhood presidents to

287

increase the organizational encapsulation of the neighborhood organizations. Nevertheless, such a situation seemed not create any problem for the party given the increasing trend of its electoral support in 2007, mostly due to its national economic performance (Başlevent, Kırmanoğu & Şenatalar, 2005; Çarkoğlu, 2008, 2012b).

The electoral competition, the characteristics of the support base of the party and FP's organizational encapsulation have also affected the formation of the party in the two sub-districts (*Belde*) that later composed Sancaktepe. Nevertheless, the electoral competition the party faced affected the strategy of the party differently in the two sub-districts.[50]

In its founding phase, the sub-district of Sarıgazi where the party faced a great competition with CHP, the strategy of the party diverged. The general support for FP was 23.67% in 1999 general elections whereas for CHP it was 28,93% Facing this great competition, the party targeted all the right-wing votes and incorporated in its ranks these citizens. The formation of the neighborhood organizations was taken seriously in all the neighborhoods, so as to increase the electoral support for the party. Not only former FP activists but also new ones were incorporated among the ranks of the party. The citizens from the Black Sea region and from Kurdish origin constituted an important part of the communities that supported right-wing parties. Although there is no publicly available data on the dispersion of the voters targeted by the party across neighborhoods, electoral results from 2007 and 2009 elections indicates that it was equally distributed in all the neighborhoods. As a result, the party spent the same efforts to increase its organizational encapsulation for all the neighborhoods. As a result, voters of Kurdish origin who resided in all the neighborhoods were incorporated among the dominant group of the party in its founding phase. As in the case of Beyoğlu, activists joining the party in this period declare that they accepted the invitations of the founding leaders of the party when they were asked because they believed the party would be able to form the government on its own and change the nature of the Turkish politics. It was in this period that activists of Kurdish origin in the sub-district of Sarıgazi and neighborhood of İnönü entered the neighborhood organizations of the party.

---

[50] In Turkey, sub-districts administratively function like the districts. Each sub-district (*Belde*) has their own municipalities. As a result, taking the plurality of the votes in a sub-district is vital for political parties to have control over the municipality. Given the fact that of Sarıgazi and Samandıra were sub-districts, the nature of the electoral competition and the strategies formulated by AKP should be evaluated independently from each other.

In the sub-district of Samandıra, which the neighborhood of Veysel Karani is located, the nature of the electoral competition in the founding phase of the party shaped the composition of the activists very differently. In contrast to the sub-district of Sarıgazi FP had a high electoral support in 1999 general elections where it obtained 27.46 % of the votes, whereas the vote shares of its closest competitor CHP were only 14.26%. Although there is no available neighborhood data for this period, the vote shares of the party in 2007 and 2009 general elections indicate the equal distribution of support for the party among the neighborhoods. We can understand from the experiences of the present activists in these neighborhoods that FP was organizationally strong in nearly all neighborhoods. Although a considerable amount of the citizens of Kurdish origin were among these supporters, the high and equally distributed support among the non-Kurdish residents from Black Sea and Central Anatolian regions in all the neighborhoods and the low electoral competition the party faced has resulted in their exclusion from the party's ranks. The neighborhoods of Veysel Karani and Akpınar where large numbers of Kurdish residents reside were not an exception.

Unfortunately, there is no available data on the composition of the district organs in that period for neither of the sub-districts. Nevertheless, the career path of present district activists signals that between 2003 and 2006 Party Congresses, the party witnessed a vertical circulation where activists from the neighborhood organizations were promoted to the district. The activists in the neighborhood of İnönü who were still active in the party during the 2011 general elections promoted to the sub-district in this period. Nevertheless, the condition of activists in the neighborhood of Veysel Karani was different. Probably due to the low socio-economic and educational profile of the neighborhoods vis-à-vis the other ones in the sub-district; only one woman branch activist has been incorporated into the district, others remained in the neighborhood organization. Those who remain in the neighborhood organization left the party by 2007. It coincides to the period of departure of old activists that reentered the party in 2009 in the neighborhood. The gaining electoral support of the party in 2007 elections in both of the sub-district which were 39,29% for Sarıgazi and 60,82 % for Samandıra did not require the district organization to strengthen its neighborhood organizations and increase its electoral base. Unfortunately, there is no available data on the rule of advancement in the party or on its efforts to strengthen its neighborhood branches in that period. Yet, the perception of old activists re-joining the party in 2009 indicates

loosening focus on the neighborhood organizations and the presence of a promotion mechanism through personal relations and loyalty. A conversation between two woman branch activists, one old the other new, on the former district activists from the neighborhood is a good example for such a situation. "*She promoted to the district through her personal relations with the wife of the sub-district president. They were always planning all activities together. They hanged together. They did not inform us. Then, in 2006, she passed to the district. When my husband died, they did not even come to visit me, although I was working with them. Lots of people in the neighborhood were offended by their attitudes and quit the party in that period*" (Electoral Campaigning activity on 21.05.2011, Veysel Karani). A similar perception was also present in the neighborhood president of Inönü. "*The sub-district administration asked me to take a break in 2007 since I had problems with some of the district members. You know I am a person who tells what is not right and this is not appreciated by higher ranks when you criticize them. I said some words they didn't like and they asked be to take a break*", (Electoral Campaigning activity on 12.05.2011, Inönü). The promotion of the woman branch neighborhood coordinator of Inönü to the district also reveals the importance of personal relations. When I asked her how she entered the party she answered, "*My father worked for years in RP, then FP and AKP. After I graduated from school, I began to work in the municipality through his connection, than I joined the party and got elected to the district administration*" (Electoral Campaigning activity on 21.05.2011, Inönü). Although the neighborhood organizations still functioned, it was not until 2008 that the competitive rule of advancement in the party was clearly set by the leaders.

9.2.1- The Critical Junctures and the Re-structuring of the Organizations after 2009

The previous section has tried to illustrate the factors affecting the organizational structuring of the party in its founding phase in each of the districts and neighborhoods under selection. This section builds upon illustrating how the leadership change differently affected the mechanism of promotion signaled by the leaders of the party to both districts and neighborhood activists in each district after the District Congresses of

2009. The exogenous factors both district branches faced after 2009 were not different. Both witnessed the same electoral pressure, had similar access to municipal resources and objective mechanisms to evaluate performance. Furthermore, both district experienced a leadership changed before the congress of 2009. However, their ability to motivate both district and neighborhood activists were different. The study suggests that this difference is a function of the nature of the leadership change before the 2009 congress and the effect of this change on the composition of the district organs, amount of circulation among the district posts and the criteria shaping this circulation.

Unfortunately, there is no available data on the mechanism of promotion for neither of the districts except the dominance of the district leaders in the decision process. Yet, the time of entry of the district activists, the procedure through which they have entered and their representational profiles in terms of both the neighborhoods and demographic characteristics provide important tools in understanding the rules of intra-party advancement that motivate the activists. The main logic of such argument builds upon the fact both district and neighborhood activists will calculate their probability to attain a higher post or lose the existing one based on past activities of the party, which is successfully revealed by these characteristics of the district organs. Furthermore, the experience the leaders have faced during their own recruitment process is expected to shape how they evaluate the mechanism of appointment in the important posts since these norms will be internalized.

After 2009, in both districts, party organs enter a phase of organizational restructuring. The correspondence of such a strategy after the 2009 municipal elections should not be a coincidence. The results of the elections where AKP decreased it votes from 46.58% in 2007 general elections to 38.8 % in 2009 general council elections was a sign that the party could lose ground vis-à-vis SP and BDP in different provinces of Turkey (Çarkoğlu 2009b) . The electoral pressure on the party to increase its votes in the 2011 general elections above its previous support should also have an effect on such a restructuring. Both Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe entered at a phase of strengthening their neighborhood organizations, which was affected by the historical process that the districts had faced since their foundation period. The characteristics of the restructuring in the districts in the 2009 Congress gave tremendously different messages to both district and neighborhood activists.

In 2009, the province district appointed the vice president responsible of the organization to the head of the party in Beyoğlu, when its actual president promoted to the provincial organization. Having gained its experience in the same district organization, the president did not change the members of the organizational structure of the district branches in 2009. In a sense, leadership change was not accompanied by an organizational crisis that would result in the re-structuring of the organizational order. This continuity in Beyoğlu, despite of a presidency change, acted as an obstacle to motivate existing and new activists in three ways. The first one concerns the difference in the representational profile of the organizations. The second one concerns the low number of district activists coming from the neighborhood organizations. The last one concern the low probability of vertical circulation the party offered since in its initial phase. These characteristics prevented the leaders and lower rank activists to create the necessary mechanisms for increasing the motivation in the party.

There was a huge representation problem in Beyoğlu both in terms of hometown origin and neighborhood representation. The organization generally consisted of activists whose hometown origin was the Black Sea region or Central Anatolia of Turkey where limited number of Kurdish residents reside. As an example, among them activists from Giresun were very dominant in the party. Both the main branch district president and vice president responsible of the organization were from this province. Activists whose hometown origins were Erzincan, Erzurum had also important posts. Similar patterns could also be observed within the municipal organs. Representing approximately 15% of the residents of the district, the citizens of Kurdish origin were under-represented. During the field research, I have been able to meet only 4 activists coming from Kurdish origin. One of them working in the woman executive branch was an early immigrant whose hometown origin is Kars. The other activist was the main branch vice president from Mardin. Furthermore, there were two municipal council members whose hometown origins were Bingöl and Siirt. Recall that these activists were incorporated into the party in its founding phase. These numbers reveal the over representation of the district organs in favor of citizens of the Black Sea region who resides in the neighborhoods where the party is electorally strong. The district president was aware of the underrepresentation problem and expressed that they try to incorporate citizens of Kurdish origin among their organization but they fail to do (Interview conducted on 09.12.2010, Beyoğlu).

292

When the distribution of the district activists according to the population shares of the neighborhoods they reside is analyzed the over-representation of the neighborhoods where the party was electorally strong and have middle socioeconomic indicator can be observed. The neighborhoods with high and low socioeconomic indicators where the party was both organizationally and electorally weak were nearly unrepresented within the party's district branches. Although nearly all neighborhoods had one representative as their coordinators in each branch, neighborhoods such as Kaptanpaşa, Piyale Paşa, Sütlüce, Halıcıoğlu Örnektepe were over represented in both the district and municipal organs when compared with their population shares. Unfortunately, there is no available data to make a precise comparison for both main and woman branches. Nevertheless, when the neighborhood of Hacıahmet and Örnektepe are compared one can observe a great difference in terms of the representation of these neighborhoods in both the main and women branches. Although the number of eligible voter of Örnektepe is far below Hacıahmet with 8.173 to 10.305 for 2011 general elections, the former is largely represented in all the effective district organs. I have been able to identify only one activist in each of the main and women branch residing in the neighborhood of Hacıahmet and no municipal council member. The number of activists identified as residing in Örnektepe is six among them who two are members of the municipal council. The actual number of activists residing in Hacıahmet is not expected to be more, since the both main and woman branch presidents cited only these two activists when they were affirming the representation of the neighborhood in the district organs. On the other hand, Örnektepe may have other activists that were not identified during the field research. Nevertheless, even these numbers is sufficient to expose the magnitude of the difference in the representation of the two neighborhoods in the district organs. This had a negative effect on the perception of new activists having key posts in the neighborhood organization outside the party's traditional geographical support base on their probability to advance in the party and access to other kinds of municipal resources to motivate lower level activists.

When the time of incorporation of the members of district organ is analyzed, one can observe that they mostly joined the party in 2001 during its foundation period. Among the interviewed members of the executive members of the main and woman branch, all except one joined the party in 2001. Although there is systematic data for the profile all of the activists, information extracted from the CVS of the executive and

administrative committees of the main branch gives an idea on the composition of activists in terms of date of entry. Among 24 identified activists from the administrative committee of the main branch, 20 entered the party in 2001, 2 in 2003 and 2 in 2007.

Even more important was the mechanism through which these members were recruited. Most of these activists had no neighborhood experiences and were directly recruited in the district organs. During the field research only three activists promoting to the district organ via the neighborhood organization was identified. One was the president of the Center for the Coordination of the elections who worked for a short period of time at the neighborhood organization and was appointed to a district post in 2003. The other two, were the activists from the neighborhood of Örnektepe who were appointed to the district before 2006.CVs confirm this tendency where only 5 from the 24 activists had neighborhood experience. Furthermore, these experiences were only for 1 or 2 years since they mostly attained their post in the congress of 2003.

Most of these activists attained their post through their personal network and connections. This was especially the case for the leader controlling the posts responsible of organizing the party and deciding the distribution of resource. Both the main and woman branch presidents and vice presidents responsible for the organization, municipal affairs and social affairs entered the party in 2001 directly from the district branch through their personal connections. There should have been probably more vertical circulation in the auxiliary board but unfortunately, there is no available data. Nevertheless, given the fact that this organ has no efficiency on the decision making process, its composition is probably not so effective in shaping activists perceptions.

This composition provides important information not only on the probability of circulation in the organization and motivation of both district and neighborhood activists, but also the perception of the leaders on the appropriate promotion mechanism. For neighborhood activists this meant low probability of advancement while for district activists it meant low probability of losing the post, greatly decreasing both activists' motivation to work actively for the party. Furthermore, the experience the leaders faced also seems to have shaped their perceptions on the appropriate promotion mechanism. No neighborhood experience, the role of the personal networks in promotion was internalized as the only procedure of advancement. In fact, the incorporation criteria cited by the activists to attain position in the party was mostly loyalty, where new entrance was met with distrust. As a result, their attempt to motivate

new entering activists who evaluated the party according to its existing structure was not convincing.

In the wake of 2008, the leadership change in Sancaktepe was accompanied by a similar change in the organizational structure of the district. The major cause was the organizational crisis the party faced while it was adjusting its organizational structure in accordance to the new established district. Recall that Sancaktepe is a newly formed district with the unification of three sub-districts Sarıgazi, Samandıra, Yenidoğan. Functioning as independent municipalities, the party had independent central decision-making organs in each of these sub-districts. The unification meant the restructuring of one central organ from the three previous ones. The party faced an over-population of district members that it had to reduce by two thirds. This meant a huge restructuring in the party which gave the opportunity to change the dominant coalition and the rules of intraparty advancement for the new leaders that wanted to strengthen their control over the party. The experiences of the new appointed leaders seem to be an important factor in shaping this process. Appointed by the province in 2008 to form the new organization, the main branch president was the former vice president in the district of Ümraniye where former RP and actual AKP had a very strong electoral base and was organizationally strong. Within this respect, the president had former experience on organizational structuring. He selected a woman branch president having the same experiences. The independency of these presidents from the political competition within the district was an important factor in putting primacy to the interest of the party as whole over the personal interest of the activists. In fact, after he has been appointed, the president of Sancaktepe began an important restructuring in the party where district activists were selected not only from former administrative branches of the three sub-districts, but also from neighborhood organizations and outside the party. The representational criteria in terms of hometown origin, neighborhood was taken into consideration in all the organizational level. All interviewed district activists highlighted how much they were careful to incorporate in the party's organs residents with different origins and neighborhoods. It was in this period that activists from the Samandıra region rose to the district organs from the neighborhood organizations, including Kurdish ones and new ones outside the party were recruited. The district presidents of Sancaktepe argued that in their district, the main criterion of selection was the representation of each neighborhood and hometown origin according to their mathematical percentages to

the total population (Interview conducted on 12.03 2011, Sancaktepe). A similar course of re-structuring was also apparent in the neighborhood organizations where old ones have been replaced or were promoted and new activists from different streets have been incorporated. It was through this restructuring that the new members of neighborhood organizations in İnönü and Veysel Karani joined the party. The purposeful change in the district and neighborhood organizations of the party to attain equal representation was also asserted by the woman branch district president. During our interview she reported,

> "*I am normally responsible in the province, but our president asked me to stay here to restructure the woman branch of the district and neighborhood organizations. As you know, the district has been established by the unification of three sub-districts. Every sub-district wants to recruit its own activist and dominate the organization. A similar course can also be observed in the neighborhood organizations. They also want to bring their own supporters. It is a hard choice that we do here to assure representation*" (Interview conducted on 25.04.2011, Sancaktepe).

Within this respect, members of the main branch executive committee responsible to implement the party's strategies were selected according to their area of expertise mostly outside the former activists. This provided the executive branch neutrality in policy implementation towards different groups in the party. The Vice Presidencies of Municipal Affairs and Social Affairs were exceptions since these posts required former political experiences and connections. All remaining posts were distributed according to the composition of the district.

Neighborhood experience was also taken into consideration. A great change in the composition of the activists and a large amount of vertical circulation among the posts during the re-organization period was an important factor affecting the perceptions of both existing and new activists from different neighborhoods and demographic background. As a result, the new organizational order provided to most of the activists a great motivation force to actively work for the party. Furthermore, increasing the electoral base by the recruitment of new activists was set as the main objective by the party leaders. This strategy was personally implemented by these leaders who asked activists from different levels to identify new potential participants from different demographic backgrounds. Most of the new entering activists state that they joined the organization on the personal demand of the district president who assured them that their hardworking would not be left without reward.

When compared with Beyoğlu, the district organs responsible of the mobilization strategy better represented the composition of the district as a whole in 2009. The activists in the district organization were from different regions of Turkey such as Black Sea, Central and Eastern Anatolia. Among these activists citizens of Kurdish origin that compose nearly 15% of the population constituted an important portion, very well represented in all the important decision organs including the municipality. This is especially valid for the main branch decision organs. Among the district organs, the district president, the vice president responsible for the organization and the main executive board member responsible of social affairs were among activists of Kurdish origin. 6 members in the district administrative committee and 7 members in the auxiliary board were identified as being from the hometown origin of Kars, Van, Bingöl, Ağrı. The president and vice president of Kurdish origin are from Malatya and Erzincan.

Recall that demographic representation was less important among females since they more easily develop personal channels of communications with their counterparts. As a result, the demographic criterion seems not to be strictly applied in the woman branch, although two activists of Kurdish origin were identified. The citizens of Kurdish origin were also represented in the municipal organs. Six members of Kurdish origin whom two of them are municipal vice presidents are identified to be from the provinces of Tunceli, Van and Binböl. According to the district president, representation could have been even higher but the low level of education among the residents worked as an important obstacle. This seems to be true especially for the citizens of Kurdish origin residing in the district given the fact that both the president and vice president who are from Kurdish origin are not residents of the district. None of the less, this situation can be observed for all residents given the low educational level of the district as a whole.

In all the branches, leaders have tried to attain equal neighborhood representation. Although, the district organs successfully represented the three sub-districts (*belde*) of Sarıgazi, Samandıra and Yenidoğan, neighborhood representation was not attained. Among fifty-nine of the main branch activists (administrative and auxiliary members), the distribution of the identified twenty-seven member was, nine from Samandıra, nine from Sarıgazi, and five from Yenidoğan. Given the fact that each sub-district's number of eligible vote are respectively 63.254, 67.067 and 38.365 for 2011 general elections, this seems to reflect a pretty equal representation. A similar situation is also visible

within the organs of the woman branch. Among nineteen identified members of the administrative board, eight are from Samandıra, nine are from Sarıgazi and two are from Yenidoğan. Among the eight identified out of nineteen members of the municipal council, three are from Sarıgazi, three from Yenidoğan and two from Samandıra. On the other hand, the inequality in the representation of Veysel Karani and İnönü confirms that neighborhood level representation could not be attained. İnönü is represented with two members in each of the main and woman district organs, while Veyselkarani is represented only in the administrative board of the woman branch with two activists. Inequality of representation can also be observed in the municipal council. While there is one member of the municipal council residing in İnönü, no member resides in Veyselkarani. Although, neighborhood representation among the organs slightly diverged, still the district revealed a certain degree of representation in terms of both hometown origin and neighborhoods regardless of divergence in the electoral strength of the party across the neighborhood. Furthermore, as it will be reveal in detail, the inequality in representation was not accompanied by a decrease of motivation since high vertical circulation in the posts and change in the dominant coalition signed a high probability of promotion on the criterion of performance in the next Regular Congress.

These numbers illustrate a clear difference in terms of the representation of different groups composing the electoral machine of the party in both of the districts. Nevertheless, what seems even more important in understanding the difference of Sancaktepe from Beyoğlu was the high amount of vertical circulation that took place within the district organs. Most of the activists incorporated in the organization, except the main branch executive committee, were composed of activists formerly promoting from the neighborhood organization. In addition, there were also considerable numbers of activists appointed outside of the party organization. This signaled all the neighborhood activists, including the ones from under-represented neighborhoods that they had a high probability to promote.

The restructuring of the party gave a message to the existing and newly entering activists. The promotion of considerable number of neighborhood presidents to the district branches, the attempts to equally represent neighborhoods and hometown origin in district and neighborhood organs signaled the high probability of advancement for existent and new activists. In fact it acted as an important motivation force for them. These changes gave two different messages to the activists. For the new entering ones

and neighborhood activists it meant that every one of them, regardless of their hometown origin or neighborhood, could promote to the organization if they have a good performance. It signaled district level activists that their post was not safe and the ones resisting the new organizational order could easily lose their post. This motivated both existing and new entering activists to work harder for the party. The hard work of neighborhood coordinators and presidents and their attempt to incorporate new activists at neighborhood level should be understood within this respect. The neighborhood of Veysel Karani is a good example on the influence of the availability of the necessary number of trained activists to form a new order and the success of the new organized system in motivating the activists even under low level of representation at the district level. Most of the influential neighborhood and districts activist district activists gained their position with the formation of the new system. Electoral support for the party was high; the neighborhood organization was active in the neighborhood before the restructuring of the party. As a result, the party possessed a considerable number of trained activists supporting the new administration. The neighborhood coordinators who were previously active in the party gained their position in the district with the new order. As it has been previously highlighted as huge organizational restructure was realized in the neighborhood organization where old activists opposing to the previous system and new recruited activists fulfilled the neighborhood posts. Within this respect, they mostly were supporters of this new order. Albeit, the women branch neighborhood president was an exception, she was mostly bypassed by the neighborhood coordinator. Although the neighborhood was less represented in the district, the high possibility of promotion through performance seems to have motivated the activists to increase their support base.

Yet, the ability of the party to restructure the whole organizational order was not possible in some neighborhoods. The unavailability of the required trained activists due to the electoral support for the party and weakness of the neighborhood organization before the restructuring seem to influence this failure. The inability of the party to motivate all the activists in the neighborhood of İnönü where support for the party is traditionally low and neighborhood organizations were weak should be understood within this framework. Recall that the neighborhood coordinators in the district were resisting cooperation, the party was able to find a women branch neighborhood coordinator only in 2010. The party was able to find the main branch neighborhood

coordinator from an old activist opposing the previous administration. Yet it has difficulty in finding new district coordinators that promote to their position on the basis of performance. As a result, the party had to continue with previous district activists from the old order, whom most are of Kurdish origin, this created resistance in cooperating with low level activists of the new order that were perceived as a threat. In fact, the competition between them could easily be observed during the electoral campaign. In fact, as it will be revealed, these resistances translated to a circulation in lots of posts the 2012 general congress.

The discourse of the activists signals the change in their perceptions after restructuring. An example is the discourse of the previously cited woman branch activist rejoining the organization in 2009 on the district member who she criticized; "*When the new president came, she was excluded from the district, personal relations is not always affective when you are not working*" (Electoral Campaigning activity on 21.05.2011, Veysel Karani). The discourse of the woman branch president of İnönü with other activists also reveals their perceptions on the high probability of advancement. After the president complained that she was very tired, another member warned her, "*Be a little patient, you have worked so much; you will receive what you want. I am sure you will pass to the district organ after the elections*". The president answers her, "*I will talk with my president and ask her to do so, then perhaps I can refer one of you for my position*" (Electoral Campaigning activity on 12.05.2011, İnönü).

Recall that district posts are important in the sense that they provide access to incentives, which are important motivational force for activists. There is sign that post distribution was also accompanied by a certain amount of job provision to motivate the activists. In some instances, the district president directly distributed incentives for motivating new entrance in the party, at not only the district but also neighborhood level. This was especially the case for the incorporation of new activists within the organization of the main branch. The declaration of a neighborhood coordinator on the membership of a family successfully reveals the use of job provision to gain support. Showing me a house in the neighborhood, the coordinator expresses

"*You see this house, they have approximately 8 votes. Our president personally came and asked them to join the party. He promised them to put their son in a job at the municipality and he did. Three member of the family entered the party*" (Interview conducted on 06.05.2011, Sancaktepe).

For example, the activists of Kurdish origin in Veysel Karani who entered the party after 2009 began to work in the municipality after their entry. Especially in the main branch neighborhood organization a great number of activist, including presidents, were working in the municipality. A similar situation is also apparent among the members of the woman branch administrative committee. Unfortunately, there is no systematic data when these activists have attained these positions. Furthermore, a woman branch neighborhood coordinator who also worked in the municipality signaled the attainment of these posts by the activists after the 2009 municipal elections. She reported, *"I am working for a long time in the municipality, in contrast to others. I did not have the job after the foundation of the district, but others have* (Interview conducted on 26.05.2011, Sancaktepe). Nevertheless, I have also witnessed activists that entered the party after they began to work in the municipality. An example of such activists was the main branch neighborhood president of Inönü. The provision of these jobs gave a signal to the others that they could also be rewarded. Such a strategy was not observed in Beyoğlu, where municipal posts were mostly distributed to loyal supporters of the district organs through their personal connections.

The circulation among activists in the 2012 regular Congress indicates the different rules of intra-party advancement in both of the organizations. A small amount of vertical circulation was witnessed in Beyoğlu, but these members were former neighborhood activists re-joining the party after 2009 from the neighborhoods where the party was traditionally strong. Probably, they joined the party at first place because they were promised such a promotion. Within this respect, we can observe the promotion of the presidents of the neighborhoods such as Kaptanpaşa, Örnektepe to the auxiliary district organ in the main branch. Yet, no newly recruited activists, especially from the neighborhoods such as Hacıahmet, where the party is traditionally weak, were promoted to the district organs. Neighborhood coordinators retained their position regardless of their poor performances during the elections. The neighborhood coordinators of Örnektepe and Hacıahmet were not an exception. Nevertheless, a horizontal circulation and recruitment outside of the organization within each district organs can be observed. Within this respect, all members of the executive committee of the main branch changed, except the president and vice president responsible from the organizations. Yet, the new members were from the former administrative committee. Minor changes have been carried in the executive committee of the women branch where circulation

was among the vice presidencies. Unfortunately, there is no available data to systematically track the changes in the administrative committee. However, all the presidents of the neighborhoods where the party was traditionally weak such as Hacıahmet, Yenişehir, Çukur were still in their duties after the congress. This strengthens our expectation that no major promotion were witnessed in these neighborhoods.

The circulation in Sancaktepe, especially in woman branches was very different. It signaled the presence of competitive intraparty advancement rules where posts are distributed on the basis of the performance of the activists. The data indicates a large amount of vertical circulation within the organs. A large number of neighborhood activists promoted to the district organs based on their performance. Among them, were the woman branch neighborhood presidents or vice-presidents from Inönü and Veysel Karani. Beside, in Veysel Karani where the neighborhood administration worked very hard two neighborhood activists received promotion. So were the presidents of other neighborhoods such as Kemal Türkler, Merve, Yunus Emre etc. 17 members of the administrative committee and 4 members of the auxiliary board were new activists promoting from neighborhood presidencies that I have been able to identify. Low performance was also taken into consideration by the leaders in the appointment process. Neighborhood coordinators with low performance have been excluded from the district organs. Among them was the woman branch neighborhood coordinator of Inönü, coming from the old organization, who could not find place in the new administration.

Former members of the administrative committee who demonstrated good performance during the electoral campaigning activities such as the neighborhood coordinator of Veysel Karani passed to the administrative and the auxiliary district committees. Although, losing their posts may seem to reveal an inconsistency, given the fact of their high performance, the discourses of the activists provide a convenient logic. First, nearly all of these activists attained a post at the municipality after the 2009 municipal elections. In a sense, they received the material incentive they desired. Second, these posts require a great responsibility and devotion of time, a difficulty expressed by many of these activists during the electoral campaigning activities. In a sense, passing to the administrative and auxiliary committees that requires less devotion was evaluated as a reward for them. In fact, a considerable number of neighborhood

coordinators expressed during the electoral campaigning activities that they were very exhausted since 2009 and they needed a break to take care of their personal stuff. All, especially, expressed the complaints of their husbands and kids. The discourse of the neighborhood coordinator from Veysel Karani during our interview after the congress confirms the perception of the activists on the issue. She asserts,

> *"I am happy that our friends in the neighborhood organization promoted to the administrative committee. We should give place to them in the organization. You know I got very tired to work for the party all of these years. I need a little rest. Besides I can return whenever I want"* (*Interview conducted on 25.03.2012, Veysel Karani*).

It is important to note that, albeit, the perception of these activists on the high probability to regain their posts is high, whether this is an actual fact is bound to the future promotion mechanism of the party which can be defined only after a number of Regular Congresses.

This chapter has tried to revealed major factors affecting the different capabilities of the district branches of Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe to motive both activists of Kurdish and non-Kurdish origin to join the party actively working for the party after 2009. Based on the existing literature, the previous section has illustrated the nature of the electoral competition, or the amount of resources at the disposal of each district branch is not effective in explaining different motivational capacities. This section has illustrated how the organizational order established during the initial phase in Beyoğlu and the re-structuring of the organizational order in Sancaktepe after 2008, as a result of a critical juncture it faced, affected the capabilities of the district branches of motivating both existing and new entering activists very differently.

CONCLUSION

The move towards a predominant party system thanks to AKP's successes at the ballot box is one of the most important developments of the Turkish party system. In addition, the rising Kurdish ethnic demands and support for the pro-Kurdish party BDP can be evaluated as a major threat to the democratic stability of the Turkish party system since it contributes to ideological polarization. The combination of these two developments make the study of mobilization strategies used by AKP in order to mobilize potential voters of Kurdish origin particularly interesting since a large number of these voters comprise ideologically a common electoral base for AKP and BDP. Studies analyzing the mobilization strategies of political parties have mainly focused on the programmatic factors where positioning of the political parties on major issue or ideological dimensions have been evaluated as decisive in shaping voters' party preferences. In fact, the positional change of AKP on the Kurdish issue from 2007 to 2009 and 2011 elections was characterized by a parallel switch in the support of some voters of Kurdish origin from AKP to BDP, albeit the former has managed to increase its votes nationally. Yet, geographical divergence in these electoral shifts, which is difficult to be explained through programmatic mobilization, was also an interesting outcome of these elections.

This dissertation has been an attempt to identify possible factors increasing the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy of AKP among voters of Kurdish origin. In contrast to the general perception that evaluated different kinds of participation on ethnic consciousness as a function of cultural differences, the study treated participation on ethnic grounds as a rational strategy adopted by the members of an ethnic group in their competition on the distribution of material resources. Within this respect, the central claim of the dissertation is established around the literature analyzing the role of clientelistic linkage in explaining support among voters for a political party. This being

so, throughout my dissertation I attempted to construct a coherent explanation of the conditions increasing the effectiveness of the mobilization of voters of Kurdish origin through clientelistic accountability and test the validity of this explanation.

This dissertation was based on three distinct but related hypothesis largely debated in the general literature, albeit less empirically validated. The first hypothesis was built upon the attempt to understand the variables affecting the incorporation of the voters of Kurdish origin into the clientelistics network. Given the potential of violence among Kurdish voters and conflictual nature of inter-community relations; the study suggested that the effectiveness of clientelistic mobilization of voters of Kurdish origin through the clientelistic network is related to the conjunction of two variables: the number and time of entry of activists of Kurdish origin in the party's ranks and the intensity of their contacts with the voters. Second, it tried to explain the difference in the representational profiles of the party activists and the intensity of their contact with the voters within each neighborhood by focusing on the characteristics of the inner party organization and the role of critical junctures in changing its order.

Third, it tested the effectiveness of mobilization through the clientelistic linkage on gaining the support of potential swing voters by observing the neighborhoods in the districts of Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe that diverge in terms of support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin.

The study has based its research on the basic assumption that if such variables are effective in mobilizing citizens of Kurdish origin, the conditions under which the party can efficiently implement this strategy should explain divergence in electoral outcome. As a result, divergence in the support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin from 2007, 2009 and 2011 elections has been used as a proxy to measure the effectiveness of the clientelistic mobilization strategy of the party. In order to collect the necessary data to provide a clear and solid ground for my claims, I have chosen to base the analysis on a field research conducted in a number of selected districts and neighborhoods. Selection of the experimental and control districts has been conducted on the method of most similar cases. Within this respect after grouping a large number of cases according to my dependent variable and other potential independent variables that may affect electoral outcomes, two cases that are similar in terms of other independent variables but different in terms of the dependent variable have been selected. This intentional decision provided me the opportunity not only to understand the complex relationship

between tested variables but also to test their validity. Within this framework, two districts, Beyoğlu and Sancaktepe, have been selected to perform the deeper analysis on the factors increasing the effectiveness of the mobilization strategy of the party. Both are governed by AKP, are similar in terms of the number of residents of Kurdish origin, socio-economic characteristics, electoral competition patterns and amount of municipal resources per citizens, but differ in terms of support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin across the elections. Furthermore, Beykoz, having low numbers of residents of Kurdish origin has been selected as a control case for explaining difference in the mobilization strategy of the party for Kurdish as opposed to non-Kurdish voters. The necessary data has been extracted through personal interviews and participant observation conducted during the electoral campaigning period of 2011 general elections. This period has intentionally been selected, since electoral campaigning periods are when political parties sacrifice all of their efforts to mobilize voters. As a result, it provides the opportunity to collect more accurate and intense data on a very short period of time.

Albeit, the main starting point of the research question treated in this dissertation, is based on major developments in the Turkish political context, its contribution is not only limited to the Turkish literature but also to the general literature focusing on the mobilization strategies of political parties. Within this respect, besides providing the necessary data to test the main hypothesis of the dissertation, by depicting a descriptive account of the general mobilization of AKP, the field research has several contributions to the general literature on the complexity of the mobilization process of voters by the political parties.

It points out the use of a different strategy by AKP in mobilizing voters of Kurdish origin, which is based on contacting these voters through co-ethnics. More importantly, it reveals that the mobilization of the members of ethnic groups through their known co-ethnic members of the same social networks increases effectiveness through decreasing the cost of identification and persuasion. Especially under conditions where inter-community relations are weak and the members of an ethnic group have potential for violence identification of different types of voters of Kurdish origin may only be possible through known co-ethnic member of the same social network. In fact, this condition is the most important factor differentiating the mobilization of Kurdish voters as opposed to non-Kurdish voters. As the cases in

306

Beykoz reveals identification through un-known activists is still effective among non-Kurdish voters. Yet, the analysis conducted in four of the neighborhoods where support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish origin diverges across elections, reveals that the ability of the party to clientelistically mobilize voters of Kurdish origin across the elections is a function of both the time of incorporation of activists of Kurdish origin members of the ethnic social network in the party's rank and the amount of the activities performed by the neighborhood organization. The field research supports the argument of the study that mobilization through clientelistic linkage is an efficient strategy for political parties in consolidating and increasing support among swing voters.

The major importance of the claim in the Turkish political context is the contribution it provides in decreasing the ideological polarization that has the potential to threaten the stabilization of the democratic system. Restating the problem as a function of political and economic marginalization, the study indicates the indispensability of these dimensions to be taken into consideration by major political parties in order to solve the Kurdish problem and decrease its potential for violence.

Additionally, district level analysis supports the argument on the role of the inner party organization in increasing the clientelistic network. First, it reveals that the early incorporation of activists of Kurdish origin within the party's ranks is a function of the electoral competition the party faces in its founding phase. It also supports the argument that the centralized nature of the party organization which encourages the distribution of resources on the basis of loyalty act as an obstacle for the party to increase its clientelistic network after its founding phase. As the district of Sancaktepe reveals, increase in the clientelistic network after the founding phase of the party is possible through a critical juncture that provides opportunity for changing the organizational order so as to adapt the party to new circumstances. Yet, differences in change in the organizational order in the neighborhood of Inönü and Veyselkarani in Sancaktepe show that the availability of the required trained activists may prevent the party to attain this objective. These two examples also revealed that organizational change is met with resistance among activists of the old order, decreasing the effectiveness of the strategy. However, the field research has been conducted only 2 years after the re-organizational attempts. Furthermore, the new order has witnessed only one regular Congress just one year after of its establishment. Usually it may take more time for the new leaders to fully change the re-organizational order, especially under circumstances where it lacks a

sufficient number of trained activists for middle level positions. Under such conditions, the full change in the organizational order may only be attained after the training of new activists in the lower level of the organizational structure which takes time. Within this respect, in the neighborhoods like İnönü, the study expects further circulation in the posts occupied by the activists from the previous organization in the course of time.

By asserting the importance of the organization structure in shaping leaders' strategies, the dissertation does not only support the historical institutionalist arguments, but also indicates the negative influence of centralized party organizations in increasing the performance of political parties. The contribution of these last arguments in the Turkish literature is especially important given the fact that mostly all Turkish political parties have centralized tendencies. Although, such tendency provides the opportunity to control the entries in the parties, increase internal cohesion and assure the safety of the party leaders, as the dissertation indicates, it also decrease the capacity of the party to adapt its organizational structure to changing political conditions. Yet, by emphasizing the importance of critical junctures, the study reveals the condition through which such change may occur.

Albeit not directly tested, the dissertation contributes also to other issues debated in the literature. First, the tendency of AKP to form a clientelistic linkage that functions not only as a problem-solving network, but also as a mean to create a system of common identification through ideological mobilization has been demonstrated. When voters of Kurdish origin are concerned, their religious identity seems to be the major ground of common identification. Yet, respect for their ethnic distinctness and opposition to the homogenization attempts of the republican institutions also constitute an important issue reformulated within the broader center/periphery dimension. This observation supports the general argument that political parties implement a portfolio diversification in their mobilization strategy where they use both clientelistic and programmatic linkages in order to gain the support of voters. Within the framework of the Turkish political context, the dissertation indicates the prevailing importance of the clientelistic accountability in explaining the consolidated support for AKP among the Turkish voters.

Furthermore, the study also contributes to the existing debate on the types of voters political parties target and the mechanisms used by them to assure their compliance. Within this respect, field research indicates first, the functioning of this

network through different concentric circles composed by different types of voters, including opposition voters that have access to different types of resources. Yet, recall that the field research has been conducted in districts that face high electoral competition. The types of voters the party target may diverge in districts where the party is strong. Testing these differences may be a possible area for further research. Second, it has revealed that compliance of the voters is assured voluntarily through persuasion. These findings tend to support earlier studies' perception on the long term, emotional nature of the clientelistic exchange while contradicting the pure instrumental and short-run perceptions of current studies in the literature. Yet, this study has mainly focused in party/voters interactions that are on a regular base. Perhaps, the party's strategy may diverge under one-time interactions.

By incorporating the partisan network as a further factor affecting clientelistic mobilization, the study contributes to the literature explaining circumstances under which political parties distribute resources either clientelistically or programmatically. The organizational strength of the party is interpreted as a decisive factor affecting the strategies political parties formulate to mobilize the voters. Furthermore, the dissertation underlines the importance of the major formal mechanisms through which political parties access to the resources on one hand and distribute them to the voters and the party activists on the other. Within this respect, it indicates the necessity of a more comprehensive analysis on the effectiveness of the distribution of resources that also focuses on the functioning of political parties especially under circumstances where resources are accessed and distributed by different organs at different levels of the organizational structure.

Another contribution of the findings is the support it gives to recent studies on the use of state resources by political parties not only for electoral but also organizational purposes, in an era characterized by decreasing level of political participation through traditional means. Within this respect, the study signals the advantages for incumbents to use the state resources at their disposal in order to assure their own organizational survival. On the other hand, by indicating the importance of the clientelistic accountability in gaining the support of the voters and motivating party activists to actively work, the dissertation does not only reveals alternative tools available to political parties for mobilizing ethnic voters but also other ideologically swing voters. Within the Turkish political context, the study also indicates the importance of the

309

municipal resources for Turkish political parties not only in increasing their electoral support but also in strengthening their organizational structures. The persistent efforts of AKP in gaining the municipalities controlled by other political parties seem to be even more meaningful given their importance in serving the political objectives of the party. The provintial level electoral results in the Kurdish populated provinces also indicate a similar relationship. The increase in AKP's support from 2009 to 2011 elections in the provinces of Kars, Bingöl, Ağrı, Şanlurfa governed by co-partisan municipalities is a situation that merits to be further investigated. The control of the municipality by BDP in a large number of provinces in the region should probably act as a constrain to the AKP's efforts to increase its support through strengthening its party organization. In fact, difference in the organizational encapsulation of the party in each of these groups of provinces should provide a suitable area of research for the influence of material incentives on the mobilization of the voters to actively participate in politics.

Although the model developed in this dissertation was particularly based on the voters of Kurdish origin, it can also be effective in explaining possible mobilization tools for voters with different distinct identities; ethnic or sectarian. In fact, the field research in Sancaktepe indicates the use of a similar strategy by AKP in order to mobilize members of the Alevi community. One of the vice president of the district was an Alevi from a reputable family and a former CHP supporter who join the party in the re-organizational process in 2008.

Yet, criticism may be directed especially deriving from the method used to test the arguments. The findings may be criticized on the ground that the conduction of the analysis for testing the role of the inner party organization in only two districts may have caused to overlook the potential impact of other variables that the study has not taken into consideration during the selection process. In fact such an objection may have a rightful ground. Nevertheless, the brief evaluation on patterns of the support for AKP among citizens of Kurdish voters across other districts in Istanbul seems to supports the results. Fortunately, Sancaktepe was not the only newly established district in 2008. Two other districts facing similar exogenous factors, namely Arnavutköy, Esenyurt have also been established through the unification of different sub-districts (Belde). In a sense, both districts have also faced a critical juncture characterized by an organizational crisis where they had to reorganize the organizational order of the party. Unfortunately, the increase in the population of non-Kurdish residents in these districts

as a result of urbanization makes it difficult to assess the real change in the support for AKP among voters of Kurdish origin. However, when the absolute amount of support for BDP as the main competitor of AKP is analyzed, a similar pattern as in Sancaktepe after 2009 general elections can be observed. In both districts, the absolute support for BDP in 2011 general elections is relatively lower than 2009 municipal elections. Yet, the electoral patterns in other districts such as Bağcılar, Ümraniye, Küçükçekmece, Bahçelievler, Esenler, Zeytinburnu where the party organizations did not faced any organizational crisis indicates increase in support for BDP from 2009 to 2011 elections. On the other hand, albeit introducing the presence of a critical juncture a necessary condition providing the opportunity for the party to adapt itself to changing conditions, actual change within the organizational order should not be evaluated as an automatic outcome. In fact, the field research indicates the probability of an organizational change to be influenced by the personal experiences the leaders have faced. Perhaps a further step can be the testing the effectiveness of such a variable in the party's ability to adapt itself after facing an organizational crisis.

Furthermore, the critical juncture analyzed in the study is a very particularistic kind of organizational crisis, which has a considerably low probability to be experienced. Similar analysis should also be carried for different types of organizational crisis and their possible influence on the strategy of the party. Given the highly centralized nature of AKP, such an organizational crisis may be experienced through the intervention of the higher-level administrators of the organization. As the intervention of the center to re-structuring of the neighborhood organizations after 2009 general election indicates, such an attempt may be implemented in case of decreasing overall support for the party.

On the other hand, the study may be evaluated as the first step through which the main objective is to determine the influential variables in shaping the mobilization strategies of political parties by explaining the complex relationship between different interacting variables. Perhaps one step further of the research would to measure the impact of the determined variables on the effectiveness of the mobilization strategies through an extensive field research conducted on a larger number of cases. Such an attempt, I believe would also have valuable contributions to the literature by increasing the generalization capacity of the model built in this dissertation. Yet, it transcends the objective of this dissertation which was deliberately designed for explanatory purposes.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Books and Articles

Aktürk, Şener, "Persistence of the Islamic Millet as an Ottoman Legacy: Mono-Religious and Anti-Ethnic Definition of Turkish Nationhood", *Middle Eastern Studies*, Vol.45, No.6, 2009, pp. 893-909.

Aktürk, Şener, " Regimes of Ethnicity: Comparative Analysis of Germany, the Soviet Union/PostSoviet Russia, and Turkey", *World Politics*, Vol. 63, No. 01, 2011, pp 115-164.

Aksit, Bahattin and Akcay, A.Adnan, "GAP Bölgesinde Nüfus Hareketleri", in Baydar, Oya, O. (ed.)*75 Yilda Koylerden Sehirlere*, Tarih Vakfi, Istanbul, 1999, pp. 323-333

Alış, Ahmet, 'Kürt Etnobölgesel Hareketinin Doğuşu, Kitleselleşme Süreci ve Türkiye İşçi Partisi: 1959-1974', in Ersanlı, Büşra et al (eds), *Türkiye Siyasetinde Kürtler: Direniş, Hak arayışı, Katılım*, Istanbul: İletişim Yayınları, 2012, pp. 57-91.

Arıkan, Gizem & Şekercioğlu, Eser, "Trends in Party System Indicators for the July 2007 Turkish Elections", *Turkish Studies*, Vol. 9, No. 2, 2008, pp. 213-231.

Atacan, Fulya , 'A Kurdish Islamist Group in Modern Turkey: Shifting Identities', *Middle Eastern Studies,* Vol. 37, No. 3, 2001, pp. 111-44.

Auyero, Javier, *Poor people's Politics: Peronist Survival Networks and the Legacy of Evita*, Durham: Duke University Press, 2001.

Ayata, Sencer & Ayata, Ayşe G., *Konut, Komşuluk ve Kent Kültürü*, Ankara : T.C. Başbakanlık Toplu Konut İdaresi Başkanlığı, 1996.

Balla, Steven J., Lawrence, Eric D., Maltzman, Forrest, Sigelman, Lee, "Partisanship, Blame Avoidance, and the Distribution of Legislative Pork", *American Journal of Political Science*, Vol. 46, No. 3, 2002, pp. 515-525

Barkey, Henry. J., "Turkey, Islamic Politics and the Kurdish Question", *World Policy Journal,* Vol.13, No. 1, 1996, pp.43-52.

Barkey, Henry. J., "The People's Democracy Party (HADEP): The Travails of a Legal Kurdish Party in Turkey", *Journal of Muslim Minority Affairs*, Vol. 18, No. 1, 1998, pp. 129-38.

Başlevent, Cem; Kirmanoğlu, Hasan, Şenatalar, Burhan, "Empirical Investigation of Party Preferences and Economic Voting in Turkey", *European Journal of Political Research*,Volume 44, Issue 4, 2005, pp. 547-562,

Bates, Robert. H, "Modernization, Ethnic Competition, and the Rationality of Politics in Contemporary Africa", In Rothchild, Donald & Olunsorola, Victor A. (eds) *State Versus Ethnic Claims: African Policy Dilemmas*, Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1983.

Bengio, Ofra, ""The "Kurdish Spring" in Turkey and its Impact on Turkish Foreign Relations in the Middle East", *Turkish Studies,* Vol.12, No.4, 2011, pp.619-632.

Bickers, Kenneth N. & Stein, Robert M., "The Electoral Dynamics of the Federal Pork Barrel", *American Journal of Political Science*, Vol. 40, No. 4, 1996, pp. 1300-1326.

Blalock, Hubert M , Jr, *Towards a Theory of Minority-Group Relations*, New York: John Wiley and Sons, 1967.

Bolleyer, Nicole, "Patronage as a Party Resource: Selective Incentives and the Generation of Organizational Support", Paper presented for the 3.rd ECPR Joint Section, Cyprus, April 2006.

Bolleyer, Nicole, "Inside the Cartel Party: Party Organization in Government and Opposition", Political Studies, Vol. 57, 2009, pp. 559-579.

Bruinessen, Martin Van, "Shifting National and Ethnic Identities: The Kurds in Turkey and the European Diaspora", *Journal of Muslim Minority Affairs*, Vol.18, No. 1, 1998, pp. 39-52.

Brusco V. et all, "Vote Buying in Argentina", *Latin American Research Review*, Vol. 39, No. 2, 2004, pp.66-88.

Calvo, Ernesto and Murillo, M. Victoria , "Who Delivers? Partisan Clients in the Argentine Electoral Market", *American Journal of Political Science*, Vol. 48, No. 4, 2004, pp. 742-757.

Calvo, Ernesto and Murillo, M. Victoria "When Parties Meet Voters: Partisan Networks and Distributive Expectations in Argentina and Chile", Paper Presented at 2010 MPSA Conference, Chicago, 22 April 2010.

Cammet, Melani & Issar, Sukriti, "Bricks and Mortal Clientelism: Sectarianism and the Logic of Welfare Allocation in Lebanon", *World Politics*, Vol. 62, No. 3, 2010, pp. 381-421.

Campbell, Angus et. all, *The American voter*, London: University of Chicago, 1976.

Canefe, Nergiz, "Turkish Nationalism and the Kurdish Question: Nation, State and Securitization of Communal Identities in a Regionalist Contest", *South European Society and Politics*, Vol. 13, No. 3, 2008, pp. 396-397.

Carty, R. Kenneth & Eagles, Munroe, "Do local Campaigns Matter? Campaign Spending, the Local Canvass and Party Support in Canada", *Electoral Studies*, No. 18, 1999, pp. 69-87.

Case, Anne, "Election Goals and Income Distribution: Recent Evidence from Albania", *European Economic Review*, Vol. 45, 2001, pp. 405-423.

Chandra, Kanchan, *Why Ethnic Parties Succeed*, Camridge University Press, Cambridge, 2004.

Chandra, Kanchan, "Elite Incorporation in Multi Ethnic Societies", *Asian Survey*, Vol. 40, No. 5, 2010, pp. 861-865.

Claassen, Ryan L., "Political Opinion and Distinctiveness: the Case of Hispanic Ethnicity", *Political Research Quarterly*, Vol. 57, No. 4, pp. 609-620.

Collier R. B. & Collier, D, *Shaping the Political Arena*, Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1991.

Conway, M. Margaret and Feigert, Frank B., "Motivation, Incentive Systems, and the Political Party Organization", *The American Political Science Review*, Vol. 62, No. 4, 1968, pp. 1159-1173.

Cornelius, Wayne A., "Mobilized Voting in the 2000 Elections: The Changing Efficacy of Vote Buying and Coercion in Mexican Electoral Politics", in Dominguez, Jorge I., Lawson Chappell H. (eds), *Mexico's Pivotal Democratic Elections*, Stanford University Press, 2004.

Cornell, Svante E., "The land of Many Crossroads: The Kurdish Quesiton in Turkish politics", *Orbis*, Vol. 45, Winter 2001, pp. 31-46.

Cox, Gary, "Swing Voters, Core Voters and Distributive Politics", In *Elections and Redistribution"*, Yale University, 2007.

Cox, Gary W. and McCubbins, Mathew D., "Electoral Politics as a Redistributive Game", *The Journal of Politics,* Vol. 48, No. 2, 1986, pp. 370-389.

Çaha, Ömer & Guida, Michelnagelo, *Türkiye'de Seçim Kampanyaları*, Istanbul: Orion Kitapevi, 2011.

Çarkoğlu, Ali., "Turkish Party System in Transition: The Connection Between Macro-Level Party Competition and Agenda Change in Election Manifestoes," *Political Studies*, Vol:49, No.6, 1998, pp.544-571.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, " The Rise of the New Generation Pro-Islamists in Turkey: The Justice and Development Party Phenomenon in the November 2002 Elections in Turkey", *South European Society and Politics*, Vol. 7, No.3, 2002, pp.123-156.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, "The Nature of the Left-Right Ideological Self-Placement in the Turkish Context", *Turkish Studies*, Vol. 8, No. 2, 2007a, pp.253-271.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, "A New Electoral Victory for the Pro-Islamists or the New Centre-Right? The Justice and Development Party Phenomenon in the July 2007 Parliamentary Elections in Turkey", *South European Society and Politics,* Vol. 12, No. 4, 2007b, pp. 501-519.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, "Ideology or Economic pragmatism: Determinants of Party Choice in Turkey for the July 2007 Elections", *Studies in Public Policy*, 2008a, No. 439, pp. 1-44.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, "Ideology or Economic Pragmatism: Profiling Turkish Voters in 2007", *Turkish Studies* vol.9 No.2, 2008b, pp.317-344

Çarkoğlu, Ali, "The March 2009 Local Elections in Turkey: A Signal for Takers or the Inevitable Beginning of the End for AKP?", *South European Society and Politic* Volume 14, Issue 3, 2009a, pp. 295-316.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, "Turkey's Local Elections of 2009: Winners and Losers", *Insigth Turkey*, 2009b, pp. 1-18.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, 'Partisan Mobilization in Turkish Elections', Paper Presented at 2010 MPSA Conference, Chicago, 22 April 2010.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, "Turkey's 2011 General Elections: Towards a Dominant Party System?", *Insight Turkey*, Vol. 13, No.3, 2011, pp. 43-62.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, "A New Dominant Party in the Making: Learning from the Case of Turkey's Justice and Development Party" Paper Presented at 2012 MPSA Conference, Chicago, 14 April 2012a.

Çarkoğlu, Ali, "Economic Evaluations vs. Ideology: Diagnosing the Sources of Electoral Change in Turkey, 2002-2011", *Electoral Studies*, Vol. 31, No. 3, 2012b, pp.513-521.

Çarkoğlu, Ali & Hinich Melvin J., "A Spatial Analysis of Turkish Party Preferences", *Electoral Studies*, vol.25, 2006, pp.369-392.

Çarkoğlu, Ali and Kalaycıoğlu, Ersin, *Turkish Democracy Today: Elections, Protest and Stability in an Islamic Society*, London: I. B. Tauris, February 2007.

Çarkoğlu, Ali and Kalaycıoğlu, Ersin, *The rising tide of conservatism in Turkey*, New York: Palgrave-Macmillan, May 2009.

Çelik, Ayşe Betül, *Migrating Onto Identity: Kurdish Mobilization Through Associations in Istanbul?*, Unpublished PHD Dissertation, SUNY-Binghamton, May 2002.

315

Çiçek, Cuma, "Elimination or Integration of Pro-Kurdish Politics: Limits of the AKP's Democratic Initiative" *Turkish Studies,* Vol. 12, No. 1, 2011, pp. 15-26.

Çınar, Menderes, "Turkey's Transformation Under the *AKP* Rule", *The Muslim World*, Vol. 96, No. 3, 2006, pp. 469-486.

Dağı, Ihsan, "Turkey's AKP in Power", *Journal of Democracy*, Vol.19, No. 3, 2008, pp. 25-30.

Dahl, Robert A., *Polyarchy, Participation and Opposition*, New Haven, London: Yale University Press, 1971

Dahlberg, Matz and Johanssen, Eva , "On Vote Purchasing Behavior of Incumbent Governments" *American political Science Review*, Vol. 96, No. 1,2002, pp. 27-40.

Danemark, David, "Partisan Pork-Barrel in Parliamentary Systems: Australian Constituency Level Grants", *The Journal of Politics*, Vol. 62, No. 3, 2000, pp. 896-915.

Demiralp, Seda, "The Odd Tango of the Islamic Right and Kurdish Left in Turkey: A Peripheral Alliance to Redesign the Centre?", *Middle Eastern Studies*, Vol.48. No.2, 2012, pp. 287-302

Despress, Leo, A. (ed), *Ethnicity and Resource Competition in Plural Societies*, Chicago: Mouton and Co., 1975.

Diaz-Cayeros, Alberto, "Electoral Risk and Redistributive Politics in Mexico and the United States", *Studies in Comperative International Development*, Vol. 43, No. 2, 2008, pp. 129-150.

Diaz-Cayeros & Magaloni Beatriz, "the politics of Public Spending. Part 1: the Logic of vote Buying" Available at http://reference.kfupm.edu.sa/content/p/o/the_politics_of_public_spending__part_i__53 432.pdf , consulted on 21.03.2011

Dixit, Avinash & Londregan, John, "The Determinants of Success of Special Interest in redistributive Politics", *Journal of Politics*, Vol. 58, No. 4, 1996, pp. 1132-55.

Doğan, Ali Ekber & Yılmazi Bediz, " Ethnicity, Social Tensions and Production of Space in Forced migration Neighbourhoods of Mersin: Comparing the Case of the Demirtaş Neighbourhood with Newly Established Ones", *Journal of Balkan and Near Eastern Studies*, Vol.13, No. 4, 201, pp. 475-494.

Dorronsoro Gilles and Watts Nicole F., "Towards Kurdish Distinctiveness in Electoral Politics: the 1977 Local Elections in Diyarbakır", *International Journal of Middle East Studies,* Vol. 41, 2009, pp 457-478 .

Duran, Burhanettin, "Approaching the Kurdish Question *via Adil Düzen*: An Islamist Formula of the Welfare Party for Ethnic Coexistence," *Journal of Muslim Minority Affairs*, Vol.18, No.1, 1998, pp.111-28.

Duverger, Maurice, Political Parties : Their Organization and Activity in the Modern State, New York: Wiley, 1966.

Efegil, Ertan, "Analysis of the AKP Government's Policy Towardthe Kurdish Issue", *Turkish Studies*, Vol. 12, No. 1, 2011, pp. 27-40

Enelow, James M. , Hinnich, Melvin J., *The spatial Theory of Voting*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984.

Entessar, Nader, *Kurdish Ethnonationalism,* Boulder, CO:Lynne Rienner, 1992.

Erder, Sema, *İstanbul'a bir Kent Kondu Ümraniye*, Istanbul: İletişim Yayıncılık, 1996.

Erder, Sema, *Kentsel Gerilim: Enformel İlişki Ağları Alan Araştırması*, Bakanlıklar, Ankara : Umag , 1997.

Ergil, Doğu "The Kurdish Question in Turkey." *Journal of Democracy*, Vol. 11, No. 3, 2000, pp. 122–35.

Ergüder, Üstün "Changing Patterns of Electoral Behavior in Turkey", *Boğaziçi University Journal*, Vol. 8-9,1980-81, pp. 45-81.

Ersanlı Büşra et al (eds) *Türkiye Siyasetinde Kürtler: Direniş, Hak arayışı, Katılım*, İstanbul: iletişim yayınları, 2012.

Esmer Yılmaz, "At the ballot Box: Determinants of Voting Behavior in Turkey", Esmer, Yılmaz, Sayarı, Sabri (eds),in *Politics, Parties and Elections in Turkey*, Boulder, Co: Lynn Reiner, 2002, pp. 91-114.

Estéves, Federico, Magaloni, Beatriz and Diaz-Cayeros, Alberto, "A Portfolio Diversification Model of Electoral investment", Paper presented at the Citizen-Elite Linkages' Workshop, Duke University, March 30- April 1, 2001; 2001 American Political Science and Latin American Studies Association Meetings, The Conference Frontiers in Latin American Political Economy, Stanford, January 18-19, 2002.

Fearon, James D. and Laitin, David D, "Explaining Interethnic Cooperation", *The American Political Science Review*, Vol. 90, No. 4, 1996, pp. 715-735.

Fearon, James D., "Why Ethnic Politics and Pork Tend to Go Togather?", *Conference on Ethnic Politics and Democratic Stability*, MacArthur Foundation, Chicago, June 1999.

Ferree Myra Marx & Miller Frederick D., "Mobilization and Meaning: Toward an Integration of Social Psychological and Resource Perspectives on Social Movements", *Sociological Inquiry*, Vol. 55, No. 1, 1985, pp. 38-61.

Frendreis, John. P., Gibson James. L., Vertz, Laura, "The electoral Relevance of Local Party Organization", *American political Science Review*, Vol. 84, No. 1, 1990, pp. 225-235.

Gallager, Michael, Vanessa, Liston, Marsh Michael, Weeks, Liam, "Explaining Activism Amonst Fine Gael Members: A Test of Seyd and Whitely's General Incentive Model", *Irish Political Studies*, Vol. 17, No. 1, 2002, pp. 97-113.

Galletti, Mirella. "The Kurdish Issue in Turkey." *The International Spectator*, Vol. 34, 1999, pp. 12-33.

Gans-Morse et al, *"Who gets bought? Vote buying, turnout buying, and other strategies", Weatherhead Center for International Affairs*, Harvard University, 2009.

Geddes, Barbara, "How the Cases You Choose Affect the Answers You Get: Selection Bias in Comparative Politics", *Political Analysis, Vol.* 2, No. 1, 1990, pp. 131-150.

Giles, Micheal W., and Evans, Arthur S., "External Threat, Perceived Threat, and Group Identity", *Social Science Quarterly*, Vol. 66, No. 1, 1985, pp. 50-66.

Giles, Micheal W, Evans, Arthur S., "The Power Approach to Intergroup Hostility", *Journal of Conflict Resolution*, Vol. 30, No.3, 1986, pp.469-86.

Graham, Carrol and Kane, Cheikh, "Opportunistic Government or Sustaining Reform? Electoral Trends and Public-Expenditure Patterns in Peru, 1990-1995", *Latin American Research Review*, Vol.33, No. 1, 1998, pp. 67-104.

Günes-Ayata, Ayse, ' Roots and Trends of Clientelism in Turkey' In Luis Roniger & Ayse Günes-Ayata (Eds.), *Democracy, Clientelism, and Civil Society,* Boulder, CO:Lynne Rienner, 1994, pp. 49-63.

Gunter ,Michael M.,*The Kurds and The future of Turkey*, St. Martin Pres: Newyork, 1997.

Gunter ,Michael M., Yavuz, Hakan M., "Turkish Paradox: Progressive Islamists versus Reactionary Secularists', *Critique: Critical Middle Eastern Studies*, Vol. 16, 2007, pp. 289-301.

Hechter, Michael, " Internial Colonialism Revisited", in Tiryakiyan Edward A., Rogowski, Ronald (eds), *New Nationalism and Developed West*, London: Allen and Unwin, 1975.

Hechter, Michael, "Group Formation and the Cultural Division of labor", *American Journal of Sociology*, Vol.84, No. 2, 1978, pp. 293-318.

Hechter, Michael, Levi, Margaret , "A Rational Choice Approach to the rise and decline of Ethnoregional Parties", in Tiryakiyan Edward A., Rogowski, Ronald (eds), *New Nationalism of the Developed West: towards Explanation*, Boston, London, Sydney: Allen & Ulwin, 1985, pp. 130-143

Hechter, Michael, Levi, Margaret, "Ethno-Regionalist Movements in the West", in Hutchinson, John, Smith, Anthony D. (eds), *Nationalism*, Oxford, New York: Oxford University Press, 1994.

Heper, Metin, *Gece Kondu Policy in Turkey: An Evaluation with a Case Study in Rumelihisarüstü Squatter Area in Istanbul*, Istanbul, 1978.

Heper, Metin, *Devlet ve Kürtler*, Doğan Kitap: Istanbul, 2008.

Heper Metin and Keyman, Fuat, "Double- Faced State: Political Patronage and the Consolidation of Democracy in Turkey", *Middle Eastern Studies*, Vol. 34, No.4, 1998, pp. 259-277.

Horowitz, Donalts, L., *Ethnic Groups in Conflict*, Berkeley: Calif, London, 2000.

Huckfeldt, Robert& Sprague, John, "Political Parties and Electoral Mobilization: Political Structure, Social Structure and the party Canvass", *American Political Science Review*, Vol. 86, No. 1, March 1992, pp. 70-86.

Huckfeldt, Robert& Sprague, John, *Citizens, politics and Social Communication: In formation and Influence in an Election Campain*, Cambridge University Press: Cambridge, 1995.

Hunter, Wendy , "The Normalization of an Anomaly: The Workers' Party in Brazil", *World Politics* , Vol. 59, No. 3, April 2007, pp. 440-47.

Icduygu, Ahmet, Romano, David & Sirkeci, Ibrahim "The Ethnic Question in an Environment of Insecurity: the Kurds in Turkey", *Ethnic and Racial Studies*, Vol. 22, No. 6, 1999, pp. 991-1010.

Römmele, Andrea, Farrell, David M. Ignazi, Piero, *Political Parties and Political Systems: the Concept of Linkage Revisited*, Westport: Greenwood Publishing, 2005.

Ilkkaracan, I. and Ilkkaracan, P. "1990'lar Türkiye'sinde Kadın ve Göç", in
Baydar, O. (ed.) *75 Yilda Koylerden Sehirlere*, Tarih Vakfi, Istanbul, 1999, pp. 305-322.

Kalaycıoğlu, Ersin, "Justice and Development Party at the Helm: Resurgence of Islam or Restitution of the Right-of-Center Predominant Party?", *Turkish Studies,* Vol. 11, No. 1, 2010, pp. 29-44.

Kalaycıoğlu, Ersin, 'Elections and Party preferences in Turkey: Changes and Continuities in the 1990s', *Comparative Political Studies*, Vol. 27, No. 3, 1994, pp. 402-424.

Kalaycıoğlu, Ersin, 'The Shaping of Party Preferences in Turkey: Coping with the Post-Cold War Era', *New perspectives on Turkey*, Vol. 20, 1999, pp. 47-76.

Katzenstein, Peter J., *Cultural Norms and National Security: Police and Military in Postwar Japan*, Ithaca, NY: Cornell, 1996.

Karl, Terry Lynn, "Dilemmas of Democratization in Latin America", *Comparative Politics*
Vol. 23, No. 1, 1990, pp. 1-21.

Karpat, Kemal, *The Gecekondu: the Rural Migration and Urbanization*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press,1976

Kaufman, Robert, R., "The Patron-Client Concept and Macro-politics: Prospects and Problems", *Comparative Studies in Society and History*, Vol. 16, No. 3, 1974, pp. 284-308.

Kemahlıoğlu, Özge, "Intra-party Competition and Clientelism: An Analysis of Public Sector Employment in Argentina and Turkey", *Center on Globalization and Governance*, Princeton University, 2005.

Kemahlıoğlu, Özge, *Agents or bosses? patronage and intra-party politics in Argentina and Turkey*, University of Essex, United Kingdom: European Consortium for Political Research Press, 2012.

Kemahlıoğlu, Özge & Özdemir, Elif, 2012, "Partisan Ties as Incumbency Advantage in the Nascent Predominant Party System of Turkey", Paper Presented at 2012 MPSA Conference, Chicago, 14 April 2012

Kılıç, H. Ayla, "Democratization, Human Rights and Ethnic Policies in Turkey", *Journal of Muslim Minority Affairs*, Vol.18, No. 1, 1998, pp.91-110

Kirişçi, Kemal & Winrow, Gareth M., *Kürt Sorunu: Kökeni ve Gelişimi*, Tarih Vakfı Yurt Yayınları, İstanbul, 2000,

Kirişci, Kemal (2011): The Kurdish Issue in Turkey: Limits of European Union Reform, South European Society and Politics, 16:2, 335-349

Kirchheimer, Otto, "The Transformation of the Western European Party System", in Laparombara, J., Weiner, M. (eds), *Political Parties and Political Development*, Princeton, NY: Princeton University press, 1966, pp. 177-200.

Kitschelt, H.,Wilkinson S.I., ed: *Patrons, Clients, and Policy Patterns of Democratic Accountability and Political Competition*, Cambridge University Press, New York, 2007.

Klandermans, Bert, Oegema, Dirk, "Potentials, Networks, Motivations, and Barriers: Steps towards Participation in Social Movements", *American Sociological Review*, Vol. 52, No.4, 1987, pp. 519-531.

Knoki, David, Wood, James R., *Organized for Action: Commitment in Voluntary Associations, New Brunswick*, NJ: Rutgers University Press, 1981.

Komşuoğlu, Ayşegül, "Birimiz hepimiz, hepimiz birimiz için mi - Dağınık bir siyasetin topluma sunduğu elde kalan tutkal: Klientalist ağlar", *Toplum ve Bilim*, Vol. 116, 2009, pp. 21-54.

Kopecky, Petr, Mair, Peter, "Party Patronage in Contemporary Europe", *EUI Working Paper*, RSCAS 2011/41, Italy, June 2011

Kopecky, Petr, Spirova, Maria, " 'Jobs for the Boys'? Patterns of Party Patronage in Post Communist Europe", *West European Politics*, Vol. 34, No. 5, 2011, pp. 897-921.

Kopecky, Petr, Spirova, Maria, Scherlis, Gerardo, "Beyond the Cartel Party? Party Patronage and the Nature of Parties in New Democracies", Paper presented for joint IPSA/ESPR Conference, Sao Paulo, Brazil, 16-19 February 2011.

Krasner, S., 1984, "Approaches to the State: Alternative Conceptions and Historical Dynamics", *Comparative politics*, Vol. 16, 1984, pp. 223-246.

Krassa, M., "Context and the Canvass: the Mechanism of Interaction", *Political Behavior*, Vol. 10, 1988, pp.233-146.

Kudat, Ayşe, "Patron-Client Relations: the State of Art and Research in Eastern Turkey", in Akarlı, Engin, Bendor, Gabriel (eds), Political Participation in Turkey, Istanbul: Boğaziçi Universitey Press, 1975, pp. 61-88.

Kumbaracıbaşı, Arda, *Turkish Politics and the Rise of AKP: Dilemmas of Institutionalization and Leadership Strategy*, Londondon, Newyork: Routledge, 2009.

Larrabee, F. Stephen & Tol, Gonul, " Turkey's Kurdish Challenge," *Survival: Global Politics and Strategy*, Vol. 53, No.4, 2011, pp. 143-152

Leifer, Eric M., "Competing Models of Political Mobilization: The Role of Ethnic Ties", *American Journal of Sociology*, Vol. 87, No. 1, 1981, pp. 23-47.

Leighley, J. E., "Group membership and the Mobilization of Political Participation", *Journal of Politics*, Vol. 58, No. 2, 1996, pp. 447-463.

Levitsky, Steven, *Transforming Labour Based Parties in Latin America: Argentine Peronism in Comparative Perspective*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003.

Lindbeck, Assar & Weibull, Jörgen W., "Balenced Budget Distribution as the Outcome of Political Distribution", *Public Choice*, Vol. 52, 1987, pp. 273-297.

Lipset S. M. & Rokan S (eds) *Party Systems and Voter Alignments: Cross National perspective*, New York: Free Press, 1967.

Neophytos G. Loizides, " State Ideology and the Kurds in Turkey", *Middle Eastern Studies*, Vol. 46, No.4, 2010, pp. 513-527.

Mair, Peter, *Party System Change: Approaches and Interpretation*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1997.

McDowall, D. *A Modern History of the Kurds*, London: I.B. Tauris, 1996.

McKay, James. "An Explanatory Synthesis of Primordial and Mobilizationist Approaches to Ethnic Phenomena." *Ethnic and Racial Studies* , Vol. 5, 1982, pp.395-420.

McGillivray, Fiona., *Privileging Industry: The Comparative Politics of Trade and Industrial Policy*, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2004.

Michelson, Melissa, "Getting out the Latino vote: How door-to-door Canvassing Influences Voter Turnout in Rural Central California", *Political Behavior,* Vol. 25, 2003, pp. 247–263.

Morris Aldon, 'BlackSouthern Student Sit-In Movement: An Analysis of Internal Organization', *American Sociological Review*, Vol.46, No.6, 1981, pp.744-67.

Muno, Wolfgang, "Conceptualizing and Measuring Clientelism", Paper presented at the Workshop "Neopatrimonialism in Various World Regions", *German Institute of Global and Area Studies*, August 2010, Hamburg

Mutlu, Server, "Ethnic Kurds in Turkey: A Demographic Study", *International Journal of Middle East Studies*, Vol. 28, 1996, pp. 517-541.

Mutlu, Server , "Economic Bases of Ethnic Separatism in Turkey:An Evaluation of Claims and Counterclaims", *Middle Eastern Studies*, Vol.37, No.4, 2001, pp.101-135

Mutluer, M. Kamil & Erdogan, Öner, *Teoride ve Uygulamada Mahalli İdareler Maliyesi*, Istanbul: Bilgi Universitesi Yayınları, 2009.

Müftüler-Baç, Meltem & Keyman, E. Fuat, " The Era of Dominant-Party Politics", *Journal of Democracy*, Vol. 23, No. 1, 2012, pp. 85-99.

Müller, Wolfgang, C.,"Party Patronage and Party Colonization of the State", in Katz, Richard S., Crotty, William J. (eds), *Handbook of Party Politics,* London: Sage, 1989, pp. 189-94.

Nielson François, "Towards a Theory of Ethnic Solidarity in Modern Societies", *American Sociological Review*, No. 50, 1985, p. 133-149.

Panebianco, Angelo, *Political Parties: Organization and Power*, Cambridge, England, New York: Cambridge University Press, 1988

Penfold-Becerra, Micheal, "Clientelism and Social funds: Evidence from Chavez's Misiones", *Latin American Politics and Society*, Vol. 49, No. 4, 2007, pp. 63-84.

Pierson, Paul, "When Effect Becomes Cause: Feedback and Political Change", *World Politics*, Vol. 45, No. 4,1993, pp. 595-628.

Pierson Paul, " The Path to European Integration: A Historican Institutionalist Approach", *Comparative Political Studies*, Vol. 29, No. 2, 1996, pp. 123-163.

Pierson Paul, "Increasing returns, Path Dependence and the Study of Politics", *The American Political Science Review,* Vol. 94, No. 2, 2000, pp. 251-267.

Olson, Mancur, *The Logic of Collective Action*, Newyork: Schocken Books, 1965.

Olson, Robert (ed.), *The Kurdish Nationalist Movement in the 1990s: Its Impact on Turkey and The Middle East*, Lexington, KY: University of Kentucky Press, 1996.

Olzak, Susan, "Contemporary Ethnic Mobilization", *Annual Sociological review,* Vol. 9, 1983,pp. 355-374.

Otite, Onigu, "Resource Competition and Ethnic Relations in Nigeria" in Despress, Leo, A. (ed), *Ethnicity and Resource Competition in Plural Societies*, Chicago: Mouton and Co., 1975, pp. 119-131.

Öniş, Ziya "The Political Economy of Islamic Resurgence in Turkey: the Rise of theWelfare Party in Perspective", *Third World Quarterly*, 1997, Vol. 18, No. 4, pp. 743-66

Özbudun, Ergun, *Siyasal Partiler*, Ankara: Sosyal Bilimler Derneği, 1979.

Özbudun, Ergun, "Turkey: The Politics of Political Clientelism"*, in Political Clientelism, Patronage, and Development*, Eisenstadt, S.N., Lemarchand, R. (eds), Sage studies in Contemporary Political Sociology, 3,1981.

Özbudun, Ergun, "From Political Islam to Conservative Democracy: The Case of the Justice and Development Party in Turkey", *South European Society and Politics*,Vol. 11, No. 3-4, 2006, pp. 543-557.

Özbudun, Ergun & Hale, William*, Türkiye'de Islamcılık, Demokrasi ve Liberalism: AKP Olayı,* Istanbul: Doğan Yayıncılık, 2010.

Özbudun, Sibel, "The Reproduction of Clientelism in Regressing Rural Turkey or "Why I Became An 'Erect Ear'?", *Dialectical Anthropology*, Vol. 29, No. 2, 2005, pp. 241-272.

Özsoy, Ali E., Koç, Ismet & Toros, Aykut, "Türkiye'nin etnik Yapısının Anadil Sorunlarına göre Analizi", *Turkish Journal of Population Studies*, Vol. 14, 1992, pp. 87-115

Ragin, Charles C, " Ethnic Political Mobilization: The Welsh Case", *American Sociological Review*, Vol. 44, No. 4, 1979, pp. 619-635

Roberts, Kenneth, "Neoliberalism and the Transformation of Populism in Latin America: the Peruvian Case", *World Politics*, Vol. 48, 1995, pp. 82-116.

Robinson, James & Thierry Verdier, "The Political Economy of Clientelism", Working paper, Berkeley: Department of political Science, University of California, 2003.

Rocha-Menocal , Alina, "Do Old Habits Die Hard? A Statistical Exploration of the Politicisation of Progresa, Mexico's Latest Federal Poverty-Alleviation Programme, under the Zedillo Administration", *Journal of Latin American Studies*, Vol. 33, No.3, 2001, pp. 513-538.

Romano, David, *The Kurdish Nationalist Movement*, NewYork: Cambridge University Press, 2006.

Sahan, Emel, Zogg, Andreas, and Mason, Simon A., "Case Study: Southeastern Anatolia Project in Turkey-GAP." Paper presented at the ETH, Center for International Studies, Zurich. 2001. http://www.eawag.ch/research_e/apec/damsworldwide_e.html. Consulted on 12 January 2010.

Sarigil, Zeki, "Curbing Kurdish Ethno-nationalism in Turkey: an Empirical Assessment of Pro-Islamic and Socio-economic Approaches", *Ethnic and Racial Studies*, Vol. 33, No.3, 2010, pp.533-553

Sartori, Giovanni. *Parties and Party Systems: A Framework for Analysis*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1976.

Sayarı, Sabri, *Party Politics in Turkey: Dimensions of Competition and Organization*, Michigan: Xerox University, 1975.

Sayarı, Sabri, "Political Patronage in Turkey", in Gellner, E., Waterbury, J (eds), *Patrons and Clients in Mediterranean Societies*, Hanover: Center for Mediterranean Studies of the American Universities Field Staff, 1977.

Sayarı, Sabri, "The Changing Party System," in Sayarıi Sabri and Esmer, Yılmaz (eds.), *Politics, Parties and Elections in Turkey*, Lynne Riener Publishers, 2002, pp. 9-32.

 Sabri Sayarı, "Towards a New Turkish Party System?" *Turkish Studies*, Vol.8, No.2, 2007, pp.197–210.

Sayarı, Sabri, "Clientelism and Patronage in Turkish Politics and Society", in Toprak, Binnaz and Birtek, Faruk (eds.), *The Post Modern Abyss and the New Politics of Islam: Assabiyah Revisited Essays in Honor of Şerif Mardin*, Istanbul: Bilgi University, 2011, pp. 81-94.

Schady, Norbert R., "The Political Economy of Expenditure by Peruvian Social Fund (FONCODES), 1991-1995", *American Political Science Review*, Vol. 94, No. 2, 2000, pp. 289-304.

Schaffer, Frederic C., *Elections for Sale: The Causes and Consequences of Vote Buying* Boulder, CO: Lynne Rienner Publishers, 2007

Scherlis, Gerardo, "Party Patronage in Argentina: Reach and Rationale in Comparative perspective", Paper delivered at 2009 meeting of the Latin American Studies Association, Brazil, June 2009.

Shaw, Daron, de la Garza, Rodolfo, and Lee, Jongho, "Examining Latino Turnout in 1996: A Three-state, Validated Survey Approach", *American Journal of Political Science*, Vol.44, 2000, pp. 332–340.

Schildkraut, Deborah J., 'The Rise and Fall of Political Engagement among Latinos: the Role of Identity and Perceptions of Discrimination, *Political Behavior*, Vol. 27, No. 3, 2005, pp. 285-312.

Schüler, Harald, *Türkiye'de Sosyal Demokrasi: Particilik, Hemşehrilik, Alevilik*, Istanbul: İletişimYayınları, 2002.

Scott, George M. "A Resynthesis of the Primordial and Circumstantial Approaches to Ethnic Group Solidarity: Towards an Explanatory Model." Ethnic and Racial Studies, Vol. 13, 1990, pp. 147–71

Sezer, Haluk. "Regional Welfare Weights for Turkey." *Journal of Economic Studies* , Vol.33, 2006, pp. 357–68

Seyd, Patrick & Whiteley Paul F., *Labour's Grassroots: the Politics of Party Membership*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1992.

Shaw, Daron, de la Garza, Rodolfo, and Lee, Jongho, "Examining Latino Turnout in 1996: A Three-state, Validated Survey Approach", *American Journal of Political Science*, Vol.44, 2000, pp. 332–340.

Sirkeci, İbrahim, "Exploring the Kurdish Population in the Turkish Context, *Genus*, Vol. 56, No. 1-2, 2000, pp. 149-175.

Skinner, Elliot, "Within Ethnic Systems in Africa" in Despress, Leo, A. (ed), *Ethnicity and Resource Competition in Plural Societies*, Chicago: Mouton and Co., 1975, pp. 131-159.

Schmitter, Philippe C., " The Ambiguous Virtues of Accountability", *Journal of Democracy*, Vol. 15, No. 4, 2004, pp. 47-60.

Snow, David .A., Zurcher, Louis.A. Jr., Ekland-Olson, Sheldon., "Social Networks and Social Movements: A Microstructural Approach to Differential Recruitment", *American Sociological Review*, Vol.45, No.5, 1980, pp.787-801.

Stein, Robert. M., Bickers, Kenneth N., "Congressional Elections and the Pork Barrel", *Journal of Politics,* Vol. 56, 1994, pp. 377–99.

Stokes, Susan C., "Perverse Accountability: A Formal Model of Machine Politics with Evidence from Argentina", *American Politcal Science Review*, Vl. 99, No. 3, 2005, pp. 315-325.

Sunar, Ilkay, *State and Society in the Politics of Turkey's Development*, Ankara: Anakara University Faculty of Political Science Publication, 1974.

Sunar, İlkay, "Populism and Patronage: The Demokrat Party and its Legacy in Turkey", *Il Politico*, Vol. 4, 1990, pp. 745-757.

Sunar, Ilkay, *State, Society and Democracy in Turkey*, Istanbul: Bahçeşehir University Publication, 2004.

Szwarcberg, Mariela, Making Democracy Work: Political machines, Clientelism and Social Networks in Argentine, DHP dissertation, University of Chicago, 2009.

Szwarcberg, Mariela, "Uncertainty, Political Clientelism, and Voter Turnout in Latin America: Why Parties Conduct Rallies in Argentina", *Comparative Politics*, Vol. 45, No. 1, 2012 , pp. 88-106.

Şahin, Ismet, and Gülmez, Yener, "Efficiency of Education: The Case in Eastern and SoutheasternTurkey." *Social Indicators Research 49*, 2000, pp. 213-36.

Şekercioğlu, Eser & Arıkan, Gizem, "Sub-province Vote Dynamics in the 2011 General Elections: What the Provincial Map Does Not Tell",Workshop on Voting and Party System in Turkey's June 2011 Elections, Yasar University, Izmir, February 9-10, 2012.

Thachil, Tarıq, "Embedded Mobilization: Nonstate Service provision as Electoral Strategy in India", *World Politics*, Vol. 63, No. 3, 2011, pp. 434-69.

Tavits, Margit, "Geographically Targeted Spending: Exploring the Electoral Strategies of Incumbent Governments", *European Political Science Review*, Vol. 1, No. 1, 2009, pp. 103-123.

Tezcür, Güneş Murat, " Kurdish Nationalism and Identity in Turkey: A Conceptual Reinterpretation", *European Journal of Turkish Studies*, Vol.10, 2009, pp. 2-17.

Tezcür, Günes Murat, "When Democratization Radicalizes: The Kurdish Nationalist Movement in Turkey", *Journal of Peace Research,* Vol. 47, 2010, pp. 775-789.

Tilly, C., *Social Movements, 1768–2004* , Boulder, CO: Paradigm Publishers, 2004.

Thelen, Katheleen, "Historical Institutionalism in Comparative perspective", *Annual Review of Political Science*, No. 2, 1999, pp. 396-404.

Toprak, Binnaz, 'Islam and Democracy in Turkey', *Turkish Studies*, Vol. 6, No. 2, 2005, pp. 167-86.

Tosun, Tanju &Tosun, Erdoğan Gülgün, *Türkiye'de Siyasal Parti Üyeliği ve Katılım*, Istanbul: Kalkedon Yayıncılık, 2010.

Tuğal, Cihan, Transforming Everyday Life: Islamism and Social Movement Theory, Theory Sociology, Vol. 38, 2009, pp. 423-458.

Treisman, Daniel, "The Politics of Intergovernmental Transfers in Post-Soviet Russia", *British Journal of Political Science*, Vol. 26, No. 03, 1996, pp. 299-335.

Uysal, Ayşe & Topak, Oğuz, *Particiler: Türkiye'de Partiler ve Sosyal Ağların İnşası*, Istanbul: İletişim Yayınları, 2010.

Van Bruinessen, Martin , "Shifting National and Ethnic Identities', *Journal of Muslim Minority Affairs*, 1998, Vol. 18, No. 1,pp. 39-52.

Watts, Nicole F., "Allies and Enemies: pro-Kurdish Parties in Turkish Politics", *International Journal of Middle East Studies*, Vol. 31, No. 4, 1999, pp. 631-56.

Watts, Nicole F., "Activists in Office: Pro-Kurdish Contentious Politics in Turkey", *Ethopolitics*, Vol.5, No. 2, 2006, pp. 125-44.

Wedel, Heidi, *Siyaset ve Cinsiyet: İstanbul Gecekondularında Kadınların Siyasal Katılımı*, İstanbul: Metis, 2001.

Weitz-Shapiro, Rebecca; "Partisanship and Protest: the Politics of Workfare Distribution in Argentina", *Latin American Research Review*, Vol. 41, No. 3, 2006, pp. 122-147.

Weyland, Kurt, "Neoliberal Populism in Latin America and Eastern Europe", *Comparative Politics*, 1994, Vol. 31, No. 4, pp. 379-401.

Whiteley, Paul F., "Rational Choice and Political Participation. Evaluating the debate *Political Research Quarterly*, Vol. 48, No. 1, 1995, pp. 211-233.

White, Paul J., "Economic Marginalization of Turkey's Kurds: the Failed Promise of Modernization and Reform', *Journal of Muslim Minority Affairs*, Vol. 18, No. 1, 1998, pp. 139-58.

Wilson, Kenneth and Orum, Anthony M, "Mobilizing People for Collective Political Action", *Journal of political and Military Sociology*, Vol. 4, 1976, pp. 187-202.

Yalcin Mousseau, Demet, "An Inquiry into the Linkage among Nationalizing Policies, Democratization, and Ethno-Nationalist Conflict: the Kurdish Case in Turkey*", Nationalities Papers: The Journal of Nationalism and Ethnicity*, Vol. 40, No. 1, 2012, pp. 45-62.

Yavuz, Hakan, "A Preamble to the Kurdish Question: the Politics of Kurdish Identity", *Journal of Muslim minority Affairs*, Vol. 18, No. 1, 1998, pp. 114-143.

Yavuz, Hakan, Özcan,Nihat A. 'The Kurdish Question and Turkey's Justice and Development Party', Middle East Policy, Vol. 13, No. 1, 2006, pp. 102-19.

Yavuz, Hakan, Özcan,Nihat A, "Crisis in Turkey: The Conflict of Political Languages", *Middle East Policy*, Vol. 14, No. 3, 2007, pp.118–135

Yeğen, Mesut "The Turkish State Discourse and the Exclusion of Kurdish Identity", *Middle Eastern Studies*, Vol. 32, No.2, 1996, pp. 216-229.

Yeğen, Mesut "Turkish Nationalism and the Kurdish Question", *Ethnic and Racial Studies*, Vol. 30, No.1, 2007, pp. 119-151.

Zappala, Gianni, "Clientelism, Political Culture and Ethnic Politics in Austria", *Australian Journal of Political Science*, Vol. 33, No. 3, 1997, pp. 381-397.

Zeyneloğlu, Sinan, Civelek, Yaprak, Hatice & Yadigar, Coşkun, *"*Anthropological and Demographic Dimensions of the Kurdish Question: Findings from Census and Survey Data", *International Journal of Human Sciences*, Vol. 8, No. 1, 2011, pp. 335-384.

Web Sites:

AKP Beykoz District Presidency Website (www.akpartibeykoz.com/)
AKP Beyoğlu District Presidency Website (www.akpartibeyoglu.com/)
AKP Sancaktepe District Presidency Website (www.akpartisancaktepe.com)
Beyoğlu Municipality Website (www.beyoglu.bel.tr)
Beykoz Municipality Website (www.beykoz.bel.tr)
Bahçelievler Municipality Website (www.bahcelievler.bel.tr)
Başakşehir Municipality Website (www.basaksehir.bel.tr)
Beylikdüzü Municipality Website (www.beylikduzu.bel.tr)
Çekmeköy Municipality Website (www.cekmekoy.bel.tr)
Küçükçekmece Municipality Website (www.kucukcekmece.bel.tr)
Eyüp Municipality Website (www.eyup.bel.tr)
Fatih Municipality Website (www.fatih.bel.tr)
Gaziosmanpaşa Municipality Website (www.gaziosmanpasa.bel.tr)
Kağıthane Municipality Website (www.kagithane.bel.tr)
Pendik Municipality Website (www.pendik.bel.tr)
Sancaktepe Municipality Website (www.sancaktepe.bel.tr)
Sultangazi Municipality Website (www.sultangazi.bel.tr)
Şile Municipality Website (www.sile.bel.tr)
Ümraniye Municipality Website (www.umraniye.bel.tr)
Zeytinburnu Municipality Website (www.zeytinburnu.bel.tr)
AKP Beyoğlu District Presidency Website (www.akpartibeyoglu.com/)
AKP Beykoz District Presidency Website (www.akpartibeykoz.com/)
AKP Sancaktepe District Presidency Website (www.akpartisancaktepe.com)
Turkish Statistical Institute Website (www.tuik.gov.tr)

Turkish High Electoral Board Website (www.ysk.gov.tr)

Official reports:

AK Parti Tüzüğü (AKP Regulation)

AK Parti Teşkilat İç Yönetmeliği (AKP Inner Organization Regulation)

Belediye Kanunu, no.5393, *Resmi Gazete*, Sayı : 25874, 13/7/2005 (Municipality Law No: 5393)

Beykoz Belediyesi 2009 Faaliyet Planı (Beykoz Municipality 2009 Activity Plan)

Beykoz Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Beykoz Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Beykoz Belediyesi 2011 Faaliyet Planı (Beykoz Municipality 2011 Activity Plan)

Beykoz Belediyesi 2012 Yılı İdari Performans Programı Raporu (Beykoz Municipality 2011 Performance Program)

Beykoz Belediyesi 2011 Mali Yılı Performans Programı (Beykoz Municipality 2011 Fiscal Performance Program)

Beyoğlu Belediyesi 2007 Faaliyet Planı (Beyoğlu Municipality 2007 Activity Plan)

Beyoğlu Belediyesi 2009 Faaliyet Planı (Beyoğlu Municipality 2009 Activity Plan)

Beyoğlu Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Beyoğlu Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Beyoğlu Belediyesi 2011 Faaliyet Planı (Beyoğlu Municipality 2011 Activity Plan)

Beyoğlu Belediyesi 2012 Yılı Bütçesi(Beyoğlu Municipality 2012 Budget)

Beyoğlu Belediyesi 2011 Yılı Performans Programı (Beyoğlu Municipality 2011 Performance Program)

Bahçelievler Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı(Bahçelievler Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Başakşehir Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Başakşehir Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Beylikdüzü Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Beylikdüzü Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Çekmeköy Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Çekmeköy Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Küçükçekmece Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Küçükçekmece Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Eyüp Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Eyüp Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Fatih Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Fatih Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Gaziosmanpaşa Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Gaziosmanpaşa Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Kağıthane Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Kağıthane Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Pendik Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Pendik Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Sancaktepe Belediyesi 2009 Faaliyet Planı (Sancaktepe Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Sancaktepe Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Sancaktepe Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Sancaktepe Belediyesi 2011 Faaliyet Planı (Sancaktepe Municipality 2011 Activity Plan)

Sancaktepe Belediyesi 2010 Yılı Performans Programı (Sancaktepe Municipality 2010 Performance Program)

Sancaktepe Belediyesi 2011 Yılı Performans Programı (Sancaktepe Municipality 2011 Performance Program)

Sultangazi Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Sultangazi Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Şile Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Şile Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Ümraniye Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Ümraniye Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

Zeytinburnu Belediyesi 2010 Faaliyet Planı (Zeytinburnu Municipality 2010 Activity Plan)

APPENDICES

Appendix A: Estimated Percentages of the Provinces Established After 1990

The estimated percentages of Kurdish origin for this provinces established after 1990 have been measured by calculating the mean of the provinces through which they have been separated from. For detail on the provinces they have been separated see below.

Şırnak	Hakkari, Mardin, Diyarbakır
Iğdır	Kars
Batman	Siirt, Mardin
Aksaray	Ankara, Niğde
Bayburt	Gümüşhane
Karaman	Konya
Kırıkkale	Ankara
Bartın	Zonguldak
Ardahan	Kars
Yalova	İstanbul, İzmit, Bursa
Karabük	Zonguldak, Çankırı
Kilis	Gaziantep
Osmaniye	Adana
Düzce	Bolu

Appendix B: Law on the Establishment of Districts within the Metropolitan Municipalities and Amendment in Certain Laws

BÜYÜKŞEHİR BELEDİYESİ SINIRLARI İÇERİSİNDE İLÇE KURULMASI VE BAZI KANUNLARDA DEĞİŞİKLİK YAPILMASI HAKKINDA KANUN
http://www.tbmm.gov.tr/kanunlar/k5747.html Consulted on 08.11.2010

Kanun No. 5747   **Kabul Tarihi: 6/3/2008**

İSTANBUL İLİ ARNAVUTKÖY İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN KÖYLER

NO	BİRİMİN ADI	İLÇESİ	BUCAĞI
1	Baklalı	Çatalca	Boyalık
2	Boyalık	Çatalca	Boyalık
3	Balaban	Çatalca	Boyalık
4	Yassıören	Çatalca	Boyalık
5	Karaburun	Çatalca	Boyalık
6	Hacımaşlı	Gaziosmanpaşa	Merkez
7	Yeniköy	Gaziosmanpaşa	Merkez
8	Tayakadın	Gaziosmanpaşa	Merkez
9	(Küçükçekmece İlçesi Şamlar Köyünün Sazlıdere Baraj Gölünün Kuzeyinde kalan kısmı Hacımaşlı Orman köyüne dahil edilmiştir.)		

(16) SAYILI LİSTE

İSTANBUL İLİ ATAŞEHİR İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN MAHALLELER

Üsküdar İlçe Belediyesine bağlı
1   Fetih
2   Esatpaşa
3   Örnek

Kadıköy İlçe Belediyesine bağlı
4   Yenisahra
5   İçerenköy
6   İnönü
7   Kayışdağı
8   Barbaros
9   Küçükbakkalköy
10   Atatürk Mahallesinin O4 ve E-80 Karayolunun Güneyinde Kalan Kısmı

Ümraniye İlçe Belediyesine bağlı
11   Yeni Çamlıca
12   Mustafakemal Mahallesinin O4 Karayolunun güneyinde kalan kısmı
13   Namıkkemal Mahallesinin O4 Karayolunun güneyinde kalan kısmı

Samandıra İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı

14   Ferhatpaşa Mahallesinin E-80 Karayolunun ve E80- D100 bağlantı yolunun   güneyinde kalan kısmı

(17) SAYILI LİSTE

İSTANBUL İLİ BAŞAKŞEHİR İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN MAHALLELER

Küçükçekmece İlçe Belediyesine bağlı
1   Başakşehir
2   Kayabaşı
3   Ziya Gökalp
4   Güvercintepe
5   Altınşehir
6   Şahintepe

Esenler İlçe Belediyesine bağlı
7   Başakşehir

Küçükçekmece İlçe Belediyesine bağlı
8   Mehmet Akif Mahallesinin TEM'in kuzeyinde kalan kısmı

Bahçeşehir İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
9   1. Kısım Mahallesinin O3'ün kuzeyinde kalan kısmı
10   2. Kısım Mahallesinin Hadımköy-Hoşdere/Esenyurt-Hadımköy yolunun doğusunda kalan kısmı

İSTANBUL İLİ BAŞAKŞEHİR İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN KÖYLER

NO	BİRİMİN ADI	İLÇESİ	BUCAĞI
1	Şamlar (Sazlıdere Baraj Gölünün Batısında, Doğusunda ve Güneyinde Kalan Kısımları)	Küçükçekmece	Merkez

(18) SAYILI LİSTE

İSTANBUL İLİ BEYLİKDÜZÜ İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN MAHALLELER

Beylikdüzü İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
1   Büyükşehir
2   Cumhuriyet
3   Sahil
4   Barış
5   Kavaklı

Gürpınar İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
6   Adnan Kahveci
7   Dereağzı
8   Merkez

Yakuplu İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
9   Marmara
10   Merkez

(19) SAYILI LİSTE

İSTANBUL İLİ ÇEKMEKÖY İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN MAHALLELER

Çekmeköy İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
1   Merkez
2   Mimar Sinan
3   Hamidiye
4   Mehmetakif Mahallesinin Ümraniye-Şile yolunun kuzeyinde kalan kısmı
5   Çamlık Mahallesinin Ümraniye-Şile yolunun kuzeyinde kalan kısmı

Taşdelen İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
6   Merkez
7   Çamlık
8   Güngören
9   Kirazlıdere
10   Aydınlar
11   Soğukpınar
12   Cumhuriyet

Alemdağ İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
13   Merkez
14   Nişantepe
15   Çatalmeşe
16   Ekşioğlu

Ömerli İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
17   Merkez

İSTANBUL İLİ ÇEKMEKÖY İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN KÖYLER VE KÖY KISIMLARI

NO	BİRİMİN ADI	İLÇESİ	BUCAĞI
1	Reşadiye	Ümraniye	
Merkez			
2	Hüseyinli	Ümraniye	
Merkez			
3	Sırapınar	Ümraniye	
Merkez			
4	Koçullu	Ümraniye	Merkez
5	(Kartal ilçesi Samandıra Bucağına bağlı Paşaköy'ün Ümraniye-Şile bağlantı yolunun kuzeyinde kalan kısmı)		

(20) SAYILI LİSTE

İSTANBUL İLİ ESENYURT İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN MAHALLELER

Esenyurt İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
1   Ardıçlı
2   Fatih
3   Mehterçeşme
4   Örnek
5   Talatpaşa
6   Yenikent
7   Cumhuriyet
8   Pınar
9   Yeşilkent
10   Merkez
11   Sanayi
12   Esenkent
13   İnönü
14   Namık Kemal
15   Saadetdere
16   İncirtepe

Kıraç İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
17   Merkez
18   Namık Kemal
19   Çakmaklı TEM-D100 bağlantı yolunun doğusu

Yakuplu İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
20   Güzelyurt (Haramidere)

Avcılar İlçe Belediyesine bağlı
21   Yeşilkent Mahallesinin O3 ile D100 bağlantı yolunun batısında kalan kısım

Bahçeşehir İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
22   2. Kısım Mahallesinin Hadımköy-Hoşdere/Esenyurt-Hadımköy yolunun batısında ve Sanayi Mahallesinin Kuzeyinde kalan kısmı

(21) SAYILI LİSTE

İSTANBUL İLİ SANCAKTEPE İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN MAHALLELER

Samandıra İlk Kademe Belediyesine Bağlı
1   Abdurrahman Gazi
2   Akpınar
3   Osman Gazi
4   Veysel Karani
5   Eyüp Sultan
6   Fatih
7   Ferhatpaşa Mahallesinin E-80 karayolunun kuzeyinde kalan kısmı

Sarıgazi İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
8   Meclis
9   İnönü
10   Merkez
11   Emek
12   Kemal Türkler
13   Atatürk
Yenidoğan İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
14   Abdurrahman Gazi
15   Yunus Emre
16   Safa
17   Osman Gazi
18   Mevlana
19   Merve

Çekmeköy İlk Kademe Belediyesine bağlı
20   Çamlık Mahallesinin Ümraniye-Şile bağlantı yolunun güneyinde kalan kısmı

İSTANBUL İLİ SANCAKTEPE İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN KÖY KISIMLARI

1- Kartal İlçesi Samandıra Bucağına bağlı Paşaköy Köyünün Ümraniye-Şile bağlantı yolunun güneyinde kalan kısmı (Köy Merkezi)

2- Pendik İlçesine bağlı Kurtdoğmuş Köyünün Ömerli Barajının kuzeybatısında kalan kısmı

Kartal İlçesi Samandıra Bucağına bağlı Paşaköy Köyüne dahil edilmiştir.

(22) SAYILI LİSTE

İSTANBUL İLİ SULTANGAZİ İLÇESİNE BAĞLANAN MAHALLELER

Gaziosmanpaşa İlçe Belediyesine bağlı

1	Sultançiftliği
2	50. Yıl
3	Uğur Mumcu
4	İsmet Paşa
5	Cumhuriyet
6	Cebeci
7	Malkoçoğlu
8	Habipler
9	Zübeyde Hanım
10	Gazi
11	Esentepe
12	75. Yıl
13	Yunus Emre
14	Kazım Karabekir Mahallesinin TEM otoyolunun kuzeyinde kalan kısmı

Eyüp İlçe Belediyesine bağlı

15   Yayla

Esenler İlçe Belediyesine bağlı

16   Habipler (Habipler güneybatı bağlantı yolu Esenler Pafta 7-243 parselin kuzeydoğu ucundan başlayarak kuzey yönünde devam eden plan yolunu takiben Habipler İSKİ tesislerinin batısından kuzeye doğru 6164 parselin güney uç noktası birleşimi ile kuzey batı yönünde devam ederek 6163 parseli batısı sınır olmak üzere kuzeybatıya devam eden plan yolunun 1867 adanın batı köşesi ve Canan Sokak ile kesiştiği nokta, bu noktadan plan yolunu kuzeybatı yönünde takiben Eski Edirne Asfaltı ile Arnavutköy-Habiple yolunun kesiştiği nokta olarak planlanan plan yolunun doğusunda kalan kısım.)

Appendix C: Demographic Characteristics of the Districts

Sancaktepe									
Province	Est. Kurd.%	2011	2010	2009	Province	Est. Kurd.%	2011	2010	2009
Adana	10,50%	708	639	618	Kütahya	0,03%	277	271	234
Adıyaman	43,90%	508	462	390	Malatya	17,20%	2.985	2.954	2.786
Afyonkarahisar	0,02%	802	753	705	Manisa	3,48%	467	434	376
Ağrı	70,45%	7.180	6.730	6.240	Kahramanmaraş	15,37%	2.220	2.163	2.006
Amasya	0,76%	3.472	3.411	3.192	Mardin	74,84%	732	647	618
Ankara	6,74%	680	664	559	Muğla	2,06%	103	98	77
Antalya	3,22%	215	196	172	Muş	67,75%	2.503	2.374	2.236
Artvin	0,02%	1.277	1.218	1.123	Nevşehir	2,10%	1.923	1.881	1.834
Aydın	4,02%	213	192	182	Niğde	2,59%	1.723	1.660	1.562
Balıkesir	2,48%	500	456	414	Ordu	0,04%	22.293	21.465	20.428
Bilecik	3,93%	228	207	178	Rize	0,06%	6.311	5.990	5.675
Bingöl	76,63%	10.198	9.899	9.404	Sakarya	2,82%	1.222	1.169	1.101
Bitlis	64,03%	1.933	1.889	1.801	Samsun	0,58%	6.220	5.917	5.557
Bolu	0,61%	739	722	652	Siirt	78,78%	3.527	3.268	3.051
Burdur	0,20%	66	58	42	Sinop	0,80%	9.219	8.975	8.668
Bursa	4,47%	555	499	408	Sivas	11,72%	20.067	19.358	18.241
Çanakkale	0,13%	262	255	203	Tekirdağ	3,30%	355	336	283
Çankırı	1,26%	2.174	2.087	1.895	Tokat	1,71%	22.140	21.668	20.383
Çorum	3,89%	4.137	4.010	3.805	Trabzon	0,04%	7.874	7.602	7.258
Denizli	3,08%	175	157	106	Tunceli	55,90%	4.003	3.908	3.715
Diyarbakır	72,78%	991	908	789	Şanlıurfa	47,84%	619	558	508
Edirne	0,14%	221	198	147	Uşak	0,21%	92	78	61
Elazığ	43,15%	2.794	2.695	2.545	Van	70,70%	4.098	3.328	3.013
Erzincan	19,74%	10.246	10.152	9.741	Yozgat	2,25%	2.957	2.805	2.576
Erzurum	16,22%	13.289	12.806	12.312	Zonguldak	0,13%	1.111	1.056	995
Eskişehir	3,10%	278	281	219	Aksaray	4,67%	444	455	460
Gaziantep	13,22%	546	476	430	Bayburt	2,27%	1.568	1.513	1.370
Giresun	0,26%	6.609	6.398	6.065	Karaman	5,42%	149	142	119
Gümüşhane	2,27%	1.687	1.635	1.517	Kırıkkale	6,74%	234	227	236
Hakkari	89,47%	106	78	53	Batman	76,81%	367	376	322
Hatay	5,48%	639	587	568	Şırnak	79,03%	262	252	240
Isparta	0,27%	781	724	662	Bartın	0,13%	1.553	1.501	1.458
İçel	9,71%	527	514	451	Ardahan	19,02%	9.949	9.641	9.214
İstanbul	8,16%	13.914	13.180	12.316	Iğdır	19,02%	2.554	2.460	2.299
İzmir	6,91%	495	401	336	Yalova	6,86%	96	84	76
Kars	19,02%	18.142	17.159	15.992	Karabük	0,70%	1.431	1.391	1.274
Kastamonu	0,25%	11.225	10.861	10.327	Kilis	13,22%	169	166	142
Kayseri	4,56%	1.456	1.379	1.274	Osmaniye	10,50%	292	296	272
Kırklareli	0,24%	220	219	219	Düzce	0,61%	622	568	515
Kırşehir	6,61%	457	437	399	**total polulation**		**269180**	**258251**	**243113**
Kocaeli	7,94%	656	607	516	**S.East population**		**57215**	**53834**	**50281**
Konya	5,42%	1137	1007	898	**% S. East population**		**21,25**	**20,84**	**20,68**
					Est. Kur Pop.		**43429**	**41122**	**38565**
					% Est. Kurd.		**16,13**	**15,92**	**15,86**

338

	Beyoğlu									
Province	Est. Kurd.%	2011	2010	2009	2007	Province	Est. Kurd.%	2011	2010	2009	2007
Adana	10,50%	1.910	1.795	1.724	1.631	Kütahya	0,03%	205	182	181	181
Adıyaman	43,90%	744	719	720	656	Malatya	17,20%	2.081	2.057	2.005	2.108
Afyonkarahisar	0,02%	449	441	418	430	Manisa	3,48%	714	709	664	658
Ağrı	70,45%	2.926	2.802	2.758	2.482	Kahramanmaraş	15,37%	1.392	1.397	1.348	1.370
Amasya	0,76%	1.648	1.682	1.635	1.656	Mardin	74,84%	13.272	13.099	12.522	11.285
Ankara	6,74%	1.106	1.040	992	952	Muğla	2,06%	207	212	188	191
Antalya	3,22%	7.507	7.087	6.507	7.704	Muş	67,75%	737	698	696	720
Artvin	0,02%	1.024	1.046	1.084	1.034	Nevşehir	2,10%	765	787	775	777
Aydın	4,02%	411	389	349	310	Niğde	2,59%	756	761	697	685
Balıkesir	2,48%	1.894	1.808	1.775	1.809	Ordu	0,04%	4.196	4.247	4.148	4.238
Bilecik	3,93%	287	278	266	252	Rize	0,06%	11.484	11.738	11.776	11.493
Bingöl	76,63%	2.753	2.749	2.751	2.743	Sakarya	2,82%	879	887	867	861
Bitlis	64,03%	1.129	1.302	1.234	1.230	Samsun	0,58%	5.921	5.891	5.947	5.992
Bolu	0,61%	728	728	724	761	Siirt	78,78%	3.052	3.017	3.043	2.942
Burdur	0,20%	74	66	76	81	Sinop	0,80%	3.126	3.213	3.186	3.245
Bursa	4,47%	2.656	2.561	2.491	2.457	Sivas	11,72%	19.715	20.030	20.168	20.461
Çanakkale	0,13%	1.577	1.592	1.582	1.585	Tekirdağ	3,30%	1.010	1.035	1.013	1.013
Çankırı	1,26%	1.032	1.038	998	1.048	Tokat	1,71%	3.940	4.030	4.046	4.256
Çorum	3,89%	933	906	888	916	Trabzon	0,04%	2.487	2.528	2.482	2.508
Denizli	3,08%	286	278	265	269	Tunceli	55,90%	2.339	2.434	2.526	2.607
Diyarbakır	72,78%	2.364	2.325	2.253	2.727	Şanlıurfa	47,84%	1.291	1.283	1.242	1.315
Edirne	0,14%	1.109	1.115	1.052	1.016	Uşak	0,21%	158	147	123	113
Elazığ	43,15%	2.128	2.102	2.083	2.055	Van	70,70%	1.614	1.564	1.537	1.478
Erzincan	19,74%	9.059	9.294	9.380	9.720	Yozgat	2,25%	777	737	664	709
Erzurum	16,22%	4.508	4.462	4.431	4.402	Zonguldak	0,13%	1.537	1.552	1.596	1.508
Eskişehir	3,10%	584	542	521	490	Aksaray	4,67%	969	892	871	790
Gaziantep	13,22%	821	820	806	864	Bayburt	2,27%	411	420	427	406
Giresun	0,26%	29.129	29.356	29.300	29.435	Karaman	5,42%	1.396	1.254	1.070	1.045
Gümüşhane	2,27%	2.395	2.452	2.435	2.506	Kırıkkale	6,74%	308	292	288	290
Hakkari	89,47%	88	77	58	47	Batman	76,81%	4.215	4.501	4.106	3.577
Hatay	5,48%	1.527	1.464	1.372	1.313	Şırnak	79,03%	827	793	740	818
Isparta	0,27%	977	958	947	970	Bartın	0,13%	1.354	1.422	1.397	1.419
İçel	9,71%	1.358	1.276	1.264	1.151	Ardahan	19,02%	663	663	631	631
İstanbul	8,16%	38.389	39.172	38.828	40.895	Iğdır	19,02%	399	390	365	385
İzmir	6,91%	1.333	1.194	1.173	1.136	Yalova	6,86%	370	369	369	369
Kars	19,02%	977	939	909	883	Karabük	0,70%	1.028	1.050	1.041	1.058
Kastamonu	0,25%	11.343	11.560	11.531	11.746	Kilis	13,22%	266	279	283	282
Kayseri	4,56%	3.357	3.356	3.313	3.331	Osmaniye	10,50%	896	916	922	918
Kırklareli	0,24%	651	653	608	592	Düzce	0,61%	463	451	443	441
Kırşehir	6,61%	987	991	1.016	1.061	total polulation		247852	248930	245420	248195
Kocaeli	7,94%	898	900	877	930	S.East population		37.983	37.973	36.740	35.239
Konya	5,42%	3565	3678	3624	3769	% S. East population		15,32	15,25	14,97	14,20
						Est. Kur Pop.		39120	39173	38174	37289
						% Est. Kurd.		15,78	15,74	15,55	15,02

339